







Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2007 with funding from  
Microsoft Corporation







THE  
HISTORY OF ENGLAND.

---

VOL. IX.

**Ballantyne Press**

BALLANTYNE, HANSON AND CO.,  
EDINBURGH AND LONDON.





CHARLES II

THE

# HISTORY OF ENGLAND,

FROM THE FIRST

INVASION BY THE ROMANS

TO THE

ACCESSION OF WILLIAM AND MARY

IN 1688.

BY JOHN LINGARD, D.D.

COPYRIGHT EDITION,

*WITH TEN PORTRAITS NEWLY ETCHED BY DAMMAN.*

*IN TEN VOLUMES.*

VOL. IX.

LONDON:

J. C. NIMMO & BAIN

14, KING WILLIAM STREET, STRAND, W.C.

1883.

$$\begin{array}{r}
 15509 \\
 18 \overline{) 919} \\
 \phantom{18 \overline{) 919}} 6
 \end{array}$$



# CONTENTS

## OF

### THE NINTH VOLUME.

#### CHAPTER I.

##### CHARLES II.

THE NEW COUNCIL -- PROCEEDINGS IN THE CONVENTION PARLIAMENT -- TRIALS AND EXECUTION OF THE REGICIDES -- ECCLESIASTICAL ARRANGEMENTS -- CONFERENCE AT THE SAVOY -- RISING OF THE FIFTH-MONARCHY MEN -- NEW PARLIAMENT -- EXECUTION OF VANE -- CORPORATION ACT -- ACT OF UNIFORMITY -- PARLIAMENT IN SCOTLAND -- EXECUTION OF ARGYLE -- RESTORATION OF EPISCOPACY IN SCOTLAND -- ALSO IN IRELAND -- ACT OF SETTLEMENT -- AND EXPLANATORY ACT FOR IRELAND.

Conduct of the king ... ..	2	Bishops restored to seats in parliament ... ..	33
His council ... ..	3	Petition of the Catholics ... ..	34
The two houses ... ..	4	King refuses the execution of the conspirators ... ..	38
They are declared a parliament ... ..	5	Trials of Lambert and Vane ... ..	39
Grants to the crown ... ..	6	Transactions in Scotland ... ..	41
Court of Wards abolished ... ..	7	Proceedings in Parliament ... ..	42
The excise perpetuated ... ..	8	Rescissory act ... ..	44
Disbanding of the army ... ..	9	Trial of Argyle ... ..	45
Bill of indemnity ... ..	10	His condemnation and death ... ..	47
Fate of the regicides ... ..	12	Other executions ... ..	49
Executions ... ..	14	Restoration of bishops ... ..	50
Punishment of the dead ... ..	15	Recall of the English garrisons ... ..	52
Revolution in landed property ... ..	16	Transactions in Ireland ... ..	53
Ecclesiastical arrangement ... ..	19	Restoration of bishops ... ..	ib.
Royal declaration ... ..	21	Disputes respecting landed property ... ..	54
Policy of the chancellor ... ..	23	King's declaration ... ..	55
Insurrections ... ..	24	The contending parties heard before the council ... ..	57
New parliament ... ..	25	Decisions of the Court of Claims ... ..	58
Acts passed ... ..	26	Intrigues of the occupiers ... ..	59
King's poverty ... ..	27	Final settlement ... ..	60
Reports of conspiracies ... ..	28	Its consequences ... ..	61
Corporation act ... ..	ib.		
Conferences at the Savoy ... ..	29		
Act of Uniformity ... ..	30		
The Lords more liberal than the Commons ... ..	32		

## CHAPTER II.

MARRIAGE OF THE DUKE OF YORK WITH ANNE HYDE—OF THE KING WITH THE PRINCESS OF PORTUGAL — SALE OF DUNKIRK TO THE FRENCH—DECLARATION OF INDULGENCE TO TENDER CONSCIENCES — DISAPPROVED BY BOTH HOUSES—GREAT NAVAL VICTORY—THE PLAGUE IN LONDON—FIVE-MILE ACT—OBSTINATE ACTIONS AT SEA.

National immorality ... ..	63	Address of the two houses ... ..	97
James's private marriage ... ..	64	Hostilities commenced against	
Disapproved by the royal family ... ..	65	the Dutch ... ..	99
Publicly acknowledged ... ..	67	Supply voted ... ..	101
Marriage of the princess Henrietta ... ..	68	New method of taxation ... ..	102
Portuguese match proposed to		Loss of privilege by the clergy... ..	<i>ib.</i>
Charles ... ..	69	Naval preparations ... ..	103
Opposition of the Spanish ambas-		Victory of the 3rd of June ... ..	105
sador ... ..	70	The plague in London ... ..	107
The French king advises it ... ..	71	Regulations to suppress it ... ..	109
Resolved in council ... ..	72	Symptoms of the disease ... ..	110
Rencontre between the two am-		Terrors of the people ... ..	111
bassadors ... ..	73	Desolation of the city ... ..	112
Arrival of the princess ... ..	75	The pestilence abates ... ..	113
King's behaviour to her... ..	76	Failure of the attempt at Bergen ... ..	115
Sale of Dunkirk... ..	80	Captures by sea ... ..	116
Disputes respecting toleration ... ..	82	Parliament at Oxford ... ..	117
Declaration of indulgence ... ..	84	Five-mile act ... ..	119
Disapproved by both houses ... ..	88	Louis unites with the Dutch ... ..	120
Conventicle act ... ..	93	Treaties ... ..	122
Complaints against the Dutch... ..	95	The four days' battle ... ..	123
Contrast between the king and		Intrigues of Louis ... ..	125
his brother, ... ..	96	Operations by sea ... ..	126

## CHAPTER III.

GREAT FIRE OF LONDON—PROCEEDINGS IN PARLIAMENT—INSURRECTION IN SCOTLAND—SECRET TREATY WITH LOUIS—THE DUTCH FLEET IN THE THAMES—PEACE OF BREDÁ—FALL OF CLARENDON—THE TRIPLE ALLIANCE—SECRET NEGOTIATION WITH FRANCE—CONVERSION OF THE DUKE OF YORK—INTRIGUES TO ALTER THE SUCCESSION—DIVORCE OF LORD ROOS—VISIT OF THE DUCHESS OF ORLEANS—SECRET TREATY WITH FRANCE—DEATH OF THE DUCHESS—SECOND SECRET TREATY—MISCELLANEOUS EVENTS.

Fire of London ... ..	127	Difficulty of fitting out the fleet ... ..	139
Exertions of the king ... ..	129	Secret treaty with Louis ... ..	140
End of the conflagration ... ..	130	Dutch fleet in the river... ..	142
Its extent ... ..	<i>ib.</i>	Dutch fleet advances to Upnor ... ..	144
Its cause ... ..	131	Public discontent ... ..	<i>ib.</i>
Proceedings in parliament ... ..	133	Treaty of peace ... ..	145
Debate on Irish cattle ... ..	134	Clarendon's unpopularity ... ..	147
Debate on auditing public accounts ... ..	135	Clarendon opposed by Castle-	
Insurrection in Scotland ... ..	136	maine and Buckingham ... ..	149

Abandoned by the King...	150	Progress of the negotiation ...	172
Clarendon deprived of the seal...	151	Meeting of parliament ...	174
Clarendon impeached by the Commons ...	152	New conventicle act ...	175
Clarendon protected by the Lords ...	153	Sufferings of the nonconformists	176
Clarendon ordered to quit the kingdom by Charles ...	154	Intrigues to alter the succession	177
Clarendon banished by act of parliament ...	155	In favour of Monmouth...	<i>ib.</i>
The new ministry ...	156	By a divorce ...	178
Temple sent to the Hague ...	158	A supply voted ...	181
Triple alliance ...	159	Secret treaty concluded...	182
Treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle ...	161	Contents of the secret treaty ...	<i>ib.</i>
Proceedings in parliament ...	162	Death of the duchess ...	184
Dispute between the houses ...	164	Second treaty ...	185
Licentiousness at court...	166	Charles's evasions ...	186
Buckingham's intrigues ...	167	Meeting of parliament ...	187
Financial measure ...	168	Assault on Coventry ...	188
Secret negotiation with France...	169	Proceedings against the Catholics	189
Duke of York becomes a Catholic	170	Dispute between the houses ...	<i>ib.</i>
Secret consultation ...	171	Death of the queen dowager ...	190
		Death of the duke of Albemarle	191
		Narrow escape of Ormond ...	192
		Attempt to steal the crown ...	<i>ib.</i>
		Death of the duchess of York ...	194

## CHAPTER IV.

CHARACTER OF THE CABAL—STOPPAGE OF PAYMENTS FROM THE EXCHEQUER—DECLARATION OF INDULGENCE—OF WAR AGAINST THE STATES—VICTORY AT SOUTHWOLD BAY.—FRENCH CONQUESTS BY LAND—PROCEEDINGS IN PARLIAMENT—THE INDULGENCE RECALLED—THE TEST ACT PASSED—NAVAL ACTIONS—DISGRACE OF SHAFTESBURY—ADDRESSES AGAINST LAUDERDALE AND BUCKINGHAM—IMPEACHMENT OF ARLINGTON—CONCLUSION OF PEACE—DESIGN OF EXCLUDING THE DUKE OF YORK—REPEATED PROROGATIONS OF PARLIAMENT—INTRIGUES OF MONMOUTH—OF ARLINGTON—PROCEEDINGS OF THE POPULAR PARTY—NON-RESISTING TEST OF DANBY—DISPUTE RESPECTING APPEALS—ANOTHER SESSION—REVIVAL OF THE DISPUTE—MOTION FOR DISSOLUTION OF PARLIAMENT—PROCEEDINGS IN SCOTLAND—AND IRELAND.

The cabal ...	196	Conquest by the French ...	213
Arlington ...	197	Proceedings in England ...	216
Clifford ...	198	Clifford made treasurer...	218
Buckingham ...	<i>ib.</i>	Elections during the prorogation	219
Lauderdale ...	199	Opening of parliament ...	<i>ib.</i>
Ashley ...	200	New elections cancelled ...	220
Their religion ...	201	The supply voted ...	221
They shut up the exchequer ...	202	Address against the declaration of indulgence ...	<i>ib.</i>
Fail in an attack on the Dutch fleet ...	204	The king appeals to the Lords...	223
Grant indulgence to dissenters...	206	He cancels the declaration ...	225
Which is accepted by them ...	207	Test act introduced ...	226
Declaration of war ...	208	Test act passed ...	229
Naval affairs ...	209	Dissenters' relief bill ...	<i>ib.</i>
Battle of Southwold Bay ...	210	Remarks ...	230
Conduct of the duke of York ...	211	Campaigns by land ...	231
Death of the earl of Sandwich...	<i>ib.</i>	Resignations ...	232
Victory of the English ...	212	Actions at sea ...	233
They pursue the Dutch...	213	Congress at Cologne ...	235

Meeting of parliament ... ..	236	Non-resisting test in the House	
Its prorogation ... ..	237	of Lords ... ..	265
Disgrace of Shaftesbury ... ..	<i>ib.</i>	Debate on the declaration ... ..	267
Marriage of the duke of York ...	239	Debate on the oath ... ..	<i>ib.</i>
Twelfth session of parliament ...	240	Objections ... ..	269
Removal of ministers ... ..	241	The test as amended in the com-	
Proceedings against Lauderdale	243	mittee... ..	270
Proceedings against Buckingham	<i>ib.</i>	Dispute respecting appeals ... ..	272
Proceedings against Arlington...	244	Prorogation ... ..	274
Orders of the House of Lords ...	245	Another session ... ..	<i>ib.</i>
Proposals of peace from the		Renewal of the contest between	
States ... ..	246	the houses ... ..	275
Treaty ... ..	247	Account of Luzancy ... ..	278
Designs against the duke of		Transactions in Scotland ... ..	280
York ... ..	248	Attempt on the life of Sharp ...	282
Projects of that prince ... ..	250	Indulgence to ejected ministers	283
Prorogation ... ..	251	Proceedings in parliament ... ..	284
The duke of Monmouth... ..	252	Act against field conventicles ...	285
Intrigues of the prince of Orange	253	Attempt at "comprehension" ...	286
Intrigues of Shaftesbury ... ..	254	The second indulgence ... ..	287
Intrigues of Arlington ... ..	255	Opposition in parliament ... ..	289
Plans of the opposition ... ..	257	Increase of conventicles ... ..	290
Plans of the ministry ... ..	259	Ireland ... ..	291
Remonstrance of the duke of		Recall of Ormond ... ..	292
York ... ..	260	Claims of the natives ... ..	<i>ib.</i>
Opening of the session ... ..	261	Commission of review ... ..	293
Proceedings in the House of Com-		Commission dissolved ... ..	294
mons ... ..	262	Act of settlement reviewed ... ..	<i>ib.</i>

## CHAPTER V.

CONGRESS AT NIMEGUEN—SECRET TREATY WITH LOUIS XIV.—DEBATES ON THE LEGALITY OF THE PARLIAMENT—PENSION FROM FRANCE—INTRIGUES AND CONQUESTS OF LOUIS—OPPOSITION TO THE KING IN PARLIAMENT—PEACE BETWEEN FRANCE AND THE STATES—GENERAL PEACE—PLOT FORGED BY TITUS OATES—THE TEST ACT—ACCUSATION OF THE QUEEN—TRIALS AND EXECUTIONS—PERFIDY OF MONTAGUE—IMPEACHMENT OF DANBY—PROROGATION.

Congress at Nimeguen ... ..	295	Pension from France ... ..	313
Secret treaty with France ... ..	297	Lords discharged from the Tower	315
A season of tranquillity... ..	299	Arrival of the prince of Orange	316
Proclamation against coffee-		His marriage with the princess	
houses ... ..	301	Mary ... ..	317
French depredations ... ..	302	Conferences respecting peace ...	<i>ib.</i>
Dispute respecting the legality of		Charles proposes terms to Louis	319
the parliament ... ..	303	Answer of Louis... ..	320
Opening of the session, 1677 ...	<i>ib.</i>	Who seeks to bribe the king and	
Debate in the Commons ... ..	304	his ministers... ..	323
In the House of Lords ... ..	<i>ib.</i>	And intrigues with the popular	
The four lords committed ... ..	305	party ... ..	324
Views of parties... ..	306	And with the Dutch ... ..	326
Bills for the security of the church	307	Opposition in parliament ... ..	327
Rejected by the Commons ... ..	308	Charles makes a new proposal...	329
Grants of money ... ..	309	Louis takes Ghent and Ipres ...	330
Addresses for war ... ..	311	Proceedings in parliament ... ..	<i>ib.</i>
Adjournment ... ..	312	New project of peace ... ..	332

Refusal of a supply ... ..	335	Vote of both houses ... ..	366
The States agree with France ...	336	Funeral of Godfrey ... ..	367
Charles concludes a secret treaty	337	Precautions ... ..	368
Second refusal of a supply ... ..	338	Address against the duke of York	369
Treaty against France ... ..	339	The test bill passed ... ..	371
Peace at Nimeguen ... ..	341	A new witness comes forward ...	374
Battle of St. Denis ... ..	342	Depositions of Bedloe ... ..	<i>ib.</i>
Mons is relieved... ..	343	Their absurdity ... ..	377
All the powers consent to peace	345	A divorce proposed to the king ...	378
Titus Oates ... ..	346	Oates accuses the queen ... ..	379
His confederacy with Tonge ... ..	<i>ib.</i>	Bedloe also accuses her... ..	380
They forge a plot ... ..	348	The Lords refuse to join with the	
It is disclosed to the king ... ..	349	Commons ... ..	381
Five forged letters ... ..	350	Trials on account of the plot ... ..	382
Oates makes an affidavit ... ..	351	Trial of Stayley ... ..	383
He is called before the council ...	352	Of Coleman ... ..	384
His narrative ... ..	<i>ib.</i>	Of five others ... ..	385
And subsequent examination ... ..	355	Information of France ... ..	386
Seizure of papers ... ..	356	Montague's intrigue against	
And of Coleman's correspondence	358	Danby ... ..	388
The king goes to Newmarket ... ..	359	Who seizes Montague's papers ...	390
Death of Sir Edmondbury Godfrey	361	But Danby's despatches are saved	391
Excitement of the people ... ..	362	And are read to the house ... ..	<i>ib.</i>
Ferment at the meeting of parlia-		Impeachment of Danby ... ..	393
ment ... ..	363	Montague's baseness ... ..	394
Additional disclosures of Oates	364	Danby's defence ... ..	<i>ib.</i>
The bill for exclusion of Catholics	365	Prorogation of parliament ... ..	395

## CHAPTER VI.

THE DUKE OF YORK QUITS THE KINGDOM — DANBY PARDONED BY THE KING, BUT IMPRISONED—NEW COUNCIL—DEBATE ON THE BILL OF EXCLUSION — PROROGATION — EXECUTION OF MITCHELL IN SCOTLAND — MURDER OF ARCHBISHOP SHARP — VICTORY AND DEFEAT OF THE COVENANTERS — TRIAL AND EXECUTION OF FIVE JESUITS—OF LANGHORNE—ACQUITTAL OF WAKEMAN — DISSOLUTION OF PARLIAMENT — PETITIONERS AND ABHORRERS — BILL OF EXCLUSION LOST IN THE HOUSE OF LORDS—TRIAL AND EXECUTION OF VISCOUNT STAFFORD.

A new parliament ... ..	397	Reasons in its favour ... ..	418
The duke is forced to quit Eng-		Reasons against it ... ..	419
land ... ..	399	Right of bishops to vote at trial	
Dispute respecting the choice of a		of peers ... ..	421
speaker ... ..	400	Inquiry into bribes taken by mem-	
A pardon granted to Danby ... ..	402	bers ... ..	423
And objected to by the Commons	404	Prorogation of Parliament ... ..	424
Danby is sent to the Tower ... ..	406	Habeas Corpus act ... ..	425
Prosecution of the plot ... ..	<i>ib.</i>	Affairs of Scotland ... ..	426
Plea of the lords in the Tower... ..	408	Trial and execution of Mitchell	<i>ib.</i>
Trial and conviction of Reading	409	Projects of revenge ... ..	429
Plan of a new council ... ..	411	More coercive measures ... ..	<i>ib.</i>
Their names ... ..	412	Murder of Archbishop Sharp ...	432
The king's policy ... ..	414	Insurrection ... ..	433
Plans of Shaftesbury ... ..	415	Victory of the insurgents ... ..	434
Expedients proposed by the king	416	Their infatuation ... ..	435
Rejected by the house ... ..	417	Their defeat at Bothwell-bridge	436
Bill of exclusion... ..	<i>ib.</i>	Trial of the Jesuits ... ..	437

And of Langhorne ... ..	439	Intrigue against James... ..	470
Their execution ... ..	440	Who returns to Scotland ... ..	472
Trial of Wakeman and others ...	441	Intrigues of Barillon ... ..	<i>ib.</i>
Who are acquitted ... ..	442	Disclosures to the House of Com-	
Execution of priests on account of		mons ... ..	473
their character ... ..	443	Bill of exclusion ordered ... ..	475
Dissolution of parliament ... ..	445	Accession to the Whig party ... ..	476
The duke of York in Brussels ...	446	Debate on the bill ... ..	477
He visits the king at Windsor... ..	447	Message from the king ... ..	478
Goes to reside in Scotland ... ..	449	The bill is passed ... ..	479
Unexpected prorogation ... ..	450	But is lost in the House of Lords	<i>ib.</i>
Its cause ... ..	<i>ib.</i>	Proceedings of the Commons ... ..	481
Rewards given by France ... ..	451	Of the Lords ... ..	482
Plans of the popular leaders ... ..	452	Trial of Lord Stafford ... ..	483
Recall of Monmouth ... ..	453	The first day ... ..	485
A seditious libel... ..	454	Evidence against the prisone... ..	487
Petitions for sitting of parliament	455	Dugdale ... ..	<i>ib.</i>
Counter addresses ... ..	457	Oates ... ..	488
Recall of the duke of York ... ..	458	Turberville ... ..	<i>ib.</i>
Denial of Monmouth's legitimacy	459	His defence ... ..	489
Duke of York presented for recu-		Objections to Dugdale ... ..	<i>ib.</i>
sancy ... ..	460	And Oates ... ..	490
Whig and Tory ... ..	<i>ib.</i>	And Turberville... ..	491
Account of Dangerfield... ..	461	Reply of the managers ... ..	492
He is sent to Newgate ... ..	463	The prisoner's exceptions ... ..	493
Turns informer ... ..	<i>ib.</i>	He is condemned ... ..	494
His testimony is disbelieved ... ..	464	His speech to the House of Lords	495
The Yorkshire plot ... ..	465	Causes of his condemnation ... ..	<i>ib.</i>
Conduct of the king ... ..	467	He is urged to confess ... ..	496
Of the duke of York ... ..	<i>ib.</i>	Objections to the warrant of exe-	
Of the prince of Orange ... ..	468	cution ... ..	498
Of the duke of Monmouth ... ..	469	His death ... ..	501

# HISTORY OF ENGLAND.

---

## CHAPTER I.

### CHARLES II.

---

THE NEW COUNCIL—PROCEEDINGS IN THE CONVENTION PARLIAMENT  
—TRIALS AND EXECUTION OF THE REGICIDES—ECCLESIASTICAL  
ARRANGEMENTS—CONFERENCE AT THE SAVOY—RISING OF THE  
FIFTH-MONARCHY MEN—NEW PARLIAMENT—EXECUTION OF VANE  
—CORPORATION ACT—ACT OF UNIFORMITY—PARLIAMENT IN SCOT-  
LAND—EXECUTION OF ARGYLE—RESTORATION OF EPISCOPACY IN  
SCOTLAND—ALSO IN IRELAND—ACT OF SETTLEMENT—AND EXPLA-  
NATORY ACT FOR IRELAND.

NEVER, perhaps, did any event in the history of this nation produce such general and exuberant joy as the return of Charles to take possession of the throne of his fathers. To the abolition of monarchy men attributed all the evils which they had suffered; from its restoration they predicted the revival of peace and prosperity. The known enemies of the royal cause slunk away to hide themselves from the effects of popular excitation; its triumph was everywhere celebrated with the usual manifestations of public joy; and the arms of the commonwealth, with all the emblems of republicanism, were subjected to the foulest indignities, and reduced to ashes. To keep

CHAP.  
I.  
A.D. 1660.

CHAP. alive the flame of loyalty, the royalists circulated, in  
I.  
A.D. 1660. cheap publications, most flattering portraits of the  
— new king. He was described as a prince of kindly disposition and engaging manners, of sound judgment and becoming spirit, and, above all, of the most inflexible attachment to the doctrines of Protestantism, an attachment which had stood the test of temptation in circumstances the most trying and seductive. That there was some truth in these representations cannot be denied; but one-half of the picture was concealed; it should have been added, that he was easy and indolent, the votary of dissipation and pleasure, and always ready to postpone the calls of business for the attraction of the ball-room or the company of his mistresses. His advisers had persuaded themselves that the follies of the youth would be redeemed by the virtues of the man. But he had now reached his thirtieth year without amendment. He had, indeed, made promises; had more than once torn himself from the unworthy connections to which he was enslaved; and had, on emergencies, displayed an energy deserving of that splendid prize to which he aspired. But these were transient efforts; he quickly relapsed into his former habits, and resumed with new relish the pursuit of enjoyment.

Charles, however, on his arrival, did not suffer himself to be dazzled by the splendid prospect around him. He was aware that his throne still rested on a very insecure foundation; he saw the dangers which he had to avert, and the difficulties which he had to overcome; and he formed a strong, and, as he fancied, unalterable resolution, to devote his chief attention to the business of government, and to suffer no pleasure, no amour, to seduce him from the duties of



his high office. His ministers congratulated each other on the change wrought in the habits of their sovereign. But he soon began to feel uneasy under the restraint; he was so beset with difficulties from the never-ceasing claims of the old royalists and of his more recent adherents; he found himself so perplexed with the increasing multitude of affairs submitted to his consideration, that he gradually emancipated himself from the trammels, and sought relaxation in the company of the gay, the witty, and the dissolute. The consequence was, that he not only neglected his duties, but often suffered his mind to be prejudiced against the advice of his council by the sallies and sarcasms of his profligate companions.<sup>1</sup>

To an observant eye that council presented a singular assemblage of men devoted to different parties, and professing opposite principles. In the first place were seen the royal brothers, James and Henry, who owed the distinction to their birth, with Hyde the chancellor, Ormond the lord-steward, Lord Culpepper, master of the rolls, and secretary Nicholas, the four counselors who had possessed the confidence of the king during his exile. Then came the lord-general, now created duke of Albemarle, who, by his recent conduct, had indissolubly bound up his own lot with the fortunes of the house of Stuart; Morrice, the friend and confidant of the general, and two or three others, whose chief merit was the recommendation of Monk, grounded on the promises which he had made to them during the late revolution. With these two classes Charles was advised to associate all the sur-

<sup>1</sup> Continuation of Clarendon's Life, written by himself, 21, 49, 167. Oxford, 1759. In the subsequent pages I shall refer to this work under the name of Clarendon alone. Pepys, Diary, 37, 8vo.

CHAP. I.  
A.D. 1660. — living counsellors of his late father before the war ; a measure which, with a few who had faithfully adhered to the royal interests, introduced several who had maintained the cause of the parliament against that of the crown. It is evident that, on a council thus constituted, the king would look partly with distrust, partly with aversion. A remedy was discovered by the ingenuity of the chancellor, at whose suggestion the council appointed a committee of foreign affairs, consisting of himself, Ormond, Southampton, the lord-treasurer, Monk, Nicholas, and Morrice. These met for the purpose of considering the relations of the English with the other crowns of Europe ; but they employed the opportunity of meeting to debate and decide, without the knowledge of their colleagues, every question concerning the internal administration of the kingdom. The same subjects were, indeed, afterwards submitted to the consideration of the whole council ; but Charles had already adopted the opinion of the secret cabinet ; and the dissenters were either silenced by the reasoning of the favourite ministers, or overawed by the presence and authority of the sovereign.<sup>1</sup>

With respect to the two houses, the king had only to speak, and his wishes were gratified. As they had recalled him without conditions, so they appeared willing to lay the liberties of the nation at his feet. The Cavaliers identified their own triumph with the exaltation of the throne ; the Presbyterians stood before it as repentant sinners anxious to efface the remembrance of their past delinquency ; and the few who were sincerely attached to republican principles deemed it prudent to shelter themselves from notice amidst the crowd, and to echo the more courtly opi-

<sup>1</sup> Clarendon, 2, 27.

nions of their colleagues. Fortunately the royal advisers were not disposed, perhaps were afraid, to take the utmost advantage of the general enthusiasm ; and, on some occasions, Charles himself condescended to read to the two houses lessons of moderation and prudence.<sup>1</sup> The most important of their proceedings may conveniently be classed under the following heads :—

CHAP.  
I.  
A.D. 1652.  
—

1. The objection which had been raised before their convocation was renewed after the return of the king. They had not been called by the royal writ ; they were therefore illegal assemblies, and their acts might hereafter be disputed in the courts of law. The obvious remedy was to dissolve them, and to summon a parliament after the usual manner, which might legalize by its authority the irregular proceedings of the convention. But this, to the king's advisers, appeared in the existing circumstances a dangerous experiment ; they were not disposed to part with a house of commons so obsequious to their wishes ; and they preferred to pass an act, declaring that the parliament summoned in the 16th Charles I. was determined, and that the two houses then sitting at Westminster constituted the two houses of parliament. It might, indeed, be asked, whence an assembly, illegal in its origin, could derive the power of giving to itself a legal existence ; but it was hoped that, as long as the convention sat, no man would venture to moot the question ; and on its dissolution every defect might be supplied by the authority of the succeeding parliament.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Clarendon, 8, 9. Burnet, Hist. of his Own Times, i. 270. Oxford, 1823.

<sup>2</sup> Stat. of Realm, v. 179. The question, however, was brought forward by Drake, a royalist, under the name of Philips, in a tract called "The Long Parliament Revived." He founded his opinion chiefly on the act of 17th of Charles I., which provided that the parliament should not be dissolved but by an express act of parlia-

CHAP. 2. The experience of former years had shown that  
 I. to restrain within due limits the pretensions of the  
 A.D. 1660. crown, it was necessary to keep it dependent on the  
 — bounty of the subject; but now both houses seemed  
 to have adopted the contrary doctrine; they attributed the calamities which for so many years had afflicted the nation to the scanty provision made for the support of royalty; they found, on inquiry, that the annual expenditure of the last king greatly exceeded his income; and, to prevent the recurrence of the wants which he experienced, and of the illegal expedients to which he had recourse, they raised the yearly revenue of the crown to the unprecedented amount of one million two hundred thousand pounds.

Sept. 4.

3. But while they provided for the sovereign, they were not unmindful of their own interests. In the preceding reigns, the proprietors of lands had frequently and zealously sought to abolish tenures by knights' service, confessedly the most onerous of the existing feudal burthens; but their attempts were constantly defeated by the monarch and his court-

ment, and that everything otherwise done, or to be done, for the dissolving of it, should be of none effect. Hence it followed that the parliament could never be dissolved but by its own act; and that the arguments of Prynne, which have been already noticed, were of no force; because though true of an ordinary parliament, they did not apply to one secured from dissolution in this extraordinary manner. Drake was impeached by the Commons; but the Lords had the prudence to remit the case to the attorney-general to be proceeded with in the ordinary courts of law. (See *Parl. Hist.* iv. 145, 147; and *App. i.*) The court wisely allowed the prosecution to be dropped. If the act of 17th of Charles were construed strictly according to the letter, the long parliament could never be dissolved by any other parliament, because before its dissolution no other meeting could be a legal parliament. It was, therefore, maintained that, by the separation of the houses from the king, and the secession or exclusion of so many members, it had fallen to pieces of itself. It had died a natural death. See the tract, "The Long Parliament is 'not Revived.'"—*Ibid.* xviii.

tiers, unwilling to resign the benefits of marriages, CHAP. I.  
reliefs, and wardships. Now, however, in this season A.D. 1660.  
of reconciliation and mutual concession, the proposal  
was made and accepted; the terms were arranged to  
the satisfaction of both parties; and Charles con-  
sented to accept a fixed annual income of one hun-  
dred thousand pounds in place of the casual but  
lucrative profits of the Court of Wards. Still the  
transaction did little honour to the liberality of the  
two houses. They refused to extend the benefit to  
inferior tenures; and the very act which relieved the  
lords of manors from the services which they owed to  
the crown, confirmed to them the services which they  
claimed from those who held by tenure of copyhold.  
Neither did they choose to pay the price of the benefit,  
though it was to be enjoyed exclusively by themselves.  
Originally, the authors of the measure intended to  
raise the compensation by a tax on the lands which  
had been relieved; the amount had actually been ap- Nov. 8.  
portioned to the several counties by the committee,  
when a member, as it were accidentally, asked why  
they should not resort to the excise. The suggestion  
was eagerly caught by the courtiers and many of the  
proprietors; the injustice of compelling the poor to  
pay for the relief of the rich, though strongly urged,  
was contemptuously overlooked; and the friends of the  
motion, on a division in a full house, obtained a ma-  
jority of two. In lieu, therefore, of purveyance, mili- Nov. 22.  
tary tenures, and their various incidents, fruits, and  
dependencies, the produce of one moiety of the  
excise, a constantly growing and more profitable  
branch of revenue than the original compensation,  
was settled on the crown for ever.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Stat. of Realm, 259. C. Journ. May 25, Nov. 8, 19, 21.  
Dec. 15, 21. Parl. Hist. iv. 146.

CHAP. 4. The excise, as the reader will recollect, had  
 I.  
 A.D. 1660. been introduced by the parliament, to defray the  
 — charges of the war against the king. To reconcile  
 the nation to so odious a tax, it was first voted for a  
 short period only; and, though it had been continued  
 ever since by successive grants, an understanding  
 always existed, that, as nothing but necessity could  
 justify the imposition, so it should most certainly cease  
 with that necessity. By the last enactment, one half  
 of it was now rendered perpetual; nor was the house  
 slow to dispose of the other. It had taken no mea-  
 sures to raise the revenue to the amount which it had  
 voted: the festival of Christmas approached; the king  
 admonished the members of his intention to dissolve  
 the parliament; and the houses hastily passed three  
 bills to improve the receipts on wine licenses, to  
 regulate the post-office, and to grant to the king the  
 second moiety of the excise for his natural life, in  
 full of the yearly settlement of one million two hun-  
 dred thousand pounds.<sup>1</sup> From that moment, all hope  
 Dec. 21. of its extinction vanished; and, in the course of a  
 few reigns, the streamlet has swelled into a mighty  
 river. The excise then produced three hundred  
 thousand pounds; it now produces eighteen million  
 pounds per annum.

5. The existence of the revolutionary army (it  
 amounted, in the three kingdoms, to more than sixty

<sup>1</sup> C. Journ. Nov. 27, Dec. 21. In the debate on the post-office bill, an amendment was proposed to exempt from the charge of postage all letters to and from members of the House of Commons, "sitting the parliament," on the ground that they had as good a right to that indulgence as the privy-councillors by whom it was enjoyed. Though the amendment was stigmatized as beneath the dignity of the house, and fit only for mendicants, though the speaker declared that he was ashamed to put the question, it was carried. The Lords, however, rejected it, and the Commons acquiesced. — Journ. of Com. Dec. 17. Parl. Hist. 163.

thousand men) was to the monarch and his ministers a subject of constant anxiety. It had, indeed, contributed to place him on the throne; but it might, with the same ease, precipitate him from it. Monk could no longer answer for its fidelity. When the first ebullitions of loyalty had subsided, many, both officers and privates, began to feel surprise that they had lent themselves to a revolution which must put an end to their accustomed license and long-established importance. The royalists, to whom the lord-general had given commissions, possessed not the confidence of the men; the followers of Lambert in his late unfortunate attempt, insinuating themselves into the quarters of the military, called on them to reassert the good old cause; and unauthorized meetings were held, the death of Monk was planned, and measures were taken to form a general combination among the different corps. In opposition to these attempts, Charles endeavoured to win the affections of the soldiery by the flattering manner in which he spoke of their discipline and loyalty, and the earnestness with which he recommended their services to the gratitude of his parliament; while his ministers, with the aid of a numerous corps of spies, sought out the sowers of sedition, and under various and feigned pretences, secured their persons. In both houses, members were instructed to represent the uselessness of so numerous a force in a time of profound peace, the expense which it had already entailed, and the annual amount which it would continue to entail on the nation. No opposition was offered to the motions with which they concluded. By successive grants, provision was made to liquidate all arrears; regiment after regiment was disbanded; and the measure was

CHAP.

A.D. 1660.

—

CHAP. I.  
A.D. 1660. — conducted with such attention to the wants and feelings of the men, that it was accomplished without exciting mutiny or public expressions of discontent.<sup>1</sup>

6. The proceedings on this subject were tediously protracted by the controversy between the two houses on the bill of indemnity. In his declaration from Breda, Charles had promised a general pardon, subject to such exceptions as might be suggested by the wisdom of parliament. The moment the question was brought forward, a wonderful diversity of opinions was observed. Every member had some friend whom he wished to shield from punishment, or some enemy whom he sought to involve in it; considerations of interest or relationship, of friendship or revenge, weighed more than the respective merits of the parties; and distinctions were made and resolutions passed for which it was difficult to account on any rational grounds. At last, the bill was transmitted from the Commons to the Lords, who, as their sufferings had in general been more severe, betrayed a more vengeful spirit. The chief points in discussion between the houses were, that the Lords sought to include, in one sweeping clause of condemnation, all persons who ever sat in judgment on any royalist in a high court of justice, and that they refused all hope of mercy to nineteen of the king's judges who had surrendered themselves in consequence of a royal proclamation. By a clause in that instrument, the disobedient were threatened with exception from pardon both as to life and property; whence the Commons inferred that the obedient had reason to expect such exception in their favour; while the Lords contended

<sup>1</sup> Stat. of Realm, v. 207, 236, 241. Clarendon, 10, 11. Burnet, i. 274.



that they had only a right to trial before a court of justice, whereas those who disobeyed might be condemned for contumacy. Charles, by repeated messages and speeches, advised moderation and clemency. It was evident that the Commons had adopted the more rational explanation; the Lords, after several conferences, relented; the other house met them by receding from some of its pretensions; and the act, after a long contest, received the royal assent. It declared, in the first place, that all the injuries and offences against the crown or individuals, arising out of quarrels between political parties since the 1st of June 1637, should be and were forgiven; then came the exceptions: 1. of fifty-one individuals actually concerned in the death of the king's father; 2. of Vane and Lambert; 3. of Lord Monson, Hazlerig, and five others, as far as regarded liberty and property; 4. of all judges in any high court of justice; and of Hutchinson, Lenthall, St. John, and sixteen others by name, as to eligibility to hold office, civil, military, or ecclesiastical. With respect to the case of the nineteen regicides who had voluntarily surrendered, it was yielded to the Lords that they should be tried for their lives; and, in return, it was conceded to the Commons that they should not be executed without a subsequent act of parliament to be passed expressly for that purpose.<sup>1</sup>

By most men, this general pardon was hailed as a national blessing, calculated to heal dissension and restore tranquillity; by the great body of the Cavaliers it was received with murmurs and complaints. It disappointed their fondest hopes; they saw themselves

<sup>1</sup> Journals of both Houses. Stat. of Realm, v. 231. Clarendon, 69.

CHAP.  
I.  
A.D. 1660.  
—  
June 18.  
July 27.  
Aug. 16, 21,  
22, 29.

CHAP. left by it the victims of their loyalty, without redress  
 A.D. 1660. <sup>I.</sup> for the injuries which they had received, or relief from  
 — the poverty to which they had been reduced; while, in numerous instances, their more fortunate neighbours of the republican party continued to revel in the undisturbed enjoyment of their new-gotten wealth, the fruit and reward of rebellion and injustice. With truth, they exclaimed, may it be called an act of oblivion and indemnity; but of oblivion of loyalty, and indemnity for treason.

7. Their discontent received some alleviation from the tragedy which followed. For years it had been sedulously impressed on the mind of Charles, that, as a son, he could never pardon the murder of his father; as a sovereign, he ought not to connive at the public execution of a king. To punish the regicides was, in his opinion, a sacred and indispensable duty; and the exceptions established by the late act afforded him ample scope for the exercise of justice, or the gratification of revenge. Five-and-twenty out of the original number had indeed been already removed by death beyond the reach of any earthly tribunal, and nineteen had crossed the sea to escape the fate which awaited them in their native country.<sup>1</sup> Still twenty-

<sup>1</sup> Three of these, Whaley, Goff, and Dixwell, secreted themselves in New England, where they passed their lives in the constant fear of being discovered by the officers of government. There is an interesting account of their adventures in Hutchinson's History of Massachusetts Bay, and in the history of these "Most Illustrious and Heroic Defenders of Liberty," published by Ezra Styles, S.T.D. LL.D., President of the Yale College, Hartford, U.S., 1794. Three others, Corbet, Okey, and Berkstead, were apprehended in Holland, at the instance of Downing, and given up by the States, as an atonement for their former treatment of the king during his exile. They suffered under the act of attainder, on the 19th of April, 1662.—Ludlow, iii. 82. State Trials, v. 1301—35. Pepys, i. 252, 258. Others sought refuge in Switzerland, where they believed themselves

nine remained, all in custody, and several of them as deeply tinged with the blood of the late king, and as criminal in the eyes of the royal party, as the most obnoxious of their fellows. The fugitives were attainted by act of parliament; the prisoners were arraigned before a court of thirty-four commissioners.

CHAP.  
I.  
A.D. 1660.

Oct. 9.

There was much in the composition of this court to interest the curiosity of the spectators, and to agitate the feelings of the unhappy men at the bar. That Cavaliers should sit in judgment on those who had brought the king to the block, might have been expected; but by the side of the chancellor, and Southampton, and Nicholas, were seated Manchester and Robartes, two of the parliamentary commanders; Say and Holles, the parliamentary leaders; Atkins and Tyrrel, parliamentary judges; Monk and Montague, two of Cromwell's lords; and Cooper, one of his most trusty advisers. These men, if they had not actually dipped their hands in the king's blood, had been deeply engaged in the transactions which led to his death, or had powerfully supported the several revolutionary governments which excluded his son and successor from the throne. For such offences they might, in other circumstances, have had to plead for their lives; but they had made professions of repentance, and had been selected to discharge this ungracious task, that they might display both the extent of the royal clemency, and the sincerity of their own conversion.

Most of the prisoners sought to deserve mercy by the ingenuous and sorrowful acknowledgment of their crime; the others alleged in their justification, that

to be in constant danger of assassination from emissaries hired by the English court.—Ludlow, iii. 113—134.

CHAP. they bore no personal malice to the royal victim; that  
 A.D. 1660. I. they looked on his death as a solemn act of national  
 — justice, and that they proceeded under the sanction of that authority which then exercised the supreme power in the nation. To the second of these pleas the court refused to listen; to the first it was replied, that in law the fact afforded sufficient evidence of the malice; and, to the last, that an irregular and unlawful meeting of twenty-six persons, pretending to represent the commons of England, could not be considered as the supreme authority in the nation.

Oct. 13. All were found guilty, and received judgment of death; but the execution of those who had voluntarily surrendered themselves was respited, according to the act of indemnity, for the subsequent consideration of parliament. The ten selected to suffer were Harrison, Scot, Carew, Jones, Clements, and Scroop, who had subscribed the fatal warrant; Cook, who acted as solicitor on the trial; Axtele and Hacker, two military officers who guarded the royal prisoner; and Peters, the minister, whose fervid and intemperate eloquence had been so often employed to prepare and support the actors in that remarkable tragedy. The language of these men, both in the court and after their condemnation, exhibited traits of the wildest fanaticism. For the justice of their cause they appealed to the victories which the Lord had given to their swords; to their bibles, which inculcated the duty of shedding the blood of him who had shed the blood of his fellow-men; and to the Spirit of God, which had testified to their spirit that the execution of Charles Stuart was a necessary act of justice, a glorious deed, the sound of which had gone into most nations, and a solemn recognition of that high

supremacy which the King of Heaven holds over the kings of the earth.

CHAP.  
I.  
A.D. 1662.

Similar sentiments supported and cheered them on the scaffold. When they were told to repent, they replied that of their sins they had repented, and of forgiveness they were assured. But they dared not repent of their share in the death of the late king; for to repent of a good deed was to offend God. They were proud to suffer for such a cause. Their martyrdom would be the most glorious spectacle which the world had ever witnessed since the death of Christ. But let the prosecutors tremble: the hand of the Lord was already raised to avenge their innocent blood; and in a short time the cause of royalty would crouch before that of independence. They uttered the prediction with the confidence of prophets,<sup>1</sup> and submitted to their fate with the constancy of martyrs. Peters alone appeared to shrink from the approach of death. The exhortation of his fellow-sufferers revived his courage; a strong cordial braced his nerves; and he mustered sufficient resolution to say that he gloried in the cause, and defied the executioner to do his worst.<sup>2</sup>

—  
Oct. 14, 16,  
17, 19.

These examples did not satisfy the resentment of the royalists, who lamented, as a misfortune, that the most odious of the regicides had by a natural death escaped the fate of their associates. It was true that

<sup>1</sup> And the prediction was believed. From the Diary of Whaley, Goff, and Dixwell, it appears that they looked on the execution of the regicides as the slaying of the witnesses foretold in the Book of Revelation, and that the prediction of a revolution in their favour was to be fulfilled in the mysterious year 1666. The year passed, and their hopes were disappointed; but they consoled themselves with the persuasion that there was an error in the date of the Christian era, and that the accomplishment of the prophecy would speedily arrive.—See Howell's State Trials, v. 1362.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. 947—1301.

CHAP. they were attainted; but the attainder affected all  
 A.D. 1660. alike; while the greater guilt of some called for

— more particular proofs of public reprobation. Revenge is ingenious; history could furnish instances of punishment inflicted on the remains of the dead; and in  
 Dec. 3. obedience to an order of the two houses, approved by the king, the bodies of Cromwell, Bradshaw, and Ireton, having been removed from their graves, were  
 1661.  
 Jan. 30. drawn on hurdles to Tyburn, taken out of their coffins, and hung at the three corners of the gallows, on the anniversary of the death of Charles I., the day chosen for this expiatory ceremony. In the evening they were cut down and decapitated; the heads fixed on the front of Westminster Hall, and the trunks thrown into a pit at the place of execution. To the Cavaliers this revolting exhibition afforded a subject of merriment and pleasantry; but it met with the deserved reprobation of every man of sensibility and judgment. It was an outrage against the common feelings of humanity, and could contribute nothing to the only real end of public punishment—the prevention of crime. The man who dares to stake his life on the pursuit of his object, will not be deterred by the fear of mutilation or suspension after death.<sup>1</sup>

8. Since the year 1642, a considerable portion of the landed property in every county had passed from

<sup>1</sup> Lords' Journals, xi. 205. Kennet's Reg. 367. Though Pride was included in the order, his body was not disturbed. Afterwards (1661, Sept. 12, 14) about twenty bodies of persons buried in Henry VII.'s chapel, and the church of Westminster, were disinterred by the king's order, and buried again in the churchyard. Among these there were the remains of Cromwell's mother, of his daughter Elizabeth Claypole, of Admiral Blake, and of Colonel Mackworth, who had been interred in the chapel, and of Pym, Dorislaus, Stroud, May the historian, Twiss and Marshall, divines, and of several others buried in the church.—Kennet, 534. Neal, 619.

the hands of the original owners into the possession of new claimants; and it was on this important consideration that the founders of the commonwealth rested their principal hope of its subsequent stability. Hundreds of their adherents had by the revolution been raised in the scale of society; they were become invested with the wealth and influence that originally belonged to their superiors; and it would be their interest to oppose with all their power the return of a system which would reduce them to poverty and insignificance. Charles, in his declaration from Breda, touched on the subject in guarded and measured terms; "he was willing that all controversies in relation to grants, sales, and purchases should be determined in parliament, which could best provide for the just satisfaction of all who were concerned." Parliament, however, made no such provision. It confirmed, indeed, as a measure of tranquillization, the judicial decisions which had been given in the courts of law and equity; but the royal promise respecting the transfer of property by grants and sales was forgotten, and, in consequence, no relief was afforded to two numerous classes of men belonging to the opposite parties. 1. At the very commencement of the civil troubles many royalists disposed of a portion, or the whole, of their estates, that they might relieve the pecuniary wants of the king, or enable themselves to raise men, and serve in the royal armies; and at its conclusion all of them were compelled to have recourse to similar measures, that they might discharge their debts, and pay the heavy fines imposed on them by order of the revolutionary governments. That these men had strong claims on the gratitude and pity of the king and parliament could not be denied; but these

CHAP.  
I.  
A.D. 1660.

CHAP. I.  
A.D. 1660. — claims were neglected ; the sales had been effected with their consent, they were bound by their own acts, and consigned to murmur in penury and despair. 2. The lands belonging to the crown, to the bishops, deans, and chapters, and to a few distinguished Cavaliers, had been granted away as rewards, or sold to the highest or the most favoured bidder. These were now reclaimed ; forcible entries were made ; and the holders, as they were not allowed to plead a title derived from an usurped authority, were compelled to submit to superior right or superior power. To the argument that they were, the most of them, bona fide purchasers, it was truly replied that they had taken the risk with the benefit ; but when they appealed to the “just satisfaction” promised in the royal declaration from Breda, Charles himself blushed at the rigour of his officers and adherents. By proclamation he recommended measures of lenity and conciliation ; he advised that the revolutionary purchasers should be admitted as tenants on easy fines ; and, at the united request of the two houses, he established a commission to arbitrate between the contending parties. The consequence, however, was, that while the purchasers of the crown lands were in general permitted to remain in possession, the purchasers of the church lands were in numerous instances treated with extreme severity. The incumbents had themselves suffered hard measures ; they were old, and therefore anxious to provide for the support of their families after them ; and, instead of attending to the royal recommendation, they made no distinction among the bidders, but selected for tenants those individuals who made the most advantageous offers.<sup>1</sup>

9. During the first period of the revolution, the

<sup>1</sup> Stat. v. 242. Kennet's Reg. 312. Clarendon, 183. Harris, iv. 345.



Presbyterian ministers had obtained possession of the parish churches; but their orthodoxy was not less intolerant than that of their predecessors, and they pursued, with equal violence, the theological offences of schism and heresy. Still, in defiance of their zeal, sectarianism continued to spread; by degrees, the civil and military authority passed into the hands of the Independents; the Presbyterians, in proportion as their power declined, turned their eyes towards the exiled prince; and their ministers, as far as prudence would permit, acted the part of zealous and successful missionaries in his favour. Now that Charles had recovered the crown, was he to expel from their livings the men from whom he had received these services: or was he to protect them, and to leave the episcopal clergy to pine in deprivation and want? The first savoured of ingratitude; it was moreover pregnant with danger. It might provoke the Presbyterian members, the majority of the House of Commons, to oppose the court; a thousand pulpits might join in advocating the duty of resistance; and the smouldering embers of civil war might be easily fanned into a flame by the breath of the preachers. On the other hand, he was led by principle, and pledged in honour, to restore that hierarchy, in defence of which his father had forfeited his crown and his life. This was loudly demanded by the Cavaliers, and was represented by Hyde as providing the surest bulwark for the throne. Charles did not hesitate; the kirk was sacrificed to the church; and every difficulty was surmounted by the singular address of the minister, joined with the engaging manner and real or affected moderation of the monarch.

That the dominion of the ancient laws had returned

CHAP. with the representative of the ancient kings, was a  
 I.  
 A.D. 1660. principle which no one ventured to contradict; but  
 — a principle which taught the votaries of the “Solemn  
 “League and Covenant” to tremble for the idol of  
 their worship, and threatened the Presbyterian clergy  
 with the loss of their livings. Still they relied on the  
 declaration from Breda, which promised the royal  
 assent to an act of parliament for composing differ-  
 ences in religion, and on the services of their brethren,  
 who formed a powerful body in the House of Com-  
 mons. But Charles and his politic adviser had no  
 intention to redeem the royal pledge, or to in-  
 trust the decision of this important question to  
 the doubtful orthodoxy of the two houses. The  
 number of the bishops, which had been reduced  
 to nine, was filled up by successive nominations: the  
 survivors of the sequestered clergy were encouraged  
 to re-enter on their benefices, or to accept a composi-  
 tion from the holders; and the heads of the univer-  
 sities received a royal mandate to restore to their  
 colleges the ejected fellows. At the same time, to lull  
 the apprehensions of the Presbyterians, offers of  
 bishoprics were made to the most eminent or moderate  
 of the ministers; ten obtained the nominal honour of  
 being chaplains to the king, and all were confirmed  
 in the possession of their benefices, where the legal  
 claimant was dead, or neglected to enforce his right.  
 July 9. But these measures excited alarm; a bill for the set-  
 tlement of religion was brought into the House of  
 Commons; and a resolution was passed that the  
 question should be considered in “a grand committee  
 “on every successive Monday.” Hyde, in opposition,  
 issued instructions to the friends of the court and the  
 church, who laboured zealously to perplex and pro-

tract the proceedings : two long and animated debates called forth the passions of the speakers ; and at last the sitting of the committee was suspended for three months, that the king might have time to consult the divines of both communions.<sup>1</sup> For this purpose, papers were exchanged between certain of the bishops and a select number of ministers. On points of doctrine, they scarcely differed ; but one party contended warmly for the model of episcopal government formerly devised by Archbishop Ussher, which the other absolutely rejected, as offering only another name for the establishment of the Presbyterian system.<sup>2</sup> The disagreement had been foreseen ; and Charles was advised to interpose as moderator between the disputants. He laid before them the draft of a royal declaration from the pen of the chancellor, solicited their observations on its provisions, and offered to adopt any reasonable amendment. In a few days it was published. It gave due praise both to the orthodox and the Presbyterian clergy ; avowed the king's attachment to episcopacy, but with the conviction that it might be so modified as, without impairing its real character, to remove the objections brought against it ; and for that purpose he enjoined, 1. With

CHAP.

I.

A.D. 1660.

Oct. 22.

Oct. 25.

<sup>1</sup> Clarendon, 74. Journal of Com. July 6, 20, 21. "The committee sat an hour in the dark before candles were suffered to be brought in, and then they were twice blown out ; but the third time they were preserved, though with great disorder, till at last "about ten at night it was voted," &c.—MS. Diary of a Member, in Parl. Hist. iv. 79, 82.

<sup>2</sup> Neal, ii. 568—575. It proposed that the several deans should hold monthly synods of the clergymen under their jurisdiction ; the bishops, yearly synods of those within their dioceses ; and the archbishops, every third year, synods of the bishops and deputies from each diocese within their respective provinces ; but in all these, the presidents were to possess no superior authority, but only to be considered as *primi inter pares*. See the scheme in the History of Nonconformity, 339—344.

CHAP. I.  
A.D. 1660. respect to jurisdiction, that the bishop should not exercise any illegal or arbitrary authority, nor pronounce ecclesiastical censures, nor celebrate ordinations without the assistance and advice<sup>1</sup> of his chapter and of an equal number of presbyters deputed by the clergy of the diocese, nor should confirm in any church without the information and consent of the minister; and 2. With regard to the religious scruples of the Presbyterians, that neither the reading of the Liturgy, nor the observance of the ceremonies, nor the subscription to *all* the Thirty-nine Articles, nor the oath of canonical obedience, should be exacted from those who objected to them through motives of conscience.<sup>2</sup>

These important concessions were received with joy and gratitude by the party. A meeting of London ministers declared that episcopacy, thus reformed and improved, was a different thing from the episcopacy against which they had protested in the covenant; and their celebrated leader, Dr. Reynolds, whether his scruples were really silenced, or the restraint on his ambition only removed, signified his acceptance of the bishopric of Norwich. Yet the declaration, while it kept the word of promise to the ear, contained a passage which tended to break it to the

<sup>1</sup> Instead of *advice*, the Presbyterians moved for the substitution of the word *consent*. Charles refused; and, when a passage from the *Εὐχὴν Βασιλικήν* was objected, hastily replied, "All that is in that book is not gospel."—Kennet, Reg. 283.

<sup>2</sup> L. Journ. xi. 179. Neal, ii. 575—580. Originally it was intended to permit all persons "to meet for *religious worship*, so be it they do it not to the disturbance of the peace." But the Presbyterians were not sufficiently liberal to allow to others what they demanded for themselves. Baxter distinguished between *tolerables* and *intolerables*. The Papists and Socinians were intolerables; their *worship* could not conscientiously be suffered; and, to satisfy the party, the clause was changed into a promise that no man should be disturbed for "difference of *opinion* in matters of religion."—Kennet, Reg. 280. Oldmixon, 488.

hope; it alluded to a synod to be convened, when the passions of men should be cooled, that the question might be fairly and finally settled. The Presbyterians had no inclination to depend on the uncertain decision of some future synod; they sought a permanent, not a temporary arrangement; and in a committee of the House of Commons, with Serjeant Hales at its head, a bill was formed for the purpose of converting the royal declaration into a law. Hyde saw that his own arts were directed against himself: he removed Hales from the house, to take his seat in the Exchequer as lord chief baron; the dependants of the court received instructions to vote against the bill; secretary Morrice opposed it in a long though moderate speech; and, on a motion that it should be read a second time, it was rejected by a majority of twenty-six in a house of three hundred and forty members. Shortly afterwards the convention parliament was dissolved.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.

I.

A.D. 1660.

Nov. 6.

Nov. 28.

Dec. 29.

That, notwithstanding the general demonstration of loyalty, there were many who secretly lamented the ruin, and ardently sought the restoration of the republican government, could not be doubted. The royal ministers were placed in a situation in which even a superfluous degree of vigilance or severity might be vindicated, or at least excused, on account of the probability of danger. But, while they secured the more prominent and suspicious characters, such

<sup>1</sup> Clarendon, 76. Journals of Com. Nov. 28. Parl. Hist. iv. 141, 152. I may observe that, on this occasion, Charles exercised his pretension of dispensing with the law in ecclesiastical matters, and yet no one ventured to complain. "It is our will and pleasure that none be judged to forfeit his presentation or benefice, or be deprived of it upon the statute of 13th Eliz. c. 12, so he read and declare his assent to all the articles of religion, which only concern the confession of the true Christian faith, and the doctrine of the sacraments comprised in the book of articles in the said statute mentioned."

CHAP. as Overton, Desborough, Day, and Courtenay, they  
 I.  
 A.D. 1660. appear to have overlooked or despised a conventicle  
 — of fanatics in Coleman-street, under the guidance of  
 a wine-cooper, named Venner. The king was gone  
 to Portsmouth in company with the queen mother;  
 and, on the afternoon of the following Sunday,  
 1661.  
 Jan. 6. Venner called on his hearers not to pray, but to act;  
 to take up arms in the cause of their king Jesus, to  
 whom alone allegiance was due, and never to sheathe  
 the sword till Babylon should be made a hissing and  
 a curse. To raise their courage, the enthusiast held  
 out to them the conquest of the whole world; they  
 should first lead captivity captive in England; from  
 England proceed to possess the gates of the earth;  
 and then bind kings in chains and nobles in fetters  
 of iron. What if they were few in number, not  
 more than sixty! They would fight for Him who  
 had promised that one should chase a thousand, and  
 two put ten thousand to flight. Arms had been pre-  
 pared; the soldiers of the heavenly King hastened  
 to St. Paul's, drove before them some of the trained  
 bands, traversed the city, and withdrew, during the  
 night, to Caen Wood, between Highgate and Hamp-  
 stead. The next morning about thirty were appre-  
 hended by the military, and a persuasion existed that  
 Jan. 9. the remainder had dispersed; but on Wednesday they  
 were seen in different streets, hastening towards the  
 residence of the lord mayor, and exclaiming, "The  
 "King Jesus and *their* heads upon the gates."  
 More fanatics had joined them: several rencontres  
 took place with the guards and the trained bands;  
 and the injury which they inflicted was equal to that  
 which they received; but after the loss of two-and-  
 twenty men killed on the spot, twenty, most of them

wounded, yielded to their opponents, and the remaining few escaped. Four of the prisoners were acquitted through want of evidence; most of the others expiated their crime on the gallows. But the failure of the enterprise had not shaken their faith. They died in the same sentiments in which they had lived, proclaiming the sovereignty of their heavenly king, and denouncing his vengeance against the usurpers of his prerogative, the kings of the earth.<sup>1</sup>

I shall not detain the reader with the ceremonial of the coronation, or the rejoicings with which it was celebrated. Charles had previously called a parliament after the ancient and legitimate form; and the result of the elections showed that the fervid loyalty which blazed forth at his restoration had, in the course of twelve months, suffered but little abatement. In a few places, indeed, men of anti-episcopal principles were returned, but the majority of the members consisted of royalists devoted to the person of the king, and ready to support the measures of the court. Some members of the council possessed seats in the lower house; but it was not yet the custom to employ them as the acknowledged leaders of the party. To save appearances, the chancellor (he had lately been created Baron Hyde, and, at the coronation, earl of Clarendon) privately communicated the wishes of the cabinet to a few of the most influential members, and each of these held a separate meeting of his friends and followers, whom he instructed in the part that each individual had to act, and the vote which it was expected that he should give. With the aid of a force thus previously, though secretly organized, in the

CHAP.

I.  
A.D. 1661.—  
Jan. 19, 21

April 23.

1660.  
Nov. 3.1661.  
April 23.

<sup>1</sup> State Trials, vi. 105. Kennet, Reg. 354, 562. Heath, 471. Parker, De Rebus sui Temporis, 10. Pepys, i. 167—169, 172.

CHAP. I. house, the minister experienced little difficulty in  
A.D. 1661. defeating the desultory and unconnected efforts of his  
— opponents.

May 8. This parliament, at the commencement of its long  
career, passed several laws of the highest importance,  
both in regard to the pretensions of the crown and  
the civil and religious liberties of the people. 1. The

May 17. solemn league and covenant, with the acts for erecting  
May 27. a high court of justice for the trial of Charles Stuart,  
for subscribing the engagement, for establishing a  
commonwealth, for renouncing the title of the present  
king, and for the security of the protector's person, were  
ordered to be burnt in the midst of Westminster Hall  
by the hands of the common hangman. It was  
affirmed that the negative voice, and the command of  
the army, were rights inherent in the crown; to  
devise any bodily harm to the king, and to distinguish  
between his person and his office, were pronounced  
treason; to call the king a heretic or a papist, was  
made to incapacitate the offender from holding any  
office in church or state; and the penalties of pre-  
munire were enacted against all who should assert  
that the parliament of 1641 was not dissolved, or that  
both houses, or either house, possessed legislative  
authority independently of the sovereign. At the  
same time, severe restrictions were imposed upon the  
press, to prevent the publication of books maintaining  
opinions contrary to the Christian faith, or to the  
doctrine or discipline of the church of England, or  
tending to the defamation of the church or state, or of  
the governors thereof, or of any person whomsoever.<sup>1</sup>

2. Though the convention parliament had under-  
taken to make ample provision for the pecuniary

<sup>1</sup> Clarendon, 181. Statutes and Journals, *passim*.



wants of the government, Charles was advised to apply to the two houses for additional aid, and ob-<sup>CHAP. I.</sup>tained from their loyalty a grant of four subsidies, the <sup>A.D. 1561.</sup>ancient but now obsolete method of raising supplies. —

It has been said of the king that he was improvident, that the establishment of his household was calculated on the most expensive scale, that he made extravagant presents to his favourites and mistresses, and that he squandered enormous sums in the unnecessary repair and improvement of the royal palaces; but it should also be remembered that at his restoration he found himself encumbered with a debt for which he could not be responsible, the enormous sum owing to the armies in the three kingdoms under the head of arrears; and that he was moreover compelled, from the destitute state of the several arsenals, to expend eight hundred thousand pounds in the immediate purchase of naval and military stores. We are assured that in the first fifteen months the only sum which could be devoted to the ordinary current expenses of the state was the seventy thousand pounds voted on account of the coronation. The parliament repeatedly listened to his solicitations; but the estimates were inaccurate; the taxes proved deficient;<sup>1</sup> they were tardily collected; new debts were contracted before the original debts could be discharged; and, during the whole course of his reign, Charles laboured under the pressure of a burden which he was unable to remove. This gave a peculiar tone to his policy. To procure money became his habitual pursuit; it entered into all his measures as the principal, or, at least, as an

<sup>1</sup> Sir P. Warwick showed that of the yearly sum of one million two hundred thousand pounds voted by the convention parliament, no more than nine hundred thousand pounds per annum was ever received.—Pepys, Diary, ii. 161.

CHAP. I. important object ; it dictated to him the match with  
 A.D. 1661. Portugal and the sale of Dunkirk to France ; and it  
 — seduced him into that clandestine correspondence and  
 those pecuniary bargains with the French monarch  
 which have left an indelible stain on his memory.

3. The feverish state of the public mind, agitated  
 by successive reports of plots and the prosecution of  
 real or supposed conspirators, enabled the ministry to  
 carry a measure which they deemed highly conducive  
 to the stability of the restored government. Both  
 the Presbyterians and Cavaliers had given proofs of  
 their attachment to the king ; but their loyalty was of  
 a different order : the first sought to limit, the latter  
 to extend the powers of the crown ; the one looked on  
 the constitution of the church as hostile, the other as  
 favourable to their views. In parliament the Cava-  
 liers were triumphant ; but the government of cities  
 and boroughs throughout the kingdom was chiefly in  
 the hands of the Presbyterians. To dispossess them of  
 June 19. these strongholds became the policy of Clarendon ;  
 and he accomplished his purpose by the Corporation  
 Act, which, after much opposition, was passed into a  
 Dec. 20. law. By it, commissioners were appointed with the  
 power of removing at discretion every individual  
 holding office in or under any corporation in the king-  
 dom ; and it was required that all persons permitted  
 to retain their situations should qualify themselves by  
 renouncing the solemn league and covenant, by taking  
 the oaths of allegiance and supremacy, and by de-  
 claring upon oath their belief that it was unlawful to  
 take up arms against the king on any pretence what-  
 soever, and their abhorrence of the traitorous doctrine  
 that arms may be taken up by his authority against  
 his person, or against those that are commissioned by

him. With respect to the admission of future officers, CHAP. I. A.D. 1661. the act moreover provided, that no man should be eligible who had not, within the year preceding his election, taken the sacrament according to the rite of the church of England. Qualifying tests had been first introduced into our law to exclude the Roman Catholics; now the precedent was urged to justify the exclusion of the dissenters; the doctrine of passive obedience was established by authority of the legislature; and the performance of a religious duty was made an indispensable qualification for the holding of a secular office.<sup>1</sup> This act broke the power of the Presbyterians in the state; the Act of Uniformity drove them from the places which they still retained in the church.

4. The king had promised that, preparatory to the comprehension of the "dissenting brethren," the Book of Common Prayer should be revised by a commission of divines from both communions. They met at the Savoy, the residence of the bishop of London; previous debates respecting forms and pretensions occupied a considerable portion of time; at length, the discussion commenced with written papers, and was subsequently continued in personal conferences. But the Presbyterians demanded so much, and the bishops were disposed to concede so little, that no progress was made; and when the commission (it had been limited to the duration of four months) was on the point of expiring, it was amicably agreed to dismiss the minor subjects of controversy, and to confine the discussion to eight passages in the book, which in the apprehension of the dissenters could not be adopted without sin. With this view the following question

<sup>1</sup> Stat. v. 321.

CHAP. was proposed for debate :—" Can a command be sin-  
 A.D. 1661. <sup>1.</sup> ful, enjoining that which is not in itself unlawful ? "

— After a long and fretful altercation, neither party was convinced, and both joined in a common answer to the  
 July 25. king, that they agreed as to the end, but could come to no agreement as to the means.<sup>1</sup>

This was the conclusion which had been expected and desired. Charles had already summoned the convocation, and to that assembly was assigned the task which had failed in the hands of the commissioners,  
 May 8. at the Savoy. Several of the bishops protested against any alteration ; but they were overruled by the majority of their brethren ; certain amendments and additions were adopted ; and the book, in its approved form, was sanctioned by the king, and sent  
 May 19. by him to the House of Lords.<sup>2</sup> The Act of Uniformity followed, by which it was enacted that the revised Book of Common Prayer, and of Ordination of Ministers, and no other, should be used in all places of public worship ; and that all beneficed clergymen should read the service from it within a given time, and, at the close, profess, in a set form of words, their " unfeigned assent and consent to every-  
 " thing contained and prescribed in it." To this declaration many objected. In obedience to the legis-

<sup>1</sup> State Trials, vi. 25—44. History of Nonconformity. Neal, ii. 601. In opposition to the bishops, it was contended, that a command, enjoining what is lawful, may be sinful *per accidens*, or may be unlawfully commanded. The point to which the dispute referred was the kneeling at the communion.—Id. 328.

<sup>2</sup> The most important of these alterations were perhaps the following : the insertion of the rubric respecting the posture of kneeling at the sacrament, the admission of persons not yet confirmed to communion, and the dispensing with new-married persons from the obligation of receiving the communion on the day of marriage, and of the sick from the obligation of confessing their sins and receiving absolution.

lature, they were willing to make use of the book, though they found in it articles and practices of the truth and propriety of which they doubted; but to assent and consent to what they did not really believe or approve, was repugnant to the common notions of honesty and conscience. In the following year an attempt was made to relieve them, on the transmission of a bill to amend the Act of Uniformity from the lower to the upper house. The Lords added a declaratory clause, that the words "assent and consent" should be understood only as to practice and obedience to the said act; but the Commons instantly rejected the amendment; the Lords in a conference submitted to withdraw it; and the only effect of the controversy was to place beyond a doubt the meaning in which the subscription was understood by the legislature.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
A.D. 1661.

1663.  
July 25.

July 27.

There were two other clauses which also gave offence. By one it was provided that no person should administer the sacrament, or hold ecclesiastical preferment, who had not received episcopal ordination; by the other, that all incumbents, dignitaries, officers in universities, public schoolmasters, and even private tutors, should subscribe a renunciation of the covenant, and a declaration of the unlawfulness of taking up arms against the sovereign under any pretence. It was in vain that the Lords objected: a conference followed; the court came to the aid of the Commons; the opposition was abandoned; and the bill in its improved form received the royal assent.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Lords' Journals, xi. 573, 577. The duke of York and thirteen other peers entered their protests against the amendment, "because" "it was destructive to the church of England as then established" (573).

<sup>2</sup> Stat. v. 364. Clarendon, 153. In the conferences between the

CHAP. During the progress of this question, the Lords had  
 A.D. 1663. displayed a spirit of liberality which shocked the more  
 — rigid orthodoxy of the lower house. In opposition to  
 the bill, they appealed to the declaration from Breda.  
 That instrument was an offer made by the king as head  
 of the adherents to the church and the throne, and  
 accepted by the several other parties within the king-  
 dom. It was virtually a compact between him and  
 the people, which fixed the price of his restoration.  
 The people had done their part in receiving him ; it  
 became his now to secure to them the boon which he  
 had promised. That boon, as far as regarded religion,  
 was liberty to tender consciences, and freedom from  
 molestation on account of difference of religious opi-  
 nion ; two things which, it was apprehended, could not  
 be reconciled with the disqualifying enactments of the  
 bill. The manager for the Commons replied, that  
 the declaration from Breda had been misunderstood.  
 "Tender" was an epithet implying susceptibility of  
 impression from without ; a tender conscience was one  
 which suffered itself to be guided by others ; the liberty  
 to tender consciences was therefore confined to the  
 "misled," and did not extend to the "misleaders ;" it  
 was granted to the flocks, but not to the pastors. In  
 aid of this sophistical exposition, he also observed, that  
 the declaration referred to the peace of the kingdom,  
 and to a future act of parliament, as if the act to be  
 passed had been one to impose restraint, instead of

houses much stress was laid on the opportunity which tutors possess  
 of impressing what notions they please on the minds of their pupils.  
 To this circumstance was attributed the strong opposition made to  
 Cromwell in parliament by the younger members ; for, during the  
 commonwealth, the clergy of the church of England supported them-  
 selves by teaching, and brought up their pupils in principles of  
 loyalty.—Lords' Journals, 447.

“granting indulgence,” or the allusion to the peace of the kingdom had not been understood as an exception of the seditious and anarchical doctrines promulgated by some of the fanatical preachers.<sup>1</sup> The Act of Uniformity may have been necessary for the restoration of the church to its former discipline and doctrine; but if such was the intention of those who formed the declaration from Breda, they were guilty of infidelity to the king, by putting into *his* mouth language which, with the aid of equivocation, they might explain away, and of fraud to the people, by raising in *them* expectations which it was never meant to fulfil.

The triumph of the church was now complete. The bishops had already been restored to their seats in parliament, and the spiritual courts had been re-established. To the first of these measures a strong opposition was anticipated from the united efforts of the Catholics and Presbyterians in the House of Lords; but of the Catholic peers, one only, the Viscount Stafford, voted against it; and among the Presbyterians the opposition was confined to the survivors of those who had originally supported the bill incapacitating clergymen from the exercise of temporal authority. The second was accomplished with equal facility; but, at the same time, the ecclesiastical jurisdiction was curtailed of two of its most obnoxious appendages, the High Commission court and the power of administering the oath *ex officio*.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Lords' Journals, xi. 449.

<sup>2</sup> Stat. 306, 315. Whoever will compare the account in Clarendon, 138, with the Journals, xi. 279, 281, 283, will be astonished at the inaccuracies of the historian. In five material points, including the principal part of his narrative, he is flatly contradicted by the testimony of the Journals. So far was the bill from being detained in the House of Lords, that it was forwarded through all its stages with unprecedented rapidity. It was sent from the

CHAP. 5. Among others, the English Catholics had cherished a hope of profiting by the declaration from Breda; and that hope was supported by the recollection of their sufferings in the royal cause, and their knowledge of the promises made by Charles during his exile. The king was, indeed, well disposed in their favour. He deemed himself bound in honour and gratitude to procure them relief; he knew the execration in which the penal laws against them were held on the continent; and had often declared his resolution to mitigate, whenever he should be restored to his father's throne, the severity of such barbarous enactments.<sup>1</sup>

June 28. In June, 1661, the Catholics met at Arundel House, and presented to the Lords a petition, complaining of the penalties to which they were liable for the refusal of oaths incompatible with their religious opinions. The Presbyterian leaders lent their aid to the Catholic peers; and Clarendon placed himself at the head of their adversaries. Not a voice was raised in favour of the statutes inflicting capital punishments; but, after several debates, the house resolved that "nothing had been offered to move their lordships

June 21. "to alter anything in the oaths of allegiance and "supremacy." In the meantime, Colonel Tuke<sup>2</sup> was heard at the bar against the sanguinary laws; and several papers stating the grievances and prayers of the Catholics had been laid on the table. The petitioners claimed the benefit of the declaration from Breda, and observed, that the only objection to their claim rested on the supposition that the acknowledgment of the spiritual supremacy of the pope implied the admission

Commons on Thursday, and passed by the Lords on the Tuesday following.

<sup>1</sup> Clarendon, 140.

<sup>2</sup> Sir G. Tuke, of Cressing Temple, in Essex.—Pepys, i. 364.



of his temporal superiority. Against this they protested. The doctrine of his temporal authority was a problematical opinion, admitted indeed by some individuals, but no part of the Catholic creed; and the petitioners (so far were they from holding it) offered to bind themselves by oath "to oppose with their lives and fortunes the pontiff himself, if he should ever attempt to execute that pretended power, and to obey their sovereign in opposition to all foreign and domestic power whatsoever, without restriction."<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
I.  
A.D. 1663.

The house having received the report of a committee to inquire into "the sanguinary laws," resolved to abolish the writ *De Hæretico Inquirendo*, and to repeal all the statutes which imposed the penalties of treason on Catholic clergymen found within the realm, or those of felony on the harbourers of such clergymen, or those of premunire on all who maintained the authority of the bishop of Rome. But this measure of relief did not equal the expectations of the laity, who sought to be freed from the fines and forfeitures for recusancy; and the whole project was quashed by the cunning of an adversary, who moved and carried a resolution that no member of the society of Jesuits should enjoy the benefit of the intended act. Immediately discord spread itself among the petitioners; pamphlets in favour of and against the society were published; and, on the one hand, it was contended that the boon, with whatever exceptions it were clogged, ought to be accepted, and that the Jesuits were bound in decency to resign their own pretensions for the common benefit of the Catholic body; on the other, that the distinction sought to be established by the bill was groundless and unjust, and that, if the

July 16.

<sup>1</sup> Kennet's Register, 476.

CHAP. Catholics consented to purchase relief for them-  
 I.  
 A.D. 1663. selves by the proscription of the order, they would  
 — entail on their memory the stigma of selfishness and perfidy. Amidst these altercations, the committee at Arundel House was dissolved; the progress of the bill was suspended, at the request of the Catholic peers; and in the succeeding session no one ventured to recall it to the attention of parliament.<sup>1</sup>

6. Though the kingdom presented everywhere the appearance of tranquillity, the different parties continued to look on each other with jealousy and apprehension. That there existed many who, if they had possessed the means, wanted not the will, to overturn the royal government, cannot be doubted; and these, by the imprudence of their language or their carriage, might occasionally minister just cause of suspicion; but, on the other hand, there were also many whose credulity was as extravagant as their loyalty; who could discover traces of guilt in conduct innocent or indifferent; and who daily besieged the council-board with the history of their fears, and with denunciations of treason. Most of these informers met with de-

<sup>1</sup> Journals, xi. 276, 286, 299, 310. Kennet's Register, 469, 476, 484, 495. Orleans, 236. Letter from a Person of Quality to a Peer of the Realm, &c. 1661. Clarendon, in his account of this transaction (p. 143), tells us that the Jesuits were apprehensive of being excluded from the benefit of the act, and broke up the committee at Arundel House by declaring that "Catholics could not, with a good conscience, deprive the pope of his temporal authority, which he hath in all kingdoms granted to him by God himself." But Clarendon is, as usual, incorrect; for they were actually excluded from the benefit of the act (Journ. 310); and in their "reasons," published by them at the time, they declare that ever since the year 1618 all Jesuits, by order of their general, "are obliged, under pain of damnation, not to teach the doctrine" which Clarendon ascribes to them, "either in word, writing, or print."—Kennet's Reg. 496.

served neglect; but to some it was thought greater credit was due: the king communicated their discoveries to the two houses, arrests were ordered, and convictions and executions followed. It has often been asserted that these plots had no real existence; that they were fabricated by the ingenuity of Clarendon, who sought, by exciting unfounded alarms, to procure the sanction of parliament to the measures which he meditated against the nonconformists. But the authors of this charge, so disgraceful to his character, were men whose sufferings on the score of religion made them his enemies, and who never supported their assertions with any satisfactory proof; nor is it undeserving of remark, that at the very same time, he was suspected of a secret connection with the republicans, because he received the informations of the royalists with an air of coldness, and with expressions of disbelief.<sup>1</sup>

These reports and proceedings had, however, a considerable influence on the temper of the two houses, and turned their attention to the fate of the surviving regicides, who were still detained in prison. Of those who had been excepted from the penalty of death, all enjoying titles of honour were degraded; and three, the Lord Monson, Sir Henry Mildmay, and Robert Wallop, on the 30th of January, were pinioned upon hurdles, and drawn through the streets with halters round their necks to the gallows at Tyburn, and back again to prison. Of those who had surrendered in consequence of the proclamation, the punishment had been respited till further order of parliament. A bill for their immediate execution was now introduced, passed by the lower house, and sent to the Lords;

<sup>1</sup> See Monkton's account; Lansdowne MSS. 988, f. 346.

CHAP. I. who read it once, examined the prisoners at their bar,  
 A.D. 1662. and never afterwards noticed the subject.<sup>1</sup> The fact  
 — is, that these unhappy men owed their lives to the  
 humanity of the king. "I am weary of hanging,"  
 he said to the chancellor, "except for new offences.  
 "Let the bill settle in the houses, that it may not  
 "come to me; for you know that I cannot pardon  
 "them."<sup>2</sup>

There still remained Vane and Lambert, who, though not actually guilty of the death of Charles I., were considered as fit objects of punishment. Lambert had been the last to draw the sword against the royal cause, and was still looked up to by the republicans as their nominal head. Vane, if he had incurred ridicule by his extravagance as a religionist, was highly distinguished by his abilities as a statesman. In the first capacity, he had published books replete with pious fanaticism and unintelligible theology; in the latter he stood without a rival as to matters of finance and civil polity. To his counsels and foresight the Cavaliers chiefly attributed the almost uniform success of their adversaries; but his great and unredeeming offence was one which, though never mentioned, could never be forgotten. He had been, at the beginning of the troubles, the cause of the death of Strafford, by communicating to Pym the document which he had purloined from his father's desk. There was, however, this peculiarity in the case both of Vane and Lambert, that, though the convention parliament had refused to except them from the penalty of death, yet on account of the

1660.  
 Sept. 5.

<sup>1</sup> C. Journ. 1661, July 1; 1662, Jan. 27, Feb. 1, 3. L. Journ. xi. 375, 380. Pepys, i. 243.

<sup>2</sup> See Clarendon's notes in Clar. Pap. iii. App. xlvi.

declaration from Breda, it had recommended them to mercy in the event of a conviction, and the recommendation had been favourably received and answered on this account by the king.<sup>1</sup> Charles was disposed to leave them in prison without further molestation; but the House of Commons ordered the attorney-general to bring them to trial, and by three successive addresses extorted the royal consent.<sup>2</sup> Their conduct at the bar presented a singular contrast. Lambert, who had so often faced his enemies in the field, trembled at the sight of a court of justice; Vane, who had never drawn the sword, braved with intrepidity the frowns and partiality of his judges. The first behaved with caution and modesty; he palliated his opposition to Booth and Monk, by pretending that he was ignorant of their attachment to the house of Stuart; and appealed to the royal mercy, to which he thought himself entitled by the king's proclamation and answer to the address of the convention parliament. He received judgment of death, but was sent to the island of Guernsey, where he beguiled the hours of banishment by the cultivation of two arts in which he delighted,—those of the florist and the painter.<sup>3</sup> Vane, on the contrary, boldly maintained the principles which he had formerly advocated. He was, he said, no traitor. By the act which rendered the long parliament indissoluble without its own consent, the two houses were raised to a power equal and co-ordinate with that of the king, and possessed a right to restrain oppression and

CHAP.  
I.  
A.D. 1661.

July 1.

1662.  
Feb. 19.

June 6.

<sup>1</sup> C. Journ. Aug. 28, 1660, Sept. 5. L. Journ. xi. 156.

<sup>2</sup> C. Journ. July 1, Nov. 22, 1661, Jan. 10, Feb. 19, 1662.

<sup>3</sup> Six years afterwards he was brought to the island of St. Nicholas, Plymouth, where he remained a prisoner till his death, about the end of March 1684.

CHAP. I. tyranny : by the war which followed between these  
 A.D. 1662. equal authorities, the people were placed in a new  
 — and unprecedented situation, to which the former laws of treason could not apply : after the decision by the sword, “a decision given by that God who, being “Judge of the whole world, does right and cannot “do otherwise,” the parliament became *de facto* in possession of the sovereign authority, and whatever *he* had done in obedience to that authority was justifiable by the principles of civil government, and the statute of the 11th of Henry VII. He spoke with a force of reasoning and display of eloquence which surprised the audience and perplexed the court ; and the judges were reduced to lay down this extraordinary doctrine, that Charles, in virtue of the succession, had been king *de facto*, and therefore in possession of the royal power from the moment of his father’s death. Hitherto by a king in possession had been understood a king in the actual exercise of his authority, which Charles most certainly was not ; but the judges supported their decision on the ground that he was the only person then claiming the royal power ; a miserable sophism, since the authority, the exercise of which constitutes a king *de facto*, was actually possessed by the parliament, which had abolished the very name and office of king.<sup>1</sup>

To Charles his conduct on this occasion was represented as an additional offence, a studied vindication of rebellion, a public assertion that the houses of parliament were the only supreme power in the nation. He began to think Vane “too dangerous a man to let live,

<sup>1</sup> State Trials, vi. 119—186. But Vane did not merely obey the authority in actual exercise of the supreme power ; he formed a part of that authority, keeping the king *de jure* out of possession.

“if he could be honestly put out of the way :” and that scruple was removed by the sophistry of those who maintained that the king was no longer bound by the royal word ; for even God himself refused forgiveness to the unrepenting sinner. Charles commuted the punishment of hanging for decapitation ; and Vane submitted with cheerfulness to his fate. On the scaffold he displayed the same intrepid bearing which he had manifested at his trial, and was about to renew the advocacy of his principles to the spectators, when the trumpets were sounded in his face, and his notes were demanded and taken from him by the sheriff. He suffered on Tower Hill. It was the spot where the blood of his victim, Strafford, had been shed ; and there he also fell, an expiatory sacrifice to the manes of that nobleman. The one began, the other, after an interval of one-and-twenty years, closed, the list of proscription furnished by this period of civil discord.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
I.  
A.D. 1662.

June 14.

From the restoration of the royal authority in England, we may turn to its re-establishment in Scotland and Ireland ; which countries, as they had not been mentioned in the declaration from Breda, depended for their subsequent fate on the good pleasure of the sovereign.

I. With respect to Scotland, the first question submitted to the royal consideration was, whether it should remain in its present state of an incorporated province, or be restored to its ancient dignity of an independent kingdom. By his English advisers Charles was reminded that the Scots were the original authors of the calamities which had befallen his family ; they were now, indeed, a conquered and prostrate people ; but let him

<sup>1</sup> Pepys, i. 275. See the letter of Charles to Clarendon, in Harris, v. 32. State Trials, vi. 187—198. Ludlow, iii. 89.

CHAP. I. beware how he replaced them in a situation to display  
 A.D. 1662. their accustomed obstinacy, and to renew their disloyal  
 — engagements. But the king cherished more kindly  
 feelings towards the land of his fathers, and willingly  
 acquiesced in the prayer of the Scottish lords whom  
 loyalty or interest had drawn to his court. The sur-  
 vivors of the committee of estates, whom he had named  
 previously to his disastrous expedition into England in  
 1651, received orders to resume the government of  
 Scotland; and the earl of Middleton was appointed  
 lord commissioner, the earl of Glencairn lord chancel-  
 lor, the earl of Lauderdale secretary of state, the earl  
 of Rothes president of the council, and the earl of  
 Crawford lord treasurer. The two first had repeatedly  
 proved their loyalty in the field; the other three had  
 suffered a long imprisonment for their services under  
 the duke of Hamilton: of the five, Middleton chiefly  
 possessed the confidence of the English cabinet, though  
 Lauderdale, from the pliancy of his temper, and his  
 constant attendance on Charles, had won the personal  
 affection of the monarch.

In a short time a parliament was summoned to meet  
 in Edinburgh.<sup>1</sup> The terrors of punishment for past  
 delinquency had been held out as a warning to the  
 prudence of the members; and the house was found  
 to be composed of Cavaliers by principle, or of prose-  
 lytes eager to prove the sincerity of their new political  
 professions. To obtain from such men a recognition  
 of the legitimate rights of the sovereign was an easy

1661.  
 Jan. 1.

<sup>1</sup> The proceedings of this parliament were afterwards called in question because the members neglected to sign the covenant, a condition required by a law then in force, and declaring the constitution of parliament without it null and void.—Kirkton, 88. From the habitual intoxication of Middleton and his friends, it was called the drunken parliament.—Id.



task ; but the commissioner had in view an object of more difficult attainment. In his opinion, the royal authority could never be secure till the church, by the restoration of the hierarchy, should be rendered dependent on the crown ; and, for this purpose, he undertook to exalt the prerogative, to demolish the covenant and the pretensions which had been built upon it, and to humble the pride, and curb the presumption of the kirkmen. By a series of acts it was declared that the power of appointing the chief officers in the state, of calling and dissolving parliaments, of commanding the forces, and of making treaties with foreign potentates, resided solely in the king ; that without his assent no acts passed in parliament could obtain the force of law ; that it was high treason for subjects to rise, or continue in arms, without the sanction of his authority ; that all assemblies, under the pretence of treating of matters of state, civil or ecclesiastical, were, if holden without his special consent, contrary to law ; that neither the solemn league and covenant, nor the treaties arising out of it, could authorize any seditious interference with the churches of England and Ireland ; that, for the future, no man should take, or offer to be taken by others, the said covenant without his majesty's special warrant and approbation ; and that every individual holding office should subscribe a declaration of his submission to these acts, and take an oath of allegiance, acknowledging the king to be "supreme governor over all persons and in all cases." The Presbyterian ministers viewed these enactments, so rapidly succeeding each other, with misgivings and apprehension ; they knew not how to reconcile with their consciences a declaration which seemed to make the destiny of millions dependent on the will of a

CHAP.  
I.  
A.D. 1661.

CHAP. single man; and they discovered in the oath an im-  
 A.D. 1661. plied acknowledgment of the king's spiritual supremacy, to the disherison of Christ and of the kirk. To their representations Middleton replied that the sovereign did not claim any ecclesiastical authority in "the word, the sacraments, or the discipline;" but when they prayed that the explanatory epithet "civil" might therefore be inserted before "governor" he contemptuously rejected their petition.<sup>1</sup>

Emboldened by his success, the commissioner ventured to recommend a measure unprecedented in the annals of Scotland. Though much had been done to clear the way before him, the lawyers still discovered a multitude of legal obstacles to the accomplishment of his object; and to save time and debate, he resolved by one sweeping and decisive act to annul all the proceedings of all the Scottish parliaments during the last eight-and-twenty years. The lord-treasurer and the young duke of Hamilton<sup>2</sup> objected that one of these parliaments had been honoured with the presence and sanction of Charles I., and another with those of his son, and that to rescind them would be to repeal the act of indemnity, and the approbation of the "engagement." But Middleton replied, that on each occasion the king, though in possession of physical liberty, had been under moral restraint; and that the alleged acts, laudable as they were in their object, were grounded on motives so false and hypocritical, as

<sup>1</sup> Scottish Acts, p. 10, 12, 13, 16, 18, 45. Kirkton, 90. Wodrow, 21—24, 26; App. viii. Baillie, ii. 449, 450. Burnet, i. 197—199. Oxford, 1823, and Middleton's Narration in Miscel. Aul. 179.

<sup>2</sup> A son of the marquess of Douglas, who obtained the title in consequence of his marriage with the heiress of the late duke of Hamilton, with twenty thousand pounds out of the customs of Leith. —Baillie, ii. 442.

to prove a disgrace to the national legislation. His reasoning, or his authority, silenced his opponents ; the rescissory act was passed ; and at one blow every legal prop of the Scottish kirk was levelled with the ground. The ministers looked around them with astonishment. They met in several counties to consult and remonstrate ; but their synods were everywhere dispersed or suspended by the authority of the government.<sup>1</sup>

Another object of the commissioner, subsidiary to the former, was to intimidate by examples of punishment. In England, the demands of justice had been satisfied with the blood of the regicides ; to expiate the guilt of Scotland, a more illustrious victim was selected, the marquess of Argyle. No man had more deeply offended in the opinion of the Cavaliers ; they called for vengeance against the betrayer of his sovereign and the murderer of Montrose ; and they represented him to Charles as the most crafty and selfish of demagogues ; one who, under every change, whether he swayed the councils of the Scottish rebels, or placed the crown on the head of the true heir at Scone, or sat as a commoner in the parliament of the usurper Richard, had always contrived to conceal, under the mask of patriotism, his only real object, the aggrandizement of his family. The moment he arrived in London, to pay his court to the restored monarch, he was secured and conducted to the Tower ; his petition for a personal interview was refused, through the influence of those who were acquainted with his insinuating manner, and the easy temper of the king ; and Charles, to escape from the painful task of deciding on his fate, sent him back to Scotland, to be tried by his

CHAP. I.  
A.D. 1661.  
—  
March 28.

1660.  
July 7.

<sup>1</sup> Scottish Acts, p. 86. Wodrow, 27, 31—34. Burnet, 199. Miscel. Aul. 182.

CHAP. countrymen, or rather by his enemies in parliament.<sup>1</sup>  
 I.  
 A.D. 1661. From them Argyle had no reason to expect either  
 — justice or mercy. He first sought to obtain delay, by  
 Feb. 12. soliciting a commission to examine witnesses; then,  
 abandoning all defence, threw himself on the mercy of  
 March 5. the sovereign; and, when his submission was rejected  
 as unsatisfactory by the parliament, claimed the benefit  
 March 11. of the amnesty formerly granted at Stirling. To this,  
 in opposition to the remonstrances of Middleton,  
 Charles declared that he was fully entitled; and thus  
 the charge against him was confined to offences alleged  
 to have been committed since 1651; which were, that  
 he had repeatedly employed defamatory and traitorous  
 language in speaking of the royal family; that he had  
 obtained a grant of twelve thousand pounds from  
 Oliver Cromwell; that he had given his aid to the  
 English invaders against the liberty of his country;  
 and that he sat and voted in the parliament of Richard  
 Cromwell, which had passed a bill to abolish the right  
 of the Stuarts to the crowns of the three kingdoms.  
 It was replied, that of the words attributed to the ac-  
 cused, some had never been uttered by him at all, and  
 others were susceptible of a very innocent meaning;  
 that the money had been received from Cromwell, not  
 as a reward for services rendered to the usurper, but  
 as a compensation for losses suffered by the marquess;  
 and that the laws which prevail under a legitimate  
 government, ought not to be strictly applied to the

<sup>1</sup> Wariston and Swinton were almost as odious to the Cavaliers as Argyle. The first escaped the search of his enemies, the second was discovered and apprehended. But the zealous and stubborn Covenanter dwindled into a meek and humble Quaker, and by the ingenuousness of his confession saved his life, though he forfeited his estate. The wittings, however, contended that, if he had not trembled, he never would have quaked.—Baillie, ii. 446. Kirkton, 98, 99. Wodrow, 86.

conduct of subjects during a temporary usurpation ; CHAP. I.  
 because, though it were treasonable to concur in trans- A.D. 1661.  
 ferring the sovereign authority to an unjust possessor,  
 it might be meritorious to employ the authority so  
 transferred for the good of the country. Now this  
 was the case of Argyle. He sat, indeed, in Richard's  
 parliament; but he sat there, not to support the  
 usurper, but to procure a diminution of the taxes im-  
 posed upon Scotland, to prevent the incorporation of  
 the country with England, and to lend a helping hand  
 to the restoration of the legitimate monarch. For some  
 time his fate remained in suspense : it was decided by  
 the arrival of a small parcel of four or five letters,  
 formerly written by him, partly to Monk, partly to  
 other Cromwellian officers.<sup>1</sup> With their purport we  
 are not accurately acquainted ; but the result proves  
 that they contained strong assertions of enmity to the  
 king, or of attachment to the protector. They were  
 read in the house ; his friends, oppressed with shame  
 and despair, retired ; and judgment of death was pro-  
 nounced against the unfortunate nobleman. Still,  
 could he have appealed to the king, his life would  
 probably have been spared ; but his judges allowed  
 him only forty-eight hours to prepare for death, and  
 he employed them in seeking from God that mercy  
 which was refused to him by man. In the fervour of  
 his prayer, he thought that he heard a voice saying,  
 " Son, be of good cheer, thy sins are forgiven thee ; "

May 25.

<sup>1</sup> Whether such letters were in reality furnished by Monk, is a disputed question ; the affirmative of which is strongly maintained by the editor of Howell's State Trials, x. 764, note. But that they were letters of " friendship and confidence," appears to me very uncertain. For though Burnet and Cunninghame represent Monk and Argyle as living in habits of friendship, the documents in Thurloe show that they were distrustful of each other.—Thurloe, v. 604 ; vi. 341 ; vii. 584.

CHAF. and, under this persuasion, he mounted the scaffold  
 I.  
 A.D. 1661. with an intrepidity which disappointed the malice of  
 — his enemies, and expressed an attachment to the  
 May 27. covenant which raised him to the rank of a martyr in  
 the estimation of the kirkmen. His head was struck  
 off by the maiden, and fixed on the same spike which  
 had been crowned with that of his reputed victim,  
 Montrose.<sup>1</sup>

That the forms of justice were violated in this celebrated trial, no one can doubt. Whatever may have been the offences of Argyle, they were not judicially proved. But he had rendered himself odious to the Cavaliers by his strenuous advocacy of the covenant, to his countrymen by his subserviency to their English conquerors, and to the more moderate part of the clergy by his adhesion to the remonstrants. It was supposed that his death had been hastened by his enemies as much through the hope of enriching themselves from the wreck of his fortune as for the gratification of revenge. But Charles rescued his vast possessions from their grasp, and gave them back, with some exceptions, to his eldest son, whom he created earl of Argyle.<sup>2</sup>

The execution of this nobleman was followed by

<sup>1</sup> State Trials, v. 1369—1508. Baillie, ii. 451, 452. Kirkton, 100—104. Wodrow, 42—57; App. 23—28, 30—45. Clarendon, 58, 212. Burnet, i. 207—214. At the same time “the parliament thought fit to honour Montrose his carcase with a glorious second burial, to compensate the dishonour of the first, and with him one Hay, of Delgattie (a flagitious papist) and one of his colonels.” —Kirkton, 122.

<sup>2</sup> The young Argyle, in a private letter to the Lord Duffers, complained in no very measured terms of the commissioner and the parliament. The letter was intercepted, and the writer accused of *leasingmaking*, which by the Scottish law was a capital offence. The parliament condemned him to death; but Charles granted him a pardon, and, after some time, discharged him from prison. —Kirkton, 143.

that of Guthrie, one of the most violent and influential among the protesting ministers. He had formerly excommunicated Middleton, had joined the western remonstrants, and been one of the compilers of the tract entitled "The Causes of God's Wrath;" and since the restoration, he had called, in defiance of the committee of estates, a meeting to remind the king of the duties imposed on him by the covenant, and to warn him against the employment of malignants in his service. He attempted to vindicate his conduct by appealing to the confession of faith, the national covenant, the solemn league and covenant, and the unbending opposition which he had always offered to the usurpation of the Cromwells. But it was resolved that one of the clergy should suffer as an example to the rest; and his colleague Gillespie, who by the turbulence of his zeal, and his proud contempt of the civil authority, had earned an equal, if not a better claim to the crown of martyrdom, descended from his high pretensions, and submitted to solicit the royal pardon, on condition of promoting the cause of episcopacy. Guthrie appeared on the scaffold with an air of triumph, and harangued the spectators in his usual tone of invective and enthusiasm. He declared that God was wroth at the sins of the people; he threatened them with the worst of the divine judgments; and foretold that the candlestick of the kirk would be removed out of its place, a prediction which was verified sooner, perhaps, than he expected. In company with him perished the third and last victim, a Captain Govan, who had laid down his arms at Hamilton, and deserted to Cromwell. Why he was selected to suffer in preference to so many others, no one knew; but it was generally thought that his offence might have been

CHAP.

I.

A.D. 1661.

—

April 11.

June 1.

CHAP. passed over without notice, on account of the utter  
A.D. 1661. insignificance of the man.<sup>1</sup>

— On the first news of the king's restoration, the Scottish ministers had most anxiously deprecated the extension to Scotland of the indulgence to tender consciences promised by him at Breda; in the course of a year they were compelled to solicit for themselves, and to solicit in vain, that indulgence which they had so sternly refused to others.<sup>2</sup> By the 16th act of the session, "the settling and securing of church government, as might be consistent with scripture, monarchy, and peace," had been intrusted to the king: Middleton now assured him that the restoration of episcopacy was the earnest wish of the nation; and a proclamation soon announced the royal intention of gratifying that wish, and at the same time prohibited all meetings of synods and presbyteries. Of the former prelates, Sydserfe alone survived; but he was a man of no estimation with either party; and though his ambition aspired to the archiepiscopal see of St. Andrew's, he was compelled to content himself with the distant bishopric of Orkney. The first dignity in the restored hierarchy was given to one whose elevation filled the ministers with rage and despair—to Sharp, who had been sent to London as their agent for the purpose of preserving the independence of the kirk, and who now returned wearing the archiepiscopal mitre, the lord of his former equals, and the subverter of their spiritual rights. In revenge, they pried into the frailties of his private, and condemned him of perfidy in public, life. The charge of incontinency

<sup>1</sup> Baillie, ii. 455, 457. Kirkton, 109, 110, 111. Wodrow, 57—70, 77; App. 47. Burnet, i. 214.

<sup>2</sup> Baillie, ii. 459. Wodrow, Introd. 21, 22; App. to ditto, 57.



and infanticide may, with probability, be attributed to the malice of his enemies; but the result of his mission, so advantageous to himself, so disastrous to his employers, must throw doubts on his integrity; and few who have read his letter to Middleton of May 28th,<sup>1</sup> will give credit to his assertions that he served the kirk faithfully while there remained a chance of success, and only accepted the archbishopric when he saw that his refusal would leave it open to the ambition of men of violent and dangerous principles. By his advice, Fairfoul was named to the see of Glasgow, Hamilton to that of Galloway, and Leighton to that of Dunblane. The two first never equalled the expectations which they had raised; the third, son of the Dr. Leighton who, under Charles I., suffered as the author of "Zion's Plea against Prelates," was so distinguished by his piety, disinterestedness, and learning, that the enemies of episcopacy could offer no other objection against him than that he was in heart a papist. The four prelates were summoned to the English capital to receive episcopal ordination, "a flower not to be found in a Scottish gardine;" they were consecrated at Westminster by Sheldon, bishop of London, and the event was celebrated with a banquet, the luxury and splendour of which afforded matter of censure to their opponents, and scandalized the simplicity of Leighton. From the English capital they repaired to their own country. At Edinburgh they were received in solemn procession, the parliament invited them by deputation to take their seats in the house, and an act was passed restoring them to "the exercise of the episcopal function, precedence in the church, power of ordination, infliction of censures, and all other acts of church

CHAP.  
I.  
A.D. 1661.

Dec. 15.

1662.  
May 8.

<sup>1</sup> See it in Archæol. Scot. ii. 103.

CHAP. "discipline:" and ordaining that, "whatever should be  
 I.  
 A.D. 1662. "determined by his majesty, with their advice and that  
 — "of other clergymen nominated by him, in the ex-  
 "ternal government and policy of the church, should  
 "be valid and effectual." In a short time the num-  
 ber of prelates was augmented to fourteen, and all  
 ministers who had entered on their livings since the  
 year 1649, were ordered to receive collation from their  
 respective bishops, under the penalty of deprivation.<sup>1</sup>

To gild this bitter pill, the commissioner advised  
 the king to withdraw the English forces from Scotland.  
 This he thought reasonable, and his English coun-  
 sellors, though they still wished to keep their northern  
 neighbours under the yoke, reluctantly acquiesced in  
 the pleasure of their sovereign. The garrisons were  
 recalled, and the fortifications, the badges of Scottish  
 slavery, were demolished. Such, to Scotland, was the  
 immediate result of the restoration; the nation reco-  
 vered its civil, and lost its ecclesiastical independence.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Baillie, ii. 459, 460. Kirkton, 81, 85, 135—138. Miscel.  
 Aul. 184. Wodrow, i. 96—163, 114, 116; App. 52. Clarendon,  
 213. Burnet, i. 223—238. The English bishops would not allow  
 of the Presbyterian ordinations, nor admit that episcopacy, as the  
 plenitude of the sacerdotal character, necessarily included the lower  
 orders, a principle on which Spotiswood, in the reign of James I.,  
 had been consecrated bishop without passing through the pre-  
 liminary orders of deacon and priest. On this account Sharp and  
 Leighton, who had not received episcopal ordination, were compelled  
 to receive these two orders preparatory to that of bishop. But, after  
 their return to Scotland, in conferring orders, they acted on the  
 principle previously adopted at the consecration of Spotiswood.—  
 Burnet, i. 237. Wodrow, i. 102. Kirkton, 137. At the same  
 time, to divert the attention of the more fervent from these changes,  
 they were exhorted to exercise their zeal against papists and witches.  
 All the acts against the former were ordered to be put in execution,  
 and commissioners, to search for the latter, were appointed in almost  
 every parish. Multitudes were executed for this imaginary offence.  
 —Wodrow, 107, 108, 109.

<sup>2</sup> Clarendon, 213—216. Burnet, i. 183. Wodrow, 107. Lister,  
 iii. 132.

II. The reader is aware, that in Ireland a new race of proprietors had arisen, soldiers and adventurers of English birth, who during the late revolutionary period had shared among themselves the lands of the natives, whether royalists or Catholics. On the fall of Richard Cromwell, a council of officers was established in Dublin; these summoned a convention of deputies from the Protestant proprietors; and the convention tendered to Charles the obedience of his ancient kingdom of Ireland. It was not that the members felt any strong attachment to the cause of royalty; they had been among the most violent and enterprising of its adversaries; but their fear of the natives, whom they had trampled in the dust, compelled them to follow the footsteps of the English parliament. To secure the royal protection, they made the king an offer of a considerable sum of money, assured him, though falsely, that the Irish Catholics meditated a general insurrection, and prayed him to summon a Protestant parliament in Ireland, which might confirm the existing proprietors in the undisturbed possession of their estates. The present was graciously accepted; and the penal laws against the Irish Catholics were ordered to be strictly enforced; but Charles was unwilling to call a parliament, because it would necessarily consist of men whose principles, civil and religious, he had been taught to distrust.<sup>1</sup>

The first measure recommended to him by his English advisers, with respect to Ireland, was the re-establishment of episcopacy. For this no legislative enactment was requisite. His return had given to the ancient laws their pristine authority, and by these

CHAP.  
I.  
A.D. 1662.

1660.  
Feb. 7.

<sup>1</sup> Clar. Contin. 57.

CHAP. I. laws no other form of church government was ac-  
 A.D. 1660. knowledged. In virtue, therefore, of his supremacy,  
 — Charles directed the surviving bishops to take possession of their respective dioceses, nominated new prelates to the vacant sees, and authorized them to reclaim all ecclesiastical property which had fallen into the hands of laymen. The Presbyterian ministers petitioned against this measure; and, had the recent settlers been true to their principles, a most formidable opposition would have been raised. But mammon got the better of conscience: they dared not provoke a monarch on whose pleasure they depended for the preservation of their lands; and in a short time the episcopal hierarchy was quietly restored to the enjoyment of its former rights, and the exercise of its former jurisdiction.<sup>1</sup>

To this, a work of easy accomplishment, succeeded a much more difficult attempt,—the settlement of landed property in Ireland. The military, whom it was dangerous to disoblige, and the adventurers, whose pretensions had been sanctioned by Charles I., demanded the royal confirmation of the titles by which they held their estates;<sup>2</sup> and the demand was opposed by a multitude of petitioners claiming restitution or compensation, by officers who served in the

<sup>1</sup> Clar. 105.

<sup>2</sup> Charles I. had given his assent to the first act (17 Car. I.), but the parliament had afterwards, in 1643, passed the doubling ordinance, by which, whoever advanced one-fourth more on his original subscription, received credit for twice the amount of the whole sum actually furnished. The subscriber of one thousand pounds, by adding two hundred and fifty pounds, became creditor to the amount of two thousand five hundred pounds, and was entitled to lands in Ireland of that value. Where the original subscriber refused, any other person might advance the fourth, and receive the whole benefit arising from the advance, which the first had forfeited.—Carte's Ormond, ii. 224. In the subsequent settlement of Ireland all claims of doubling were rejected.

royal army before 1649, and had not yet received the arrears of their pay; by Protestant loyalists, whose property had been confiscated under the commonwealth; by Catholics who had never joined the confederate assembly at Kilkenny, or had faithfully observed the peace concluded with Ormond, or had served under the royal banners in Flanders; by heirs whose estates had been forfeited on account of the misconduct of the last holders, though such holders were but tenants for life; by widows who had been deprived of their jointures; and by creditors, who could no longer recover on bond or mortgage.<sup>1</sup> Humanity, gratitude, and justice called on the king to listen to many of these claims. He sincerely deplored the miserable state of the Irish natives, whom the republicans had swept from the soil of their birth, and "transplanted" on the barren district beyond the Shannon; and he deemed himself bound in honour and conscience to protect the interests of the loyalists who had followed him in his exile abroad, or at his command had left the service of foreign powers to form the royal army on the continent.<sup>2</sup>

From an estimate delivered to the king, it appeared that there still remained at his disposal forfeited lands of the yearly rental of from eighty to one hundred thousand pounds; a fund sufficiently ample, it was contended, to "reprise" or compensate all the Irish really deserving of the royal favour. Under this impression, Charles published his celebrated declaration for the settlement of Ireland. It provided, that no person deriving his title from the adventurers under the parliament, or the soldiers under the commonwealth, should be disturbed in the possession

CHAP.  
I.  
A.D. 1660.

Nov. 28

<sup>1</sup> Clar 60—66.

<sup>2</sup> Id. 112.

CHAP. of his lands, without receiving an equivalent from  
 I.  
 A.D. 1660. the funds for reprisals; that all innocents, whether

— Protestants or Catholics, that is, persons who had never adhered either to the parliament or the confederates, should be restored to their rightful estates; and that of those who claimed under the peace of 1648, such as had accepted locations in Clare and Connaught should be bound by their own acts, compulsory as those acts had been; but the others should recover their former possessions, or receive lands of equal value.

To this arrangement was appended a list of the qualifications of innocence, but so constructed as to exclude from the benefit of that plea the greatest possible number of Catholics. Not only to have openly adhered to the confederates, but even to have corresponded with them, or to have derived advantage from the treaties concluded between them and Ormond, or to have lived quietly at home, if that home was situated within the quarters of the confederates, were to be taken as conclusive evidence of guilt, and an effectual bar to relief.<sup>1</sup>

The subject now came before the Irish parliament. The Commons, who had been returned by the preponderating influence of the soldiers and adventurers, voted that the declaration should be passed into a law; but by the Lords it was contended that such a law would reduce the old families, both Catholic and Protestant, to a state of penury, in order to establish a new and upstart interest in Ireland. By order of the former, a deputation of the house proceeded to London to lay the draft of a bill before the king in council; but the Lords appointed four commissioners to oppose some of its provisions; and the Catholics

<sup>1661.</sup>  
 June 12.

<sup>1</sup> Irish Statutes, ii. 239—348. Carte's Ormond, ii. 216.

seized the opportunity to petition by agents in their own favour.

CHAP.  
I.  
A.D. 1661.

The contending parties were repeatedly heard by Charles himself; and the Irish had reason to expect a favourable result, when they marred their cause by their imprudence.<sup>1</sup> In the ardour of declamation, they not only defended themselves, but assailed others. Why, they asked, were they to be deprived of their estates in favour of rebels and traitors? Because, it was answered, they stood there covered with the blood of one hundred thousand Protestants massacred by them during their rebellion.<sup>2</sup> They indeed denied the charge; they retorted it in the face of their accusers; murder was a crime with respect to which they were more sinned against than sinning. Their only wish was that an inquiry should be instituted; and that the real murderers, whatever were their religion, should be excluded from the benefit of the bill of indemnity. But the patience of Charles (he had hitherto attended the debates with the most edifying assiduity) was exhausted; he longed to withdraw himself from the recriminations of these violent

Sept.

<sup>1</sup> See Ormond's Letter in Carte, ii. 233.

<sup>2</sup> Walsh (Irish Colours Folded, p. 3) asserts that their opponents raised the number to three hundred thousand. Mrs. Macauley (Hist. vi. 62) tells us that no attempt was made by the papists to "disprove the assertion" respecting the massacre. Most assuredly she could never have heard of the several tracts written at the time, and provoked by this charge; such as the Irish Colours Folded, by P. W.; a Collection of some of the Massacres and Murders committed on the Irish since 1641; or Walsh's Reply to a Person of Quality; or to a Person of Quality's Answer; or his Letter to the Bishop of Lincoln, p. 225—230; or a Letter to a member of Parliament, showing the Hardships, Cruelties, &c.; or a Briefe Narrative of Cruelties committed on the Irish. In Ireland's Case briefly Stated, p. 41, an attempt is made to prove that the number of persons murdered by the Protestants exceeded by six times that of those murdered by the Catholics.

CHAP. I.  
A.D. 1661. disputants; and on the discovery of an obnoxious paper, formerly signed by Sir Nicholas Plunkett, one of the agents, ordered the doors of the council to be closed against the deputies of the natives. The heads of the bill were then arranged, returned to Dublin, and ultimately passed into a law by the parliament.<sup>1</sup>

1662.  
May.

1663.  
Feb. 15 to  
Aug. 15.

But to execute this act was found to be a task of considerable difficulty. By improvident grants of lands to the church, the dukes of York, Ormond, and Albemarle, the earls of Orrery, Montrath, Kingston, Massarene, and several others, the fund for reprisals had been almost exhausted; and yet it was from that fund that compensation was to be furnished to the forty-nine officers, to the ensignmen, or those who had served in Flanders, and to the soldiers and adventurers, who might be compelled to yield up their plantations by the Court of Claims. Among this class, indeed, a general alarm was excited; for in the course of six months, during which the commissioners sat, several hundred decrees of innocence had been issued, and three thousand petitions still remained for investigation. To secure themselves, they demanded an explanatory act; the duke of Ormond, now lord-lieutenant, repaired to London, and ten months were spent in useless attempts to reconcile the jarring interests of the different parties.

From the very beginning of these transactions, the actual occupants of the lands had displayed a bold defiance of decency and justice in their efforts to bring

<sup>1</sup> Clar. 106—115. Carte, ii. 245. Memoirs of Orrery, 67—70. The obnoxious paper was the copy of instructions from the supreme council in 1648 to their agent, to offer Ireland to the pope, or any Catholic power that would undertake to defend them against the parliament.—Carte, *ibid*.



the cause to a favourable termination. 1. They had recourse to bribery. A fund of more than twenty thousand pounds was subscribed, and placed in the hands of Sir James Sheen, who hastened to London, and purchased, at different rates, the patronage and good offices of persons supposed to possess influence in the council, or over the mind of the king.<sup>1</sup> 2. To keep up the irritation of the public mind against the Irish Catholics, they had circulated reports of an intended rebellion, forwarded to the council informations respecting imaginary plots, and at length produced a treasonable letter supposed to be written by one clergyman to another, and dropped by the latter, as he made his escape from the officers of justice. Many priests were immediately apprehended; all Catholic shopkeepers and mechanics were banished out of the principal towns: and the houses of the Catholic gentry were searched for the discovery of arms and ammunition. But the two clergymen, the supposed writer and receiver of the letter, boldly came forward and proved the forgery to the entire satisfaction of the council, and the confusion of those who had fabricated the pretended conspiracy.<sup>2</sup>

CHAP.  
I.  
A.D. 1663.

1661.  
Dec. 2.

Dec. 2.

<sup>1</sup> Orrery Letters, 101. Carte, ii. 232.

<sup>2</sup> On this occasion a protestation of allegiance, composed by Richard Bellings, was approved at a private meeting in Dublin, and transmitted to London, where it was signed by the principal of the Irish Catholics in the capital, one bishop, several clergymen, and many peers and gentlemen. By Charles it was graciously received; but certain passages in it were disapproved in Rome, and censured by the university of Louvain. This did not prevent the leading Catholics in Dublin from subscribing their names to a circular letter exhorting the laity to sign the protestation or remonstrance. Ormond, however, ordered the letter to be suppressed; and when other instruments were offered to him, similar in their object, but less offensive to the court of Rome in their language, he rejected them as unsatisfactory. In 1666 a synod of the clergy subscribed a new form, founded on the celebrated articles of the Gallican

CHAP. I. The Irish House of Commons, which was composed  
 A.D. 1661. of persons deeply interested in the result, submitted  
 — to the approbation of the lord-lieutenant a new code  
 of rules to be established in the Court of Claims. By  
 him it was rejected, on the ground that such rules  
 would render the proof of innocence almost impossi-  
 ble; and its authors, in a moment of irritation, moved  
 1663. and carried a bold and dangerous vote, pledging the  
 February. house to defend the Protestants of Ireland against  
 the unjust decisions of the commissioners. The con-  
 sequence was soon apparent. The knowledge of this  
 vote awakened from its slumbers the revolutionary  
 spirit of the settlers, who had formerly borne com-  
 missions in the republican armies. They had won  
 their lands with the sword, why should they not de-  
 fend them with the sword? Associations were formed;  
 plans of attack were arranged; and two plots, having  
 for their object to seize the castle of Dublin, and  
 secure the person of the lord-lieutenant, were defeated  
 by the previous disclosures of some among the con-  
 May 25. spirators. Of these, the greater part merited pardon  
 by the humble confession of their guilt; several  
 suffered the penalty of death.<sup>1</sup>

The duration of this perplexing controversy at last induced the most obstinate to relax from their pre- tensions; and the soldiers, the adventurers, and the grantees of the crown, unanimously consented to aug- ment the fund for reprisals by the surrender of one-

church, but this he also refused to accept.—See Walsh, *History and Vindication*, &c. 97, 694. What was Ormond's real motive? "My aim," he says in a private letter, "was to work a division among the Romish clergy, and I believe I had accomplished it, to the great security of the government and the Protestants, and against the opposition of the pope, and his creatures and nuncios, if I had not been removed."—Carte, ii. App. 101.

<sup>1</sup> Carte, 261, 265, 266, 270. Orrery, *Letters*, 134.

third of their acquisitions. The king by this measure was placed in a situation, not indeed to do justice, but to silence the most importunate or most deserving among the petitioners; and, by an explanatory act, he gave to the forty-nine Protestant officers the security which they sought, and added twenty Catholics to a former list of thirty-four nominees, or persons to be restored to their mansion-houses, and two thousand acres of land. But when compensation had thus been made to a few of the sufferers, what, it may be asked, became of the officers who had followed the royal fortune abroad, or of the three thousand Catholics who had entered their claims of innocence? To all these, the promises which had been made by the act of settlement were broken; the unfortunate claimants were deprived of their rights, and debarred from all hope of future relief. A measure of such sweeping and appalling oppression is perhaps without a parallel in the history of civilized nations. Its injustice could not be denied; and the only apology offered in its behalf was the stern necessity of quieting the fears and jealousies of the Cromwellian settlers, and of establishing on a permanent basis the Protestant ascendancy in Ireland.<sup>1</sup>

Though, to facilitate the execution of the act, it was provided that any doubt on its construction should be interpreted in favour of the Protestant party, yet so many difficulties occurred, that several years elapsed before the settlement was completely accomplished. The following is the general result. The Protestants were previously in possession of about one moiety of all the profitable lands in the island; of the second moiety, which had been forfeited under the common-

CHAP.  
I.  
A.D. 1665.  
—  
August.

<sup>1</sup> Clar. 112, 134. Carte, 310—316. Irish St. vol. iii. 2—137.

CHAP. I. wealth, something less than two-thirds was by the  
A.D. 1665. act confirmed to the Protestants; and of the re-  
— mainder, a portion almost equal in quantity, but  
not in quality, to one-third, was appropriated to the  
Catholics.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> From a valuable MS. paper belonging to Sheffield Grace, Esq., and published by him in his interesting Memoirs of the Family of Grace, it appears that the profitable lands forfeited in Ireland under the commonwealth amounted to seven million seven hundred and eight thousand two hundred and thirty-seven statute acres, leaving undisturbed about eight million five hundred thousand acres belonging to the Protestants, the constant good-affection men of the Irish, the church, and the crown, besides some lands never seized or surveyed.

In 1675, the forfeited lands had been disposed of as follows:—

*Granted to the English.*

	St. Acres.
Adventurers ... ..	787,326
Soldiers ... ..	2,385,915
Forty-nine officers ... ..	450,380
Royal Highness Duke of York ...	169,431
Provisors ... ..	477,873
Duke of Ormond and Col. Butler's lands	257,516
Bishops' augmentations ... ..	31,596
	<hr/>
	4,560,037

*Granted or disposed of to the Irish.*

	St. Acres.
Decrees of innocence ... ..	1,176,520
Provisors ... ..	491,001
King's letters of restitution ... ..	46,398
Nominees in possession ... ..	68,360
Transplantation ... ..	541,530
	<hr/>
	2,323,809

The forty-nine officers are those who claimed arrears for service under the king before 1649. The duke of York received a grant of all the lands held by the regicides who had been attainted. Provisors were persons in whose favour provisoes had been made in the acts. Nominees were the Catholics named by the king to be restored to their mansion-houses and two thousand acres contiguous. Transplantation refers to the Catholics whom Cromwell forced from their own lands, and settled in Connaught.

There remained eight hundred and twenty-four thousand three hundred and ninety-one acres still unappropriated, which were parts of towns, or possessed by English or Irish without title, or, on account of some doubts, had never been set out.—Mem. 37—39.

## CHAPTER II.

MARRIAGE OF THE DUKE OF YORK WITH ANNE HYDE—OF THE KING WITH THE PRINCESS OF PORTUGAL—SALE OF DUNKIRK TO THE FRENCH—DECLARATION OF INDULGENCE TO TENDER CONSCIENCES—DISAPPROVED BY BOTH HOUSES—GREAT NAVAL VICTORY—THE PLAGUE IN LONDON—FIVE-MILE ACT—OBSTINATE ACTIONS AT SEA.

AMONG the immediate consequences of the restoration, nothing appeared to the intelligent observer more extraordinary than the almost instantaneous revolution which it wrought in the moral habits of the people. Under the government of men making profession of godliness, vice had been compelled to wear the exterior garb of virtue; but the moment the restraint was removed, it stalked forth without disguise, and was everywhere received with welcome. The Cavaliers, to celebrate their triumph, abandoned themselves to ebriety and debauchery; and the new loyalists, that they might prove the sincerity of their conversion, strove to excel the Cavaliers in licentiousness. Charles, who had not forgotten his former reception in Scotland, gladly availed himself of the opportunity to indulge his favourite propensities. That affectation of piety and decorum which had marked the palace of the protector Oliver, was soon exchanged for a perpetual round of pleasure and revelry; and the court of the English king, if inferior in splendour, did not yield in refinement and voluptuousness to that of his French

CHAP.  
II.  
A.D. 1660.

---

CHAP. II. contemporary, Louis XIV. Among the females who  
 A.D. 1660. sought to win his attentions (and this, we are told, was  
 — the ambition of several<sup>1</sup>), the first place, both for beauty and influence, must be allotted to Barbara Villiers, daughter of Viscount Grandison, and wife to a gentleman of the name of Palmer.<sup>2</sup> On the very day of the king's arrival in the capital she established her dominion over his heart, and contrived to retain it for years, in defiance of the inconstancy of his disposition and the intrigues of her rivals. With her Charles generally spent several hours of the day; and, even when the council had assembled to deliberate in his presence, the truant monarch occasionally preferred to while away his time in the bewitching company and conversation of his mistress.<sup>3</sup>

James and Henry, the dukes of York and Gloucester, religiously copied the example set by their sovereign and elder brother. But before the lapse of six months, Henry was borne to the grave;<sup>4</sup> and soon afterwards it began to be whispered at court that James was married to a woman of far inferior rank, Anne, the daughter of the chancellor Hyde. The duke had become acquainted with her at the court of his sister, the princess of Orange, to whom she was maid of honour. Anne possessed few pretensions to beauty; but wit and manner supplied the place of personal charms;<sup>5</sup> she attracted the notice of the young

1660.  
Sept. 13.

<sup>1</sup> Reresby, 7.

<sup>2</sup> Roger Palmer was son of Sir James Palmer, chancellor of the garter, by Catherine, eldest daughter of Sir William Herbert, afterwards earl of Powis. Roger Palmer was created by Charles II. earl of Castlemaine and Baron Limerick. He died in 1705.

<sup>3</sup> "He delighted in a bewitching kind of pleasure called *sauntering*."—Sheffield, ii. 78.

<sup>4</sup> The king mourned in purple.—Pep. i. 139.

<sup>5</sup> *La duchesse de York est fort laide; la bouche extraordinaire.*

prince, and had the address to draw from her lover a promise, and afterwards a private contract of marriage. From the Hague, she followed the royal family to England; and in a few months her situation induced James to marry her clandestinely, according to the rite of the church of England,<sup>1</sup> and to reveal the important secret to the king, whose objections (for he heard it with pain) were soon subdued by the passionate importunity of his brother. To most fathers this alliance would have proved a subject of joy; but Hyde, with expressions of anger, the extravagance of which might have provoked a doubt of their sincerity, affected to deplore the disgrace of the royal family, and advised Charles, after the precedents of former reigns, to send the presumptuous female to the Tower. Unable to persuade the king, who perhaps laughed at his officiousness in secret, he confined, in virtue of his parental authority, the undutiful daughter to a room in his own house; while, by the connivance of one of the family, probably the mother, James had free access to the cell of the captive, and sought by his assiduity to console her for the displeasure, whether it were real or pretended, of her father. Neither had the father much reason to complain. The king made him a present of twenty thousand pounds, and raised him, by the title of Baron Hyde of Hindon, to the peerage.<sup>2</sup>

CHAP.  
II.  
A.D. 1659.  
—  
Nov. 24.

1660.  
Sept. 3.

Nov. 3.

The choice of James was severely condemned by his mother, by his eldest sister, and by the political enemies of the chancellor. The princess of Orange,

ment fendue, et les yeux fort eraillez, mais très courtoise.—Journal de Monconis, p. 22, Lyons, 1666. Hamilton says, that she had l'air grand, la taille assez belle, et beaucoup d'esprit.—Mem. de Grammont, i. 149, edition de Cazin. Pepys, that she was a plain woman, like her mother (i. 188).

<sup>1</sup> Kennet's Register, from the Council book, 381.

<sup>2</sup> Clarendon, 31, 32.

CHAP. II. who had recently arrived in England, declared to the  
 A.D. 1660. king that she would never yield the precedence to a  
 — woman who had stood as a servant behind her chair.  
 Sept. 23. The queen-mother indulged in terms of the bitterest  
 reproach; and hastened her promised visit to her  
 children, that she might prevent so foul a disgrace to  
 the royal houses of England and France.<sup>1</sup> Charles  
 Berkeley, whether he was influenced by enmity to  
 Hyde, or by the hope of making his fortune, came to  
 their aid, affirming with oaths that Anne had formerly  
 been his mistress, and bringing forward the earl of  
 Arran, Jermyn, Talbot, and Killigrew, as witnesses of  
 her loose and wanton behaviour. Lastly, divines and  
 lawyers were produced, grave and learned casuists, who  
 maintained, in presence of the duke, that no private  
 contract of marriage on his part could be valid with-  
 out the previous consent of the sovereign. The reso-  
 lution of James was shaken; he interrupted his visits  
 to Worcester House, and assured his mother and  
 sister that he had ceased to look upon Anne as his  
 lawful wife.

Oct. 22. In a few weeks she was delivered of a son. While  
 she lay in the throes of childbirth, her confessor,  
 Dr. Morley, bishop elect of Worcester,<sup>2</sup> standing by the

<sup>1</sup> She previously intended to come, that she might meet all her children together, and look after her dower.—Clar. 32—36. It would appear, that the lands settled on her as her dower had been in a great measure shared among persons who had a hand in her husband's death. On inquiry, the present holders were found to be Okey, Walton, Seroop, Norton, Pride, Whalley, Edwards, and Tichborne, the king's judges; Denby, serjeant-at-arms to the court; Lambert and Blackwell.—Jour. of Com. 1660, June 23.

<sup>2</sup> Morley tells us that she was accustomed to receive the sacrament every month, and then proceeds thus: "Always the day before she received, she made a voluntary confession of what she thought she had offended God in, either by omission or commission, professing her sorrow for it, and promising amendment in it; and then, kneeling down, she desired and received absolution in the



bedside, adjured her, in the name of the living God, to speak the truth before the noble ladies, who attended by order from the king. To his questions she replied that the duke was the father of her child, that they had been contracted to each other before witnesses, and that she had always been faithful to his bed.

For some days James had continued silent and melancholy. The birth of the child, and the assertions of the mother, revived his affection; on examination, Berkeley confessed that his charges against her were calumnies, and the duke, ashamed of his credulity, resolved to do her justice. He visited her at her father's house, sent for her accusers, and introduced them to her by the title of duchess of York. They knelt, she gave them her hand to kiss, and, acting up to the instructions of her husband, never afterwards betrayed any hostility against them. One of her enemies, the princess of Orange, died; and the queen-mother, at the request of the French minister Mazarin, who wished to conciliate the chancellor, desisted from her opposition. Anne was received by her at court with a smiling countenance, and the appellation of daughter; and the new duchess supported her rank with as much ease and dignity as if she had never moved in an inferior situation.<sup>1</sup>

This marriage was founded in affection; two others followed, the origin of which is to be sought in the policy of courts. The treaty which Mazarin concluded with Cromwell had taught the French monarch to value the aid of that power by which he had been

"form and words prescribed by our church."—Morley, apud Kennet, Register, 385.

<sup>1</sup> See Clarendon's very minute and ridiculous account of the whole transaction, 28—40. Pepys, i. 144, 150, 162, 164, 165. Mem. de Gram. i. 233—241.

CHAP.  
II.  
A.D. 1660.

Dec. 24.

1661.  
Jan. 1.

CHAP. II. enabled to conclude with honour and profit the long  
 A.D. 1661. and expensive war with Spain. Still Spain was a  
 — formidable rival : the existing peace was considered by  
 the two cabinets as only a breathing-time preparatory  
 to the renewal of hostilities ; and Louis, to secure the  
 services of England under the restored dynasty, re-  
 solved to cultivate the friendship of the prince whom,  
 to gratify Cromwell, he had formerly excluded from  
 his dominions. This became, during the whole reign  
 of Charles, one great object of French policy ; and the  
 first step taken was the proposal, through the queen-  
 mother, of a marriage between Henrietta, the youngest  
 sister of Charles, and Philip, the only brother of Louis.  
 To Henrietta it opened a brilliant and seducing pro-  
 spect ; by the English king it was received with joy  
 and gratitude ; and the ceremony was performed with  
 becoming magnificence, soon after the return of the  
 princess with her mother to France.<sup>1</sup>

March 31.

Charles himself, in 1659, with the hope of repairing  
 by the assistance of France the loss which his interests  
 had suffered from the defeat of Sir George Booth, had  
 made the offer of his hand to the niece of the Cardinal  
 Mazarin ; but that minister, aware of the weakness of  
 the royal party in England, modestly declined the  
 honour, as far above the pretensions and the wishes of  
 his family. In a few weeks the tide of popular feeling  
 turned in favour of royalty, and Mazarin sought to  
 renew the negotiation ; but the king's ardour for the  
 lady had already cooled ; to recover his crown, he  
 wanted not the assistance of her uncle ; and he was

<sup>1</sup> These reasons are assigned by Louis himself, as his motive for proposing the marriage.—ŒUV. i. 61. Charles, by the marriage-contract, bound himself to give to his sister forty thousand jacobuses, by way of portion, and twenty thousand as a present.—Dumont, vi. part ii. p. 354.

unwilling to bind himself in the trammels of wedlock.<sup>1</sup> CHAP.  
 After his return, the more sober among his counsellors A.D. 1661.  
 saw with pain the scandal which he gave by his amours;  
 they repeatedly and earnestly advised him to marry;  
 and at last the example of his brother induced him to  
 think seriously on the subject. But against the royal  
 and princely families in the north of Europe, he had,  
 from some cause or other, contracted an invincible  
 antipathy; and to marry a Catholic princess from the  
 south was likely to shock the religious prepossessions  
 of the majority of his subjects. From this state of  
 indecision he was drawn by a tempting proposal, made  
 through the Portuguese ambassador, at the secret insti-  
 gation of the French court. During the war between  
 France and Spain, Portugal, with the aid of the for-  
 mer, had preserved its independence; but, by the  
 treaty of the Pyrenees, Louis had bound himself to  
 leave the house of Braganza and its rebellious adhe-  
 rents to their fate. It was not, however, his intention  
 that Portugal should be again incorporated with Spain;  
 and, aware that the king, Alphonso, a weak prince,  
 under the guardianship of his mother, could oppose no  
 effectual resistance to his more powerful foe, he sug-  
 gested to the court of Lisbon a marriage between the  
 infanta Catarina, the king's sister, and Charles, king  
 of England. It would induce the English monarch  
 to support the pretensions of his wife's family, and  
 would open a new channel through which France  
 might forward assistance to Portugal without any  
 manifest violation of its friendly relations with Spain.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> James, *Memoirs*, i. 395.

<sup>2</sup> Le premier de soutenir les Portugais que je voyois en danger de succomber bientôt sans cela; le second de me donner plus de moyen de les assister moi-même, si je le jugeois nécessaire, nonobstant le traité des Pyrénées, qui me le defendoit.—Louis, *Œuvres*. i. 62. It

CHAP. II. The advice was adopted; and Francisco de Mello, the  
 A.D. 1661. ambassador in London, offered with the princess a  
 — dower of five hundred thousand pounds, the possession  
 of Tangier on the coast of Africa, and of Bombay in  
 the East Indies, and a free trade to Portugal and the  
 Portuguese colonies. Charles consulted Hyde, Or-  
 mond, Southampton, and Nicholas; their advice con-  
 1660. curred with the royal inclination; and De Mello was  
 November. given to understand that the proposal would be ac-  
 cepted.<sup>1</sup>

The treaty with this minister had not escaped the notice of Vatteville, the Spanish ambassador, who, the moment he discovered its real object, represented to the king that Spain would never forego her claim to the crown of Portugal; that the Donna Catarina was known to be incapable of bearing children; and that a marriage with her would infallibly lead him into a war, and deprive his subjects of the Spanish trade; but that, if he chose to take one of the two princesses of Parma, Philip would give with either the dower of a daughter of Spain. Charles began to waver; he listened to the suggestions of the earl of Bristol, the enemy of the Portuguese match; and that nobleman proceeded by his order on a secret mission to the city

is amusing to observe how the royal casuist proceeds to justify this underhand dealing, the sending, under false names, of forces to the aid of a power which he had bound himself by treaty entirely to desert. He tells us that the experience of centuries had taught the French and Spanish courts to know the real import of the words employed in the treaties between them; that the expressions "perpetual peace" and "sincere amity," &c., were used with as little meaning as compliments in ordinary conversation; and that neither party expected anything more from the other than to abstain from manifest and public violations of the articles, while each remained at liberty to inflict on his rival, by clandestine and circuitous means, every injury in his power. This necessarily followed from the great principle of self-preservation.—Ibid. 63—65.

<sup>1</sup> Clarendon, 78—81.

of Parma. There he saw the two princesses on their way to church, and nothing more was necessary to hasten his return. One was so plain, the other so corpulent, that he dared not recommend either to the royal choice.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
II.  
A.D. 1660.

In the meantime Charles had been recalled to his first intention by the remonstrances of his advisers and the arguments of the French king. Bastide, secretary to the late ambassador Bordeaux, arrived in England with a commission to purchase lead for the royal buildings in France; but, in a private conference with Hyde, he informed that minister that his real object was to propose the means of establishing a private communication between the two kings, to be conducted by the chancellor on one part, and Fouquet on the other, without the knowledge of their colleagues in the cabinet, or of the ordinary ambassadors at either court. Charles eagerly accepted the proposal; and the correspondence was maintained during five months, till the disgrace of Fouquet. During that time Louis continually inculcated the advantages of the Portuguese match, offered Charles a considerable sum of money to purchase votes in the parliament, consented to lend him fifty thousand pounds whenever he might want it, and engaged to furnish two millions of livres, in the event of a war between England and Spain.<sup>2</sup> Thus was laid the foundation of that

1661.  
March.

August 26.

<sup>1</sup> Clarendon, 86—89. Clarendon Pap. Supplem. ii. viii.

<sup>2</sup> Clarendon, 90. Œuvres de Louis XIV. i. 67, and the correspondence itself in the supplement to the third volume of the Clarendon Papers, i.—xv. Charles acquainted no one but his brother James with the secret. Two others were employed in it; Bastide, as secretary to Fouquet, and Lord Cornbury, Clarendon's eldest son, as secretary to his father. Hyde had the prudence or the honesty to refuse an offer of ten thousand pounds from Louis, though both Charles and James laughed at his simplicity, but he afterwards ac-

CHAP. clandestine and confidential correspondence between  
 II. Charles and Louis, which in a short time rendered  
 A.D. 1661. — the king of England the pensionary, and therefore, in  
 a great measure, the dependant of his good brother,  
 the king of France.

- March 28. But Vatteville did not long rely on the success of  
 Bristol's mission. The representative of the Catholic  
 king undertook to dissuade Charles from marriage with  
 a Catholic princess; he proposed to him a daughter of  
 the king of Denmark, or of the elector of Saxony, or  
 May 3. of the prince of Orange, and engaged that his master  
 should give with any of them the same portion which  
 had been offered with a princess of Parma. At the  
 same time he sought to form a party in the parliament  
 and the city. He opened his table to the discontented,  
 distributed money to the needy, and scattered in the  
 streets printed copies of his memorials against a Catho-  
 lic, and of his offers in favour of a Protestant, match.  
 But these efforts proved fruitless. The amount of the  
 dower, the settlements in the Mediterranean and the  
 East Indies, and the concession of an unrestricted trade  
 to Portugal and its dependencies, presented advantages  
 May 8. certain and present; while the dangers predicted on  
 the score of the infanta's religion were at the best dis-  
 May 2. tant and uncertain. A full council of eight-and-twenty  
 members had, without a dissentient voice advised the  
 king to conclude the marriage; the two houses pre-  
 sented to him addresses of approbation; the treaty  
 June. was signed; and Montague, now earl of Sandwich,  
 received the command of a fleet, with instructions to  
 cruise in the Mediterranean, and at the appointed

cepted a present of all the books which had been printed at the royal  
 press in the Louvre.—Clar. 92; Pap. iii. Supplem. i. xi. xiv.

time to bring the Portuguese princess to Eng- CHAP.  
land.<sup>1</sup> II.  
A.D. 1661.

Vatteville bore the disappointment with impatience, and whether he thought to mortify the French court for its interference, or only to gratify the pride of his countrymen, he announced his intention of reviving the ancient quarrel for precedence between the crowns of France and Spain. On the first occasion, the entry of Carara, the Venetian ambassador, Charles prevailed both on Vatteville and on d'Estrades, the representative of Louis, to take no part in the ceremony; but the latter was reproved for his condescension by his court; each prepared to assert his claim on the next opportunity, the expected entry of Brahé, the Swedish ambassador; and the king, unable to restrain these champions of vanity, forbade his subjects by proclamation to interfere in the contest. D'Estrades summoned every Frenchman in London, on his allegiance, to support the honour of his sovereign; he sent for reinforcements to Boulogne, of which he was governor, and introduced into his house in disguise several of the officers and troops belonging to that garrison. Vatteville, who could not muster so formidable a force,<sup>2</sup> sought to compensate by art for inferiority of number, ordering the traces of his carriage to be made of chains of iron covered with leather, and allotting to each of his followers his particular station and employment. The Tower wharf was selected for the field of battle; Sept. 30. at noon arrived the carriage of the Spanish ambas-

<sup>1</sup> Clarendon, 89; Papers, iii. Sup. ii. v. vi. vii. L. Journ. xi. 241, 244, 252. Kennet, Reg. 431.

<sup>2</sup> D'Estrades assured his master that the Spaniards were aided by several thousand Englishmen. He can only mean that they encouraged the Spaniards by their shouts.

CHAP. II. sador with about forty servants in liveries ; and about  
 A.D. 1661. two that of the French ambassador, attended by one  
 — hundred persons on foot, and about forty on horseback, armed with pistols, or musketoons and carbines. At three Brahé landed at the stairs ; and the moment he departed in one of the royal carriages, those of the two ambassadors started for the place of honour. The opposite parties charged each other ; the shouts of the crowd animated the combatants ; blood began to flow, and more than fifty persons were killed or wounded in this extraordinary fray. The victory remained with the Spaniards. The French coachman fell from his seat ; the horses were disabled, and the traces cut. Vatteville's carriage instantly took the place of honour ; its attendants, though repeatedly charged, gallantly repulsed the assailants ; and the conquerors, as they passed through the streets, were loudly cheered by the populace and the soldiery.<sup>1</sup> Louis received the news with feelings of grief and indignation ; not that he lamented the fate of those whose lives had been so wantonly sacrificed, but that he deemed his reputation lowered in the opinion of other powers, because the representative of a rival crown had gained the superiority in a senseless and disgraceful quarrel. Without a moment's hesitation he sent Fuensaldagna, the Spanish minister, out of his dominions, demanded ample reparation from the court of Madrid, and refused to listen to any accommodation till Philip had expressed his sorrow at so untoward an occurrence, recalled his pugnacious representative from London, and promised

<sup>1</sup> "It is strange to see how all the city did rejoice. And, indeed, 'we do all naturally love the Spanish, and hate the French.'"—Pepys, i. 223. I have taken the particulars of this fray from Evelyn's official account, ii. 458. Pepys, i. 2—214. Clarendon Papers, iii. ; Suppl. xvii. Rugge's MS. 297, and Louis XIV. i. 118.



that his ambassadors should always absent themselves from ceremonies in which there might be danger of their coming into competition with those of the French crown.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
II.  
A.D. 1661.

In the meanwhile, the earl of Sandwich with the English fleet, having swept the Mediterranean of the Turkish corsairs, and made a bold but fruitless attempt on the shipping behind the mole at Algiers, received from the Portuguese possession of Tangier, part of the marriage portion of the infanta. The return of spring summoned him to Lisbon, and Donna Catarina, bidding adieu to her relatives and native land, embarked on board his ship, the destined bride of the English monarch.<sup>2</sup>

July 31.

1662.  
Jan. 30.

April 13.

To Mrs. Palmer the approaching marriage was a subject of anxiety and distrust. Charles, that he might pacify the temper of his imperious mistress, redoubled his attentions. He generally dined and supped at her house; he made to her the most costly presents: he created her husband, against his will, earl of Castlemaine in Ireland, with remainder to the issue male of the body of his wife, the Lady Barbara; and solemnly promised that, instead of banishing her from court, he would appoint her lady of the bed-chamber to the new queen.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Œuvres de Louis, i. 125, 131. Dumont, vi. part. ii. p. 403, 404. Para se abstengan y no concurren con les embaxadores y ministros de V. Majestad en todas las funciones y ceremonias publicas.—Dumont, *ibid.* This voluntary absence was explained by Louis to be an acknowledgment of his superior rank; and it is amusing to observe how vain he was of it. Je ne scais, si depuis le commencement de la monarchie il s'est rien passé de plus glorieux pour elle . . . c'est une espèce d'hommage, qui ne laisse plus doubter à nos ennemis même, que notre couronne ne soit la première de toute la chrétienté. . . . C'étoit un malheur que ce tumulte de Londres; ce seroit maintenant un malheur qu'il ne fut pas arrivé (i. 132, 136).

<sup>2</sup> Kennet's Register, 512—617, 652. Clarendon, 165.

<sup>3</sup> Pepys, i. 235, 245, 264, 647.

CHAP. II. At length, after a long and stormy voyage, the fleet  
 A.D. 1662. with the Portuguese princess reached Spithead; but  
 — Charles was detained in London at the time, by the  
 May 13. real or pretended necessity of bringing the business  
 of the session to a close. In the interval Catherine  
 was solicited to waive her claim of having the marriage  
 celebrated after the Catholic rite; but she held  
 the king to his engagement; and on his arrival at  
 Portsmouth they were married in a private room by  
 May 20. her almoner, Stuart d'Aubigny, in the presence of  
 Philip, afterward Cardinal, Howard, and of five other  
 witnesses pledged to profound secrecy.<sup>1</sup> Thence the  
 king led her to the hall, across which a rail had  
 been erected to divide the royal party from the company;  
 and, the bishop of London having pronounced them  
 married in the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy  
 Ghost, the ribbons, which the bride wore in profusion,  
 were cut from her dress, and distributed in small  
 portions among the spectators.<sup>2</sup> In point of personal  
 charms and fashionable acquirements the new queen  
 could not enter into competition with her dazzling  
 and formidable rival: yet she was not without claims  
 to beauty; her good nature and good sense gave a  
 charm to her conversation, and the more she was  
 known, the more she displayed the amiable qualities  
 of her heart. The king was gratified beyond his  
 expectations; he thought himself fortunate in the  
 acquisition of such a wife; and so little did he know  
 of his own heart, that he boasted to his friends of  
 the pattern of

<sup>1</sup> From the MS. *Relazione del Abbate Agretti*, and the faculty for the performance of the marriage granted to Aubigny by Ellice, dean of the Catholic clergy, dated April 23.

<sup>2</sup> Lady Fanshawe's *Memoirs*, 144.

conjugal fidelity which he should thenceforth set to his court.<sup>1</sup> The royal pair came by easy journeys to Hampton Court, and lived for a few days in the most edifying harmony. But it was not the intention of Charles to estrange himself from the company of Castlemaine, nor did she allow him to forget the imprudent promise which had been wrung from him by her tears. In fact, he began to look upon her as having now additional claims on him for protection; for since the queen's arrival she had borne him a son, and her husband had withdrawn to the continent, with the view of separating himself from her for ever. One day, therefore, taking "the lady" (such was her usual designation) by the hand, he presented her to the queen in the midst of a brilliant court. Catherine was able to subdue her feelings for the moment. She gave to her rival a most gracious reception; but in a few minutes her eyes were suffused with tears; the blood gushed from her nostrils, and she was conveyed in a fit to her apartment.<sup>2</sup> By the king, this incident was considered a most heinous offence. He declared that he would never submit to the whims of his wife: he had been the cause of Castlemaine's disgrace; he

CHAP.  
II.  
A.D. 1662.  
—

<sup>1</sup> If Hume talk of "the homely person" of Catherine, others, who knew her better, describe her differently.—Clarendon, *Contin.* 167. *Clar. Pap.* iii.; *Supplem.* xx. Pepys, ii. 268, 271, 272. Charles himself, in a letter to the chancellor, speaks of her thus: "Her face is not so exact as to be called a beauty, though her eyes are excellent good, and not anything on her face that in the least degree can shoque one. On the contrary, she has as much agreeableness in her looks altogether as ever I saw; and, if I have any skill in physiognomy, which I think I have, she must be as good a woman as ever was born. Her conversation, as much as I can perceive, is very good; for she has wit enough, and a most agreeable voice. You would much wonder to see how well we are acquainted already. In a word, I think myself very happy."—Macpherson Papers, i. 22, note.

<sup>2</sup> Clarendon, 168.

CHAP. was bound in honour to make her reparation. His  
 II. dissolute companions applauded his firmness; while  
 A.D. 1662. — Ormond and Clarendon ventured to remonstrate  
 against the indecency and cruelty of the appointment.  
 To their surprise, he replied, that whosoever should  
 oppose his design, would become the object of his  
 everlasting displeasure, and that they, if they wished  
 to please him, should employ their influence to over-  
 come the obstinacy of the queen.<sup>1</sup> Clarendon had the  
 meanness to undertake an office which he abhorred;  
 but Catherine refused to listen to his advice; and  
 Charles in revenge subjected her to the most painful  
 mortifications. The Portuguese ambassador was in-  
 sulted on her account; her countrywomen were sent  
 back to Portugal; Castlemaine was daily introduced  
 into her apartment; where the mistress received the  
 attentions of the king and the courtiers, while the  
 queen sat alone, silent and unnoticed. For several  
 weeks she maintained the unequal contest: at last  
 her resolution failed; she consented to accept the  
 services of her rival, and even treated her with kind-  
 ness in private as well as public. But it was now  
 too late: Charles applauded himself for his victory  
 over what he called her wayward and wilful temper;  
 and those who had before admired her constancy,  
 pronounced her a weak and mutable woman.<sup>2</sup> The  
 empire of Castlemaine was established. She waited,  
 indeed (for such was the will of the king), on  
 Catherine: to the scandal of all good Protestants,  
 she even attended her to mass; but, on other occa-  
 sions, the mistress proved the centre of attraction:  
 the king was always to be found at her suppers and  
 entertainments; officers were placed and displaced

<sup>1</sup> See the letter of Charles, Note (A).

<sup>2</sup> Clar. 169—180.

at her suggestion; and she at last obtained the higher rank of duchess of Cleveland for herself, with remainder to Charles and George Fitzroy, her children by the king. Catherine, on the contrary, abstained from all political intrigue; and, notwithstanding the prejudice against her religion, by her continual study to please her husband, the meekness with which she bore her wrongs, and the dignity and grace with which she performed the duties of her station, grew daily in the esteem of the public. Charles himself condemned, though he did not reform, his conduct; and subsequently, on occasion of her sickness, displayed all the anxiety and grief of the most affectionate husband. The physicians had despaired of her life; and when she prayed him to allow her body to be interred with the remains of her fathers, and to protect her native country from the tyranny of Spain, he fell on his knees, and bathed her hands with his tears. Yet from this affecting scene he repaired immediately to the house of Castlemaine, and sought amusement in the company of a new mistress, La Belle Stewart, the daughter of Walter, son of Lord Blantyre.<sup>1</sup> Catherine, however, recovered, and the king pursued his wonted course of dissipation and gallantry.

CHAP.  
II.  
A.D. 1662.

1663.  
Oct. 9.

With the infanta, Charles had received in money and merchandise a portion of three hundred and fifty thousand pounds. This sum afforded a temporary relief to the needy monarch; but the expenses of the armament under Lord Inchiquin for the protec-

<sup>1</sup> Lettres du comte de Comminges, Pepys, v.; App. 455, 456. He was sure to find Stewart at Castlemaine's, for "il menaça la dame, ou il soupe tous les soirs, de ne mettre jamais le pied chez elle, si la demoiselle n'y étoit" (455). See also the Diary of Pepys himself, ii. 41, 50, 61, 103, 105, 106, 116, 143, 355.

- CHAP. II. tion of Portugal, and of the expedition destined to  
 A.D. 1663. take possession of Bombay, soon involved him in  
 — fresh pecuniary embarrassments. The chancellor, to  
 whose negligence he imputed the insufficient provision made for him by the convention parliament, saw that, to prop up his declining credit, it was necessary to discover some new resource; and he probably suggested, undoubtedly advised, the sale of Dunkirk
- May 19. to the French king. Though a few weeks only had elapsed since he had described in strong colours the advantages which the nation derived from the possession of that seaport, Charles assented to the proposal; Bellings was secretly despatched to Paris; and d'Estrades, who had been appointed ambassador to Holland, came to England, at the invitation of the king, but under pretence of private business, in his way to the Hague. Clarendon's first attempt was to shift the responsibility of the measure from himself to the council; and with that view Charles mentioned it at his house before the duke, the treasurer, the lord-general, and the earl of Sandwich, who, though they acknowledged that the charge of the place, amounting to the annual sum of one hundred and thirty thousand pounds, exceeded its real value, were still unwilling to part with it, unless at a price which might justify the sale in the eyes of the public. The negotiation now began. Clarendon asked twelve, d'Estrades offered two millions of livres; but the first descended by degrees to seven, the other rose to four, and the bargain was at last concluded for five millions. Here,
- August 7. however, a new difficulty arose. Charles required to be paid in ready money; Louis would only advance two millions at once, and pay the remaining three by instalment, in the course of two years. Both
- Sept. 11.

were inflexible ; and d'Estrades had sent his servants on board a vessel preparatory to his departure, when an expedient was proposed and accepted, that Louis should give bills for the remainder, payable at different dates, which Charles might sell at the highest price that he could procure. The treaty was now signed ; and the conditions on both sides were faithfully executed.<sup>1</sup> But the French king proved too adroit for his English brother. A banker from Paris arrived in London ; and, after a short negotiation, discounted the bills at something more than sixteen per cent. But the man was in reality a secret agent of the French cabinet ; the money which he paid was supplied by the French treasury ; and Louis, by this artifice, was enabled to buy up his own securities at a profit of five hundred thousand livres.<sup>2</sup>

CHAP.  
II.  
A.D. 1663.  
—  
Sept. 15.  
Oct. 17.

Though Charles and his minister congratulated themselves on their success, they afterwards looked back on it with feelings of regret. The sale of Dunkirk had no small influence on the subsequent fortune of each. The possession of it had flattered the national

<sup>1</sup> Clarendon, in the Continuation of his own life, has given a detailed account of this transaction, written evidently for the purpose of exculpating himself ; but his narrative is perpetually belied by the original documents in the *Lettres d'Estrades*, 279, 282, 283, 421, &c. : in the supplement to the third volume of the *Clarendon Papers*, xxi.—xxv. ; in *Combe's Sale of Dunkirk*, London, 1728 ; and *Pepys*, ii. 369.

<sup>2</sup> Je gagnai sur ce marché cinq cent mille livres, sans que les Anglois s'en apperçussent . . . le banquier étoit un homme interposé par moi, qui faisant le paiement de mes propres deniers, ne profitoit point de la remise.—*Œuvres de Louis XIV.* i. 176. Backwell was sent to Paris to receive the sum of two million five hundred thousand livres, which leaves a profit to Louis of five hundred thousand livres, as he states himself. But, if we may believe the warrant to Backwell (*Lister*, iii. 511), besides that sum to be paid in Paris, by Hennin, the pretended banker, the sum of two hundred and fifty-four thousand livres had already been “secured” in England, which would reduce the discount to eight per cent.

CHAP. II.  
A.D. 1663. — pride; it was a compensation for the loss of Calais; it might equally open a way into the territory of England's most ancient and natural enemy. But Charles had sold it, not, it was said, to defray the expenses of the state, but to satisfy the rapacity of his mistresses, and to indulge in his wonted extravagance; and Clarendon had advised the sale, not through any wish to gratify his sovereign, but in consequence of an enormous bribe from the king of France. This charge was undoubtedly false; but the magnificent pile which he built for the residence of his family was taken as a proof of his guilt, and the name of Dunkirk House, which it soon obtained, served to confirm and perpetuate the belief of the people.<sup>1</sup> The public discontent began to be openly oppressed; Charles saw a formidable party growing up against him; and Clarendon, after a protracted struggle, submitted to his fate, and fled to the continent.<sup>2</sup>

1662.

We may now proceed to an important and perplexing question, on which it was impossible for the king to decide, without giving offence to a considerable portion of his subjects—the indulgence to tender consciences, which he had promised in the declaration from Breda. Two years had been suffered to elapse, and yet he had done nothing to fulfil, but much that seemed to violate, his word. The advocates of intolerance maintained that he was no longer bound by the declaration. To whom, they asked, had it been made? To the parliament then sitting? But that parliament had released him from all responsibility, by neglecting to remind him of the subject. To the

<sup>1</sup> Pepys, ii 250.

<sup>2</sup> Bellings, who, throughout the negotiation, was interpreter between Clarendon and d'Estrades, was, on its conclusion, sent to Rome to solicit the purple for Aubigny.—D'Estrades, 359.



people at large? But the people had transferred their rights to their representatives in the succeeding parliament, and those representatives had set the question at rest by enactments incompatible with such indulgence.<sup>1</sup> This sophistry, however, did not satisfy the royal mind. Charles thought himself bound in honour to redeem his pledge; and, anxious as he was to replace the church on its former foundation, he still deprecated every measure which savoured of hardship or persecution against those who dissented from it. At the request of the Presbyterians, whose deputies were introduced to him by the lord-general, he promised to suspend the execution of the Act of Uniformity for three months, provided they would consent to read the Book of Common Prayer during that period. Clarendon, though he disapproved of the promise, thought that since it had been made, it ought also to be observed; but the bishops and their friends pronounced it dangerous, the judges illegal; and all agreed that, in defiance of the royal prohibition, the patrons of benefices held by nonconformists would present on the appointed day, and that their presentations would be allowed by the courts of law. With feelings of shame the king recalled his word; the act came into force on the 24th of August, and two thousand ministers (the number is perhaps exaggerated) resigned, or were deprived. The whole kingdom resounded with apologies on the one side, and complaints on the other. It was said that those who would not comply with the regulations, ought not to partake of the good things of the church; that the nonconformists were previously intruders; and that they suffered no more than they originally inflicted.

CHAP.  
II.  
A.D. 1662.

August 24

<sup>1</sup> Kennet's Reg. 650. Address of Commons, Journals, Feb. 27, 1663.

CHAP. II. It was replied, that the established clergy were ejected  
 A.D. 1662. during the rage of civil war, the ministers in a season  
 — of domestic tranquillity; the former incumbents, by  
 their hostility, provoked the resentment of the ruling  
 power; the present by their services in the restora-  
 tion deserved its gratitude; the crime of the first was  
 their political conduct; of the latter, adhesion to the  
 dictates of conscience: then a pittance, at least one-  
 fifth of the income, was reserved for the family of the  
 sufferer; now he was turned adrift, with no other  
 resource but the casual benevolence of the pious and  
 the humane.<sup>1</sup>

The king, though he had been compelled to yield,  
 yet held himself bound by his promise; and this feel-  
 ing was kept alive by repeated petitions from the  
 Presbyterians, the Independents, and the Roman  
 Catholics, who all claimed the benefit of the decla-  
 ration from Breda.<sup>2</sup> The question was again referred  
 to the council; the leading members argued against  
 indulgence; Robartes, lord privy seal, and Bennet, the  
 new secretary of state, in its favour. The sovereign,  
 they contended, possessed, in virtue of his supremacy,  
 the right of suspending penal laws in matters of reli-  
 gion; James and Charles had raised a yearly revenue  
 by the sale of protections; and the king might law-  
 fully exercise a power which had never been disputed  
 in his father or grandfather. The suggestion was ap-  
 proved; and notice of the royal intention was given  
 in the declaration which he published for the purpose

<sup>1</sup> Clarendon, 156—160. Kennet, 747.

<sup>2</sup> Both Independents and Presbyterians were true to their principles. The Independents sought to obtain indulgence for all, Catholics as well as others; the Presbyterians could not in conscience concur in favour of the Catholics, though they would not oppose them. The king might do as he pleased, but they would not advise him, or encourage him to do it.—Baxter's Life, part ii. p. 429.

of refuting "the four scandals cast on the govern-  
 "ment." 1. The republicans feared, and the discon-  
 tented maintained, that the Act of Indemnity had been  
 passed merely as a temporary measure, and that it was  
 still intended to sacrifice to the revenge and rapacity  
 of the royalists, the lives and fortunes of those who  
 had served the protector or the commonwealth. To  
 this "scandal" the king replied by promising that, as  
 he had freely confirmed, so he would most religiously  
 observe, every provision in the act. 2. The successive  
 revolutions of the last twenty years had taught men  
 to doubt the stability even of the present government.  
 It was the conviction of the royal brothers that if, at  
 the commencement of the civil war, their father had  
 possessed a small regular force, he might at once have  
 put down his opponents; and under this notion, when  
 the army was disbanded, they retained in pay two or  
 three regiments, with three troops of horse-guards.  
 The whole establishment did not amount to five thou-  
 sand men.<sup>1</sup> Yet this force, small as it was, excited  
 alarm. It might be augmented, and employed, not to  
 suppress insurrection, but to subvert the national liber-  
 ties. Most of the nations on the continent had been  
 originally free: it was by the institution of standing  
 armies that they had been enslaved by despotic mon-  
 archs. Here Charles defended his conduct on the  
 ground of necessity. While so many factious spirits

<sup>1</sup> July 4, 1663. "I saw his majesty's guards, being of horse and  
 "foot four thousand, led by the general the duke of Albemarle, in  
 "extraordinary equipage and gallantry, consisting of gentlemen of  
 "quality and veteran soldiers, excellently clad, mounted, and or-  
 "dered, drawn up in battalia before their majesties in Hyde Park,  
 "where the old earle of Cleveland trail'd a pike, and led the right-  
 "hand file in a foote company commanded by the Lord Wentworth  
 "his son, a worthy spectacle and example, being both of them old  
 "and valiant soldiers."—Evelyn, ii. 202. See also the Travels of  
 Cosmo, iii. 306.

CHAP. II.  
A.D. 1662. — were employed in agitating the public mind, neither the person of the sovereign nor the freedom of the parliament could be secure without an armed force: Of this proof had been furnished by the insurrection under Venner. But let the laws resume their former empire, let the discontented abandon their rebellious designs, and he would reduce that force to the smallest number consistent with the dignity of the crown; for he would not yield to the most liberal among his subjects in his detestation of military and arbitrary rule.

3. By many it was said that the Act of Uniformity proved him to be a faithless unprincipled persecutor. He denied the charge. He had, in the first place, as in duty bound, provided by the Act of Uniformity for the settlement of the church; it was his intention, in the next place, to fulfil his promise of securing ease to those who, through the scruples of a misguided conscience, refused to conform. For this purpose, he would make it his special care to solicit from parliament an act enabling him to “exercise with more universal satisfaction that power of dispensing, which he conceived to be inherent in the crown.” Nor did he doubt of the concurrence of the two houses. It was a measure to which he was pledged by his declaration from Breda, and without which it was unreasonable to expect the restoration of public tranquillity.

4. But the most pernicious scandal remained, that the king was a favourer of popery. This was the artifice by which so many well-meaning Protestants had been seduced to bear arms against his father, and his enemies had recourse to it at the present time with intentions equally disloyal. Of his firm adhesion to the true Protestant religion he had given convincing proofs under the most trying circumstances. Yet he could

not but know that the greater part of the English Catholics had adhered, at the risk of their lives and fortunes, to the cause of the crown, and consequently of the church, against those who, under the name of Protestants, employed fire and sword for the subversion of both; and therefore he openly avowed that he did not mean to exclude Catholics from some share of that indulgence which he had promised to tender consciences. It would be unjust to refuse to those who had deserved well, the boon which was granted to those who had not; and the laws against Catholics were so rigorous, so sanguinary, that to execute them would be to do violence to his nature. Let them not, however, presume so much on his goodness as to look for toleration, or to scandalize Protestants by the open practice of their worship; otherwise they would find that he knew as well how to be severe when wisdom required it, as indulgent when charity and a sense of merit claimed indulgence from him.<sup>1</sup>

But these were doctrines ill adapted to the intolerant notions of that age. The declaration, instead of making proselytes, was received by the majority of the people with distrust of the motives, and a resolution of withstanding the wishes of the king. They could not comprehend how an attachment to the interests of Protestantism could exist with a willingness to grant any portion of indulgence to Catholics; they recalled to mind the former reports of the king's apostasy, which had been circulated by the policy of his enemies during the commonwealth; and they openly asserted

<sup>1</sup> See the Declaration in Kennet, Register, 848—891. It has been said that the real object of the declaration was the introduction of popery; but I am both ignorant why any such intention should be attributed to the king, and unable to discover how the declaration could have produced such effect.

- CHAP. II. that he cared little for the sufferings of the dissenters,  
 A.D. 1663. but merely sought, under the pretence of relieving  
 — them, to extend the same benefit to the papists.
- Feb. 18. Charles, at the opening of the next session, condescended to vindicate himself from these aspersions, and, in proof of his own orthodoxy, demanded the enactment of new laws to check the progress of popery. But, with respect to the dissenters, he represented it desirable that the crown were vested with the power of extending indulgence to the peaceable among them, in circumstances when they might otherwise be tempted to expatriate themselves, or to conspire against the state. In accordance with the sentiments
- Feb. 23. of the sovereign, the lord privy seal, aided by Lord Ashley, brought into the upper house a bill enabling the king to dispense at his discretion with the laws and statutes requiring oaths, or subscriptions, or obedience to the doctrine and discipline of the established church.<sup>1</sup> Both houses were immediately in a flame.
- Feb. 27. The lower, though the bill was not before it, presented to the king an address, in which, having thanked him for the other parts of the declaration, they contended that the indulgence which was sought would amount to the legal establishment of schism, would expose his majesty to the ceaseless importunities of the dissenters, would lead to the multiplication of sects and sectaries; and, ending in univereal toleration, would produce disturbance instead of tranquillity, because men of every religious persuasion form a distinct party, pursuing their peculiar interests, and acting in accordance
- March 5. with their peculiar prepossessions. In the higher house,

<sup>1</sup> Provided always, that no such indulgence shall be construed to extend to tolerating the use and exercise of the popish religion in this kingdom. See copy of act in State Trials, xii. 379.

the lord-treasurer placed himself at the head of the opposition: during the first day's debate, he was zealously supported by the bishops; on the second day the chancellor, though confined by a severe fit of the gout, left his room to lend his powerful aid to the cause of the church, and, in the vehemence of his zeal, indulged in a severity of language highly offensive to the sovereign. Their efforts succeeded; the house passed to a different subject; and the bill was suffered to remain unnoticed on the table.<sup>1</sup> Though Charles appeared to bear with composure the loss of this his favourite measure, he felt the disappointment keenly, and expressed his opinion to Clarendon with a warmth which surprised and terrified the minister. From that day it became manifest that neither Clarendon nor Southampton possessed his former credit with the sovereign. As to the bishops, Charles hesitated not to charge them with ingratitude and bigotry. It was, he said, to his promise from Breda that they owed their restoration to power, and now they employed that power to prevent him from fulfilling his promise. It was the intolerance of the prelates under his father which led to the destruction of prelacy, and now, as

CHAP.  
II.  
A.D. 1663.  
—  
March 12.

<sup>1</sup> C. Journals, Feb. 27, 28. L. Journals, xi. 478, 482, 486, 491. Bennet had read the declaration to Clarendon, who was confined to his chamber with the gout. He objected to some passages. Corrections were therefore made, and the declaration was read to him a second time. Did he then approve? According to Bennet, in a letter to Ormond, Jan. 13, "He had it distinctly read twice to him, "periode by periode, and not only approved it, but applauded the "contents of it, and assured mee it was entirely according to his "minde."—Lister's Clarend. iii. 232. Clarendon himself writes to Ormond (Jan. 31), that he made many objections. At the second reading, "I told him, by the time he had writ as many declarations "as I had done, hee would find they are a very ticklish commodity, and that the first care is to see that they do no hurt."—Ibid. 233. This remark does not show that he disapproved of the alterations.

CHAP. soon as they were replaced in their former situation,  
 II.  
 A.D. 1663. they reverted to the practice of intolerance. His carriage altered with his sentiments. Hitherto he had been accustomed to receive and treat them with the most marked respect. Henceforth he was careful to show by his manner that he held them in no esteem; and the courtiers, aware of the change in the royal mind, turned their persons and their sermons into subjects of sarcasm and ridicule.<sup>1</sup>

The king was, however, doomed to drink more deeply of the cup of mortification. He had asked permission to shelter the Catholics, who had served the royal cause, from the extreme severity of the penal statutes, and in return both houses presented to him an address for a proclamation ordering all Catholic priests to quit the kingdom, under the penalty of death. After a faint struggle he acquiesced. The champions of orthodoxy followed up their success; and, affecting to comply with the royal recommendation, introduced a bill to check the growth of popery, but coupled with it another to arrest the diffusion of nonconformity. Both passed with rapidity through the House of Commons; but in the House of Lords their progress was continually impeded by the objections of the Presbyterian and Catholic peers; and their patrons, before the prorogation, substituted in their place an address to the king, to put in execution all the penal laws against Catholics, dissenters, and sectaries of every description.<sup>2</sup>

During this session, whilst the Commons were engaged with the consideration of the revenue, Charles,

<sup>1</sup> Clarendon, 245—249. Life of James, i. 428. Pepys, ii. 27, 38, 57.

<sup>2</sup> L. Journ. xi. 558, 578. C. Journ. April 27, May 30.



through secretary Coventry, informed them that one of the members, Sir Richard Temple, had offered, in his own name and the name of his friends, "to undertake "his majesty's business" in that house, and to procure for him a settlement of his revenue to his liking, if the king would honour them with his confidence; and afterwards, in answer to an address from the house, he signified that the message to him from Temple had been delivered by the earl of Bristol. That nobleman immediately requested to be heard in his own justification; and, being admitted within the bar, said, that it was neither his intention to accuse Sir Richard Temple, for he was certainly innocent; nor to contradict his sovereign, for his majesty's testimony was beyond exception; but he might be allowed to say that his language to the king must have been very different from his meaning. What he had meant to suggest was, that the concession of benefits to the people should precede the demand of money by the sovereign; and that, if this had been done, there was not a member in so loyal a House of Commons, not even Sir Richard Temple, who would not cheerfully have come forward to relieve the pecuniary wants of the sovereign. This ingenious explanation was favourably received, and a resolution voted, that the earl had not failed in his duty to the king, nor in respect to that house, nor in justice to Sir Richard Temple.

Thus far Bristol had triumphed; and Charles felt his defeat most poignantly. In the interview between them, in the presence of Lord Arlington, the king expressed his resentment in terms of vituperation, and the earl, forgetting the respect due to the monarch, openly reproached him with his amours, his indolence, and his extravagance; charged him with sacrificing

CHAP.  
II.  
A.D. 1663.

June 26.

June 27.

July 1.

July 9.

CHAP. his best friends to the malice of the chancellor; and  
 A.D. 1663. <sup>II.</sup> declared that unless justice were done to him within  
 — twenty-four hours, he would do that which should  
 astonish both the king and his minister. It was with  
 difficulty that Bristol escaped from the personal re-  
 sentment of Charles. The next day he proceeded to  
 execute his threat; and rising in the House of Lords,  
 July 10. impeached Clarendon of high treason, and of divers  
 heinous misdemeanours. But this pompous denounce-  
 ment, when he descended into particulars, dwindled  
 into the ridiculous charge that the chancellor had  
 laboured both by his public conduct and private  
 discourse to create a belief that the king was in heart  
 a papist, and that on himself, his vigilance and autho-  
 rity, depended the preservation of the Protestant  
 establishment. The judges being consulted, replied  
 July 13. that none of the charges, if they could be proved, would  
 amount to the guilt of high treason. The Lords  
 adopted the opinion of the judges; and the king,  
 issuing a warrant for the apprehension of the accuser,  
 August 9. put an end to the impeachment. Bristol absconded;  
 and did not appear at court till the fall of his adver-  
 sary.<sup>1</sup>

In the summer, the cause of intolerance acquired  
 additional strength from a partial rising of enthusiasts  
 in the northern counties. The government had been  
 apprized of their intentions: the duke of Buckingham,  
 in quality of the king's lieutenant, proceeded with  
 a detachment of guards to York, and summoned the  
 militia; and about fifty persons were arrested in  
 October. Yorkshire and Westmoreland, of whom several paid

<sup>1</sup> See Clarendon, 208; Pepys, ii. 70, 90, 95; Life of James, i. 427; Parl. Hist. iv. 269, 283; Lords' Journals, xi. 55, 59, 60; State Trials, 312, 318; C. Journals, 1663, June 13, 20, 26, July 1.

the forfeit of their folly with their lives. From their situation in life it was plain that they acted under the secret guidance of others. Some professed the doctrines of the Fifth-monarchy Men; others justified themselves on the plea that the parliament had sat more than three years, and that by the Triennial Act, passed in the 16th of Charles I., in default of writs issued by the king, the freeholders were permitted to assemble of themselves for the choice of new members. When Charles opened the next session, he embraced the opportunity to suggest the repeal of an act which thus furnished a plea for seditious meetings, while the patrons of intolerance drew from the insurrection a new argument in favour of additional severities for the suppression of religious dissent. A compromise seems to have taken place. It was, indeed, enacted that parliament should never be discontinued for more than three years; but, to satisfy the king, all the compulsory clauses of the Triennial Act, which directed the keeper of the great seal to issue writs, and the sheriffs to hold elections, in defiance of the royal pleasure, were repealed; and, on the other hand, Charles reluctantly gave his consent to the Conventicle Act, which, it was hoped, would extinguish every form of heterodox worship. All meetings of more than five individuals, besides those of the family, for any religious purpose not according to the Book of Common Prayer, were declared seditious and unlawful conventicles; and it was enacted that the punishment of attendance at such meeting by any person above sixteen years of age should be, for the first offence, a fine of five pounds, or imprisonment during three months; for the second, a fine of ten pounds, or imprisonment during six months; for

CHAP.  
II.  
A.D. 1663.

1664.  
March 16.

April 5.

May 17.

CHAP.  
II.  
A.D. 1664.

the third, a fine of one hundred pounds, or transportation for seven years ; and that if the conscience of the offender led him to transgress the law more than thrice, the fine at each repetition of the offence should be augmented by the additional sum of one hundred pounds.<sup>1</sup> This act, so intolerant in its principle, and so penal in its consequences, was immediately enforced ; it equally affected Catholics and every denomination of dissenters ; but it was felt the most severely by the Quakers, because, while others, when they met for the purpose of worship, sought to elude detection, these religionists, under the guidance, as they thought, of the Spirit of God, deemed it their duty to assemble openly, and to set at defiance the law of man. To describe the numerous and vexatious informations, prosecutions, fines, and imprisonments which followed, would only fatigue the patience, and pain the feelings of the reader. I may, however, observe that the world had seldom witnessed a more flagrant violation of a most solemn engagement. Toleration had been offered and was accepted ; the king had been restored, and the church re-established ; and now that the price had been paid, the benefit was withheld ; and instead of the indulgence promised in the contract,

<sup>1</sup> Miscel. Aul. 316, 319, 330. L. Journ. 620. C. Journ. April 28, May 12, 14, 16. St. 16 Car. II. c. i. 4. Pepys, ii. 172. The Conventicle Act was limited, as an experiment, to the duration of three years. Of the tricks sometimes employed in parliament at these periods the reader may form some notion from the following instances. On the last day of the preceding session a bill for the better observance of the Sabbath was stolen off the table ; and when the king came to give the royal assent, was not to be found. Of course it did not pass into an act. In like manner, on the last day of the present session, a proviso to the Conventicle Act respecting the Quakers was also stolen ; but the former accident had awakened the vigilance of the clerk, and he discovered the theft in time to provide another copy of the proviso, and to have it passed through both houses before the king's arrival.—L. Journ. xi. 577, 619, 620.

was substituted a system of penalties and persecution. CHAP. II.  
 The blame, however, ought not to rest with the king. A.D. 1664.  
 He did, as far as we can judge from outward appearances, his best to fulfil his word. But the benevolent intentions of the monarch were opposed by the most powerful of his ministers ; and the bigotry of these ministers was sanctioned by the prejudices and resentments of the parliament.

Charles had now reigned four years, respected and courted by his neighbours ; in an evil hour he was persuaded, against his better judgment, to unsheathe the sword, and to encounter the uncertain chances of war. He had formed a correct notion of the importance of commerce to the interests of his kingdom, and was encouraged and seconded by his brother James in his attempts to improve and extend the foreign trade of the English merchants. With this view, the African Company had been established by charter ; the duke accepted the office of governor ; and the committee of management, of which he was chairman, constantly met in his apartments at Whitehall. The company flourished ; they imported gold dust from the coast of Guinea, and supplied, at a great profit, the West India planters with slaves : but they met with formidable rivals in the Dutch traders, who, during the civil war, had erected several forts along the coast of Africa, and now employed their superior power and influence to thwart the efforts, and arrest the progress, of the English intruders. The African Company complained ; their complaints were echoed by the East-India Company, whose commerce was exposed to similar impediments and injuries ; and the merchants in the city called aloud for war, to protect their interests, and curb the insolence

CHAP. of the Hollanders. James advocated their cause with  
 II.  
 A.D. 1664. his brother. Such, he maintained, was the commercial rivalry between the two nations, that, in the course of a few years, war would inevitably ensue. But then it would be too late. Now was the proper time, before the race of naval commanders, formed under the commonwealth, should become extinct. But Charles (and he was supported by Clarendon) rejected the advice. He had learned wisdom from the history of his father and his grandfather. They had been driven into war by the clamour of the nation; and the charges of war, in a short time, rendered them dependent on the will of the popular leaders in parliament.<sup>1</sup>

There was at this time a marked contrast between the characters of the royal brothers. Charles, though oppressed with debt, scattered his money heedlessly and profusely; James was careful to measure his expenses by the amount of his income. The king seemed to make gallantry the chief occupation of life; the duke to look upon it as an amusement; and while the one daily spent his time "sauntering" in the company of his mistresses, the other attended to his duties in the Admiralty with the exactitude of the meanest clerk on the establishment. In point of abilities, Charles was considered superior; but he wanted strength of mind to refuse an importunate suitor, or to resist the raillery and sarcasm of those whom he made his companions. James, with a judgment less correct, and with knowledge less extensive, formed his resolutions with slowness, but adhered to them with obstinacy. His word was esteemed sacred: his friends relied with confidence on his support, whatever

<sup>1</sup> Clarendon, 196—201. Pepys, ii. 173.

sacrifice it might cost him ; and his enemies knew that, till he had brought them on their knees, he would never forgive their offences. Yet no diversity of temper or opinion could diminish the affection of the two brothers. James was the most dutiful of subjects ; and, however he might disapprove the judgment, he always concurred in seconding the will of the sovereign. He was easy of access, and affable in discourse ; but his constant attention to preserve the dignity of his rank gave to his manner a stateliness and distance repulsive of that freedom and familiarity which the laughter-loving king indulged in the associates of his pleasures. In private life the duke was loved by few, but feared or respected by all ; in public, his industry was the theme of commendation ; and the fame which he had acquired in the French army was taken as an earnest of his future military prowess.<sup>1</sup>

On the last meeting of parliament, the complaints of the merchants were heard before a committee of the lower house. They contended that the treaty concluded by the Dutch with Cromwell, and since renewed by them with the king, was not yet executed ; that the injuries sustained by the English traders had not been redressed, nor the island of Pulerone restored ; that English ships were still seized and condemned under frivolous pretences ; that the natives of Africa and the Indies were frequently induced by promises and bribes to demolish the English factories ; that the Dutch, by proclaiming fictitious wars, and establishing pretended blockades, assumed the right of excluding their rivals from the most fre-

CHAP.  
II.  
A.D. 1664.

April 21.

1662.  
Sept. 4.

<sup>1</sup> Sheffield, duke of Buckingham, ii. 78. Mem. de Grammont, i. 141. Burnet, i. 287. Pepys, ii. 143, 188.

CHAP. II. quented ports, and the most valuable sources of  
 A.D. 1662. profit; and that the losses of the English merchants  
 — amounted, on a moderate calculation, to seven hundred  
 thousand pounds from these injuries, and to the enormous  
 sum of four millions from the retention of Pulerone.<sup>1</sup> The committee decided in favour of the  
 complainants; Clifford, the chairman, supported their  
 cause with considerable warmth; and Downing added  
 the weight of his authority, derived from the office  
 which he held as English resident at the Hague, both  
 for the protector and the king.<sup>2</sup> He was a bold,  
 rapacious, and unprincipled man, who under Cromwell  
 had extorted by menaces considerable sums in the  
 form of presents from the Dutch merchants, and who  
 now, by the violence of his speeches in parliament, and  
 afterwards by the haughtiness of his carriage to the  
 States, provoked a suspicion that he looked forward  
 to a similar termination of the existing quarrel. The  
 Commons voted an address, in which they petitioned  
 the king to take an effectual course for the speedy  
 redress of these injuries, with a promise to stand by  
 him, with their lives and fortunes, against all opposi-  
 tion; the Lords concurred; and Charles replied that  
 he would demand justice by his ambassador, and, in  
 case of denial, would rely on the offer which they had  
 made to him. Still, to dispassionate observers it ap-  
 peared that, with a little conciliation on either part,  
 the quarrel might be amicably adjusted. But Charles  
 no longer listened to the suggestions of prudence  
 when he found that, by acceding to the popular wish,  
 he might gratify his personal resentments against the

1664.  
 April 21.

April 29.

<sup>1</sup> Lords' Journ. xi. 599, 620, 626.

<sup>2</sup> He was accustomed to leave the Hague occasionally to attend his duty in parliament.—Clarendon, 224.



Louvestein faction, which had long ruled the destinies of the republic. That faction had heaped indignities on him during his exile, had stripped the house of Orange, of which his nephew was the head, of its ancient dignities, and, what was perhaps a more unpardonable offence, had suffered caricatures to be published in ridicule of his apathy, his amours, and his indigence.<sup>1</sup> On the other hand, De Witt, who was acknowledged as the Louvestein leader, felt no disposition to make any concession to the menaces of a rival nation. He was resolved to maintain the commercial superiority of his countrymen; he considered the Dutch navy as a match for that of England, and, by a defensive alliance, he had already secured the assistance of France. By some it was thought that the obstinacy of the States had been supported by the intrigues of Louis. But the contrary was the fact; for it suited not the interests of that prince to provoke or foment a quarrel, which must involve him in a war with England, at a time when he meditated hostilities against Spain.<sup>2</sup>

In the meanwhile, the African Company had despatched Sir Robert Holmes, with a few small ships of war, to recover the castle of Cape Corse, of which they had been dispossessed by their rivals. In searching a Dutch vessel, he discovered certain documents respecting Valkenberg, the Dutch governor, and the hostile tenor of these papers induced him to exceed his own commission, and to assume offensive operations.<sup>3</sup> He

<sup>1</sup> Pepys, ii. 125.

<sup>2</sup> L. Journ. 600, 603. Com. Journ. App. 21, 29. Temple, i. 305, 307. Louis, ii. 5. Le Clerc, ii. 62. Basnage, 711.

<sup>3</sup> The king of Fantine had been supplied with money and ammunition to induce him to attack the English fort at Cormantine. The Dutch denied the charge, but Charles replied, "that he has as full

CHAP. II. compelled the forts on Goree to surrender, reduced the  
 A.D. 1664. castle of Cape Corse, destroyed several factories on the  
 Feb. coast, and then stretched across the Atlantic to the  
 settlement of New Amsterdam, originally an English  
 colony, and lately recovered by Sir Richard Nicholas,  
 who, in honour of the duke, his patron, had given to it  
 the name of New York.<sup>1</sup> On the first intelligence of  
 these proceedings, the Dutch ambassador presented an  
 energetic remonstrance to the king, who replied, that  
 the expedition had been sent out by the private autho-  
 rity of the company, that Holmes should be put on his  
 trial at his return, and that strict justice should be  
 measured out to all the parties concerned.<sup>2</sup> With  
 this assurance the States-general were satisfied; but  
 De Witt refused to sit down tamely under the affront.  
 By his intrigues with the states of Holland, he pro-  
 cured an order, loosely and ambiguously worded, to  
 pass through the States-general, and this, with a secret  
 explanation, was forwarded to De Ruyter, the com-  
 mander of the Dutch squadron in the Mediterranean.  
 He had been sent there to cruise against the Turkish  
 corsairs, in company with Lawson, the English admiral;  
 but now, pretending that he had orders to destroy a  
 squadron of pirates at the Canaries, he separated from  
 his allies, retaliated on the English, along the coast of  
 Guinea, the injuries which they had inflicted on his  
 countrymen, and, crossing to the West India islands,

July 31.

Sept. 25.

“evidence of it, as he can have that there is such a fort.”—*Lords’ Journ.* xi. 627.

<sup>1</sup> Charles granted this tract of land to his brother, 12th March, 1664. Sir Richard Nicholas was groom of the bed-chamber to the duke of York.—*Life of James*, i. 400. *Dalrymple*, ii. App. 27, a letter to which the editor has given by mistake the date of 1669.

<sup>2</sup> Holmes, on his return, was committed to the Tower, but cleared himself to the satisfaction of the king.—*Heath, Contin.* 532. *Pepys*, ii. 238.

captured above twenty sail of English merchantmen. LAWSON, through want of instructions, did not follow De Ruyter, but he was careful to inform the duke of York of the Dutchman's probable destination ; and, by order of that prince, two English fleets swept the narrow seas of the Dutch traders, which, to the number of one hundred and thirty sail, were carefully guarded in the English ports, as a fund of indemnification to the sufferers from the expedition under De Ruyter.<sup>1</sup>

Charles, however, before he would rush blindly into the contest, determined to secure a provision of money adequate to the undertaking. The charge of the war was calculated at two millions and a half, a sum unprecedented in the annals of English finance ; but the passions of the people were roused, and the council had the art to remove from themselves the odium of the demand. By their secret persuasion, Sir Richard Paston, a country gentleman of independent fortune, brought forward the proposition in the House of Commons ; and when, to carry on the deception, a known dependant of the ministers rose to suggest a smaller sum, he was eagerly interrupted by two members, supposed to have no connection with the court. The artifice escaped notice, and the original motion was carried, after an animated debate, by a majority of seventy voices. The lords assented, and the king issued a declaration of war.<sup>2</sup>

Nov. 25.

1665.  
Feb. 22.

<sup>1</sup> Life of James, i. 403. Clarendon, 225, 227. Le Clerc, ii. 65, 67. Basnage, 714. His majesty's Narrative in Lords' Journ. xi. 625. The complaint of Charles in this narrative is confirmed by d'Estrades, who attributes the war to the expedition of Ruyter in obedience to the order of De Witt, "sans attendre selon la disposition du 14 article de 1662, que le terme d'un (an) fut passé, pendant lequel le Roi de la Grande Bretagne devoit faire reparer l'entreprise du chevalier Holmes."—D'Estrades, iv. 315. "Intra anni spatium."—Dumont, vi. part ii. p. 424.

<sup>2</sup> Com. Journ. Nov. 25—Feb. 3. Lords' Journ. xi. 654. Cla-

CHAP.  
II.  
A.D. 1665.

The provisions of this money-bill deserve the reader's attention, because they put an end to the ancient system of taxation, and effected a considerable change in the acknowledged immunities of the clergy. 1. He is aware that, from the commencement of the contest between Charles I. and his parliament, down to the restoration of his son, the manner of raising supplies, by grants of subsidies, tenths, and fifteenths, had been abandoned, for the more certain and less cumbrous expedient of levying monthly assessments on the several counties. The ministers of Charles were not ignorant of the superior merit of the new plan; but as it was originally a revolutionary measure, and had excited the complaints of the people, they had deemed it prudent, in a former session, to revert to the old monarchical model. The experiment, however, failed; the four last subsidies had not raised more than one-half the sum at which they had been calculated; the house consented that the new grant should be levied by monthly assessments, as moneys had been levied under the commonwealth;<sup>1</sup> and from that period the ancient subsidies fell into desuetude. 2. Hitherto the clergy had preserved the honourable privilege of taxing themselves, and had usually granted in convocation the same number of clerical subsidies as was voted of lay subsidies by the two houses of parliament. But this distinction could not conveniently be maintained, when money was to be raised by county rates; and it was therefore agreed that the right of the clergy should be waived in the present instance, but, at the same time, be preserved for

rendon's statement cannot be reconciled with the journals.—See Clar. 228—231. Pepys tells us that, in framing the estimates, the Admiralty studied to make the charges of the last year as high as possible (ii. 228).

<sup>1</sup> 16 & 17 Car. 2, c. i.

them by a proviso in the act. The proviso, however, was illusory, and the right has never since been exercised. In return, the clergy claimed, what could not in justice be denied, the privilege of voting as freeholders at elections; a privilege which, though never expressly granted, has since been recognised by different statutes.<sup>1</sup> But a consequence followed from this arrangement which probably was not foreseen. From the moment that the convocation ceased to vote money, it became of little service to the crown. It was no longer suffered to deliberate, to frame ecclesiastical canons, or to investigate the conduct, or regulate the concerns of the church. It was, indeed, summoned, and the members met as usual, but merely as a matter of form; for a royal mandate immediately arrived, and an adjournment, prorogation, or dissolution followed. That, however, which seems the most extraordinary is, that this change in the constitution, by which one of the three estates ceased, in fact, to exist, and a new class of freeholders, unknown to the law, was created, owes its origin, not to any legislative enactment, but to a merely verbal agreement between the lord chancellor and Archbishop Sheldon.<sup>2</sup>

From parliament, the lord high admiral hastened to the Gun-fleet to superintend the naval preparations: Charles, by his commands, and occasionally by his presence, seconded the industry of his brother;<sup>3</sup> and

<sup>1</sup> 10th Anne, c. 23. 18th George 2, c. 18.

<sup>2</sup> See Echard, 818; Burnet, i. 340, note; iv. 508, note.

<sup>3</sup> Charles paid much attention to naval affairs. He studied the art of shipbuilding, and persuaded himself that he could make improvements in it. In a letter to Prince Rupert, he says, "I believe that if you trie the two sloopes that were builte at Woolidge, which have my invention in them, they will outsail any of the French sloopes."—Lansdowne MSS., MCCVI. p. 162.

CHAP. before the end of April, the most formidable fleet that  
 II. England had ever witnessed was ready to contend  
 A.D. 1665. — for the empire of the sea. The duke, despising the narrow prejudices of party, had called around him the seamen who fought and conquered in the last war; and when the duke of Buckingham and other noblemen, whose only recommendation was their birth and quality, solicited commissions, he laconically replied that they might serve as volunteers; but experience alone could qualify them to command. The future operations were arranged with his council, and, at his suggestion, an improvement was adopted, that something of that order should be introduced into naval, which was observed in military engagements. It was agreed that the fleet should be divided into three squadrons; the red under the command of the duke, the white under that of Prince Rupert, and the blue under the earl of Sandwich; that it should be formed in line preparatory to battle; and that the several captains should be enjoined to keep the stations allotted to them by their respective commanders.<sup>1</sup>

April 21. James unfurled his flag on board the Royal Charles; ninety-eight sail of the line and four fire-ships followed him to sea;<sup>2</sup> and for more than a month this formidable armament insulted the coast of Holland, and rode triumphant in the German Ocean.

At length an easterly wind drove the English to their own shores, and the Dutch fleet immediately put

<sup>1</sup> "This was the first war wherein fighting in a line, and a "regular form of battle, was observed."—Life of James, i. 405. This system introduced by the duke was invariably followed till Clerk's "Essay on Naval Tactics" induced Lord Rodney to break through the enemy's line in his victory of the 12th of April, 1782.

<sup>2</sup> Three were first-rates, eleven second, fifteen third, thirty-two fourth, eleven fifth, and twenty-six merchant ships carrying from forty to fifty guns.—Life of James, 405. Macpherson's Papers, i. 31.

to sea. It sailed in seven divisions, comprising one hundred and thirteen ships of war, under the command in chief of Opdam, an officer who, in the late war, had deserved the confidence of his countrymen. It exhibited a gallant and animating spectacle: the bravest and the noblest youths of Holland repaired on board to share the dangers of the expedition; and, as the admiral had received a positive order to fight, every heart beat high with the hope or assurance of victory. Opdam himself was an exception. His experienced eye discovered, in the insufficiency of many among his captains, and the constitution of their crews, reason to doubt the result of a battle: and to his confidants he observed—"I know what prudence would suggest; but I must obey my orders, and by this time to-morrow you shall see me crowned with laurel or with cypress."<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
II.  
A.D. 1665.

Early in the morning of the third of June the hostile fleets descried each other near Lowestoffe. Seven hours were spent in attempts on each side to gain and keep the advantage of the wind; at length the English, by a skilful manœuvre, tacked in the same direction with the enemy, and accompanied them in a parallel line, till the signal was made for each ship to bear down and engage its opponent. The sea was calm: not a cloud could be seen in the sky; and a gentle breeze blew from the south-west. The two nations fought with their characteristic obstinacy; and during four hours the issue hung in suspense. On one occasion the duke was in the most imminent peril. All the ships of the red squadron, with the exception of two, had dropped out of the line to refit; and the weight of the enemy's fire was directed against his flag-ship,

June 3.

<sup>1</sup> Basnage, i. 741.

**CHAP.** the Royal Charles. The earl of Falmouth, the Lord  
**II.**  
**A.D.** 1665. Muskerrey, and Boyle, son to the earl of Burlington,  
 — who stood by his side, were slain by the same shot; and James himself was covered with the blood of his slaughtered friends. Gradually, however, the disabled ships resumed their stations; the English obtained the superiority; and the fire of the enemy was observed to slacken. A short pause allowed the smoke to clear away; and the confusion which the duke observed on board his opponent, the *Eendracht*, bearing Opdam's flag, induced him to order all his guns to be discharged into her in succession, and with deliberate aim. At the third shot from the lower tier, she blew up, and the admiral, with five hundred men, perished in the explosion. Alarmed at the loss of their commander, the Dutch fled. James led the chase; the four sternmost sail of the enemy ran foul of each other, and were consumed by a fire-ship, and three others shortly afterwards experienced the same fate. But Van Tromp kept the fugitives together, whilst the darkness of the night retarded the pursuit of the conquerors; and in the morning the Dutch fleet was moored in safety within the shallows.<sup>1</sup> In this action, the most glorious hitherto fought by the

<sup>1</sup> The result of the victory would have been more complete, had not the Royal Charles during the night slackened sail and brought to, which detained the rest of the fleet. For some time the fact was concealed from the duke, who had retired to rest; but it gradually became known, and, from an inquiry instituted by the House of Commons, it appeared that Brunkhard, one of the duke's servants, who had been greatly alarmed during the battle, endeavoured at night to persuade the master to shorten sail, lest he should lead the ship into the midst of the enemy; and, failing in this, after a pause, delivered to him an order, or something like an order, to the same effect. Burnet insinuates that the order came from the duke (i. 377); that it was forged by Brunkhard appears from the inquiry before the house (*ibid.* 378, note), from Clarendon, 269, and from the Life of James, i. 415.



navy of England, the enemy lost four admirals, seven thousand men slain or made prisoners, and eighteen sail either burnt or taken. The loss of the victors was small in proportion. One ship of fifty guns had been taken in the beginning of the action; and the killed and wounded amounted to six hundred men. But among the slain, besides the noblemen already mentioned, were the earls of Marlborough and Portland, and two distinguished naval commanders, the admirals Lawson and Sampson.<sup>1</sup>

At another time the report of such a victory would have been received with the most enthusiastic demonstrations of joy; but it came at a time when the spirits of men were depressed by one of the most calamitous visitations ever experienced by this or any other nation. In the depth of the last winter two or three isolated cases of plague had occurred in the outskirts of the metropolis. The fact excited alarm, and directed the attention of the public to the weekly variations in the bills of mortality. On the one hand, the cool temperature of the air, and the frequent changes in the weather, were hailed as favourable circumstances; on the other, it could not be concealed that the number of deaths, from whatever cause it arose, was progressively on the advance. In this state of suspense, alternately agitated by their hopes and fears, men looked to the result with the most intense anxiety; and at length, about the end of May, under the influence of a warmer sun, and with the aid of a close and stagnant atmosphere, the evil burst forth in all its terrors. From the centre of St. Giles's the infection spread with rapidity over the adjacent parishes, threat-

<sup>1</sup> There are numerous accounts of this battle: I have preferred that given in the *Life of James*, i. 407—415.

CHAP. II. ened the court at Whitehall, and, in defiance of every  
 A.D. 1665. precaution, stole its way into the city. A general panic  
 June 29. ensued. The nobility and gentry were the first to flee ;  
 the royal family followed ; and then all, who valued their  
 personal safety more than the considerations of home  
 and interest, prepared to imitate the example. For  
 some weeks the tide of emigration flowed from every  
 outlet towards the country ; it was checked at last by  
 the refusal of the lord mayor to grant certificates of  
 health, and by the opposition of the neighbouring  
 townships, which rose in their own defence, and formed  
 a barrier round the devoted city.<sup>1</sup>

The absence of the fugitives, and the consequent  
 cessation of trade and the breaking up of establish-  
 ments, served to aggravate the calamity. It was cal-  
 culated that forty thousand servants had been left  
 without a home, and the number of artisans and la-  
 bourers thrown out of employment was still more con-  
 siderable. It is true that the charity of the opulent  
 seemed to keep pace with the progress of distress.  
 The king subscribed the weekly sum of one thousand  
 pounds, the city six hundred pounds ; the queen dow-  
 ager, the archbishop of Canterbury, the earl of Craven,  
 and the lord mayor, distinguished themselves by the  
 amount of their benefactions ; and the magistrates  
 were careful to insure a constant supply of provisions  
 in the markets ; yet the families that depended on  
 casual relief for the means of subsistence were neces-  
 sarily subjected to privations, which rendered them  
 more liable to receive, and less able to subdue the  
 contagion. The mortality was at first confined chiefly

<sup>1</sup> Monk remained in town as the sole representative of govern-  
 ment, and faithfully performed his duty during the pestilence,  
 though he considered himself in greater danger than if he were in  
 action with the Dutch fleet.—Clarend. Life, p. 272.

to the lower classes, carrying off in a larger proportion the children than the adult, the females than the males. But, by the end of June, so rapid was the diffusion, so destructive were the ravages of the disease, that the civil authorities deemed it time to exercise the powers with which they had been invested by an act of James I. "for the charitable relief and ordering of persons "infected with the plague."<sup>1</sup> 1. They divided the parishes into districts, and allotted to each district a competent number of officers, under the denomination of examiners, searchers, nurses, and watchmen. 2. They ordered that the existence of the disease, wherever it might penetrate, should be made known to the public by a red cross, one foot in length, painted on the door, with the words, "Lord have mercy upon "us," placed above it. From that moment the house was closed ; all egress for the space of one month was inexorably refused ; and the wretched inmates were doomed to remain under the same roof, communicating death one to the other. Of these many sunk under the horrors of their situation ; others, driven by despair, eluded the vigilance, or corrupted the fidelity of the watchmen, and by their escape, instead of avoiding, served to disseminate the infection.<sup>2</sup> 3. Provision was also made for the speedy interment of the dead. In the daytime officers were always on the watch to withdraw from public view the bodies of those who expired in the streets ; during the night the tinkling

CHAP.  
II.  
A.D. 1665.

July 1.

<sup>1</sup> Stat. of Realm, iv. 1660. In the next session of parliament a bill was introduced to extend these powers, but was lost through the refusal of the Lords to allow their houses to be shut up at the discretion of the constables.—L. Journ. xi. 698. Marvell, i. 52.

<sup>2</sup> Persons thus escaping, if taken in company with others, and found to have infectious sores upon them, were liable to suffer death as felons ; if without sores, to be treated as rogues and vagabonds.—Stat. *ibid*.

CHAP. of a bell, accompanied with the glare of links, an-  
 II.  
 A.D. 1665. nounced the approach of the pest-cart, making its  
 — round to receive the victims of the last twenty-four  
 hours. No coffins were prepared; no funeral service  
 was read; no mourners were permitted to follow the  
 remains of their relatives or friends. The cart pro-  
 ceeded to the nearest cemetery, and shot its burden  
 into the common grave, a deep and spacious pit, cap-  
 able of holding some scores of bodies, and dug in the  
 churchyard, or, when the churchyard was full, in the  
 outskirts of the parish. Of the hardened and brutal  
 conduct of the men to whom this duty was committed,  
 men taken from the refuse of society, and lost to all  
 sense of morality or decency, instances were related  
 to which it would be difficult to find a parallel in the  
 annals of human depravity.<sup>1</sup>

The disease generally manifested itself by the usual  
 febrile symptoms of shivering, nausea, headache, and  
 delirium. In some these affections were so mild as to  
 be mistaken for a slight and transient indisposition.  
 The victim saw not, or would not see, the insidious  
 approach of his foe; he applied to his usual avoca-  
 tions, till a sudden faintness came on, the maculæ, the  
 fatal "tokens," appeared on his breast, and within an  
 hour life was extinct. But, in most cases, the pain  
 and the delirium left no room for doubt. On the third  
 or fourth day, buboes or carbuncles arose; if these  
 could be made to suppurate, recovery might be antici-

<sup>1</sup> Rugge, MS. 573. Echard, 823. Hodges, *Loimologia*, 23.  
 De Foe, *History of the Plague in London*. Though De Foe, for  
 dramatic effect, wrote as an eye-witness, which he could not be,  
 yet his narrative, as to the substance of the facts, is confirmed by all  
 the other authorities. Hodges and De Foe attribute also the deaths  
 of many to the avarice of their nurses, who destroyed the lives, that  
 they might carry off the money and trinkets of the patients.

pated; if they resisted the efforts of nature and the skill of the physician, death was inevitable. The sufferings of the patients often threw them into paroxysms of phrensy. They burst the bands by which they were confined to their beds; they precipitated themselves from the windows; they ran naked into the street, and plunged into the river.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
II.  
A.D. 1665.

Men of the strongest minds were lost in amazement, when they contemplated this scene of woe and desolation; the weak and the credulous became the dupes of their own fears and imaginations. Tales the most improbable, and predictions the most terrific, were circulated; numbers assembled at different cemeteries to behold the ghosts of the dead walk round the pits in which their bodies had been deposited; and crowds believed that they saw in the heavens a sword of flame, stretching from Westminster to the Tower. To add to their terrors came the fanatics, who felt themselves inspired to act the part of prophets. One of these, in a state of nudity, walked through the city, bearing on his head a pan of burning coals, and denouncing the judgments of God on its sinful inhabitants; another, assuming the character of Jonah, proclaimed aloud as he passed, "Yet forty days, and London shall be destroyed;" and a third might be met, sometimes by day, sometimes by night, advancing with a hurried step, and exclaiming with a deep sepulchral voice, "Oh the great and dreadful God!"

During the months of July and August the weather was sultry, the heat more and more oppressive. The eastern parishes, which at first had been spared, became the chief seat of the pestilence; and the more sub-

<sup>1</sup> Hodges, 57, 97—132.

CHAP.  
II.  
A.D. 1665.   stantial citizens, whom it had hitherto respected, suffered in common with their less opulent neighbours.<sup>1</sup>

— In many places the regulations of the magistrates could no longer be enforced. The nights did not suffice for the burial of the dead, who were now borne in coffins to their graves at all hours of the day; and it was inhuman to shut up the dwellings of the infected poor, whose families must have perished through want, had they not been permitted to go and seek relief. London presented a wide and heartrending scene of misery and desolation. Rows of houses stood tenantless and open to the winds; others, in almost equal numbers, exhibited the red cross flaming on the doors. The chief thoroughfares, so lately trodden by the feet of thousands, were overgrown with grass. The few individuals who ventured abroad walked in the middle, and when they met, declined on opposite sides, to avoid the contact of each other. But if the solitude and stillness of the streets impressed the mind with awe, there was something yet more appalling in the sounds which occasionally burst upon the ear. At one moment were heard the ravings of delirium, or the wail of woe, from the infected dwelling; at another, the merry song, or the loud and careless laugh issuing from the wassailers at the tavern, or the inmates of the brothel. Men became so familiarized with the form, that they steeled their feelings against the terrors of death. They waited each for his turn with the resignation of the Christian, or the indifference of the stoic. Some devoted themselves to exercises of

<sup>1</sup> The weekly returns of the dead for these months were, 1,006, 1,268, 1,761, 2,785, 3,014, 4,030, 5,312, 5,568, 7,496. I take no notice of the distinction made by the bills between those who died of the plague, and those who died of other diseases, because I conceive no reliance can be placed on it.

piety; others sought relief in the riot of dissipation, and the recklessness of despair.

CHAP.  
II.  
A.D. 1665.

September came; the heat of the atmosphere began to abate; but, contrary to expectation, the mortality increased.<sup>1</sup> Formerly a hope of recovery might be indulged; now infection was the certain harbinger of death, which followed generally in the course of three days, often within the space of twenty-four hours. The privy council ordered an experiment to be tried, which was grounded on the practice of former times. To dissipate the pestilential miasm, fires of sea-coal, in the proportion of one fire to every twelve houses, were kindled in all the streets, courts, and alleys of London and Westminster. They were kept burning three days and nights, and were at last extinguished by a heavy and continuous fall of rain. The next bill exhibited a considerable reduction in the amount of deaths; and the survivors congratulated each other on the cheering prospect.<sup>2</sup> But the cup was soon dashed from their lips; and in the following week more than ten thousand victims, a number hitherto unknown, sank under the augmented violence of the disease.<sup>3</sup> Yet even now, when hope had yielded to despair, their deliverance was at hand. The high winds, which usually accompany the autumnal equinox, cooled and purified the air; the fever, though equally contagious, assumed a less malignant form, and its ravages were necessarily more confined, from the diminution of the population on which it had hitherto fed. The weekly burials successively decreased from thousands to hundreds, and,

Sept. 5.

Sept. 12.

Sept. 19.

<sup>1</sup> The return for the week ending Sept. 5 was 8,252.

<sup>2</sup> The return fell to 7,690.

<sup>3</sup> The number returned was 8,297, but it was generally acknowledged that the bills were very incorrect, and seldom gave more than two-thirds of the real number.

CHAP. in the beginning of December, seventy-three parishes  
 II.  
 A.D. 1665. were pronounced clear of the disease.<sup>1</sup> The intelli-  
 —  
 Dec. 12. gence was hailed with joy by the emigrants, who  
 returned in crowds to take possession of their homes,  
 1666.  
 Feb. 1. and to resume their usual occupations: in February  
 the court was once more fixed at Whitehall, and the  
 nobility and gentry followed the footsteps of the sove-  
 reign. Though more than one hundred thousand indi-  
 viduals are said to have perished, yet in a short time  
 the chasm in the population was no longer discernible.  
 The plague continued, indeed, to linger in particular  
 spots,<sup>2</sup> but its terrors were forgotten or despised; and  
 the streets, so recently abandoned by the inhabitants,  
 were again thronged with multitudes in the eager  
 pursuit of profit, or pleasure, or crime.

From the metropolis, the pestilence had extended its  
 destructive sway over the greater part of the kingdom.  
 The fugitives carried the infection with them wherever  
 they found an asylum; and the mortality was generally  
 proportionate to the density of the population.<sup>3</sup> For-

<sup>1</sup> The decrease was as follows: 6,460, 5,720, 5,068, 1,806, 1,388, 1,787, 1,359, 905, 544.

<sup>2</sup> There was not a week in the year in which some cases of plague were not returned. For all these particulars, see Hodges, *Loimologia*; De Foe; the newspapers of the year; Evelyn, *Diary*, ii. 245; Ellis, *Letters*, second series, iv. 35; Pepys, ii. 266, 273, 276, 281, 286, 293, 297, 305, 309, 310; Somers' *Tracts*, viii. 436. Clarendon, with his usual inaccuracy, makes the number of dead, according to the weekly bills, to amount to 160,000, which, he says, ought, in the opinion of well-informed persons, to be doubled.—Clarendon, 326. The number of burials, according to the bills, was only 97,306.—Table prefixed to *Loimologia*. If we add one-third for omissions, the amount will be about 130,000; but from these must be deducted the deaths from other causes than the plague. In the tables themselves the deaths from the plague in this year are 68,596; in 1666 they are 1,996; in 1667, they fall to thirty-five, to fourteen in 1668, and after that seldom reach to half-a-dozen.

<sup>3</sup> In August of the following year it raged with violence in Colchester, Norwich, Winchester, Cambridge, and Salisbury.—Rugge, MS.



tunately it confined its ravages to the land ; the fleet continued healthy ; and as soon as the ships damaged in the late engagement were repaired, the duke of York hastened to take the command ; but his eagerness was checked by the prohibition of the king, who had been solicited by the queen-mother not to expose the life of the presumptive heir to the uncertain chances of battle. The earl of Sandwich succeeded him, and sailed to watch the hostile navy in the Texel. In the meanwhile two fleets of Dutch merchantmen, the one from the East Indies, the other from Smyrna, valued at twenty-five million of livres, steering round the north of Ireland and Scotland, had taken shelter in the neutral harbour of Bergen in Norway. The temptation was too powerful for the honesty of the king of Denmark ; and, on condition that he should receive a moiety of the profits, he consented to connive at the capture of the Hollanders by the English fleet. Sandwich sailed immediately to Bergen, and Clifford, afterwards lord-treasurer, held an unsatisfactory conference with Alefeldt, the governor. That officer proposed that the English should wait till he had received instructions from Copenhagen ; but Sandwich refused ; Tyddiman entered the harbour with a powerful squadron ; and the Dutch moored their ships across the bay, and raised a battery of forty-one guns on the shore. A sudden change in the direction of the wind compelled the English to cast anchor under the cannon of the castle ; but Tyddiman, trusting to the neutrality of the governor, commenced the attack, and had already driven the enemy from most of their defences, when the garrison, in revenge, it was alleged, for the damage done to the town, opened a destructive fire on the assailants. One ship was sunk ; the others,

CHAP.  
 II.  
 A.D. 1666.

1665-  
 July 22.

July 31.

August 3.

**CHAP. II.** cutting their cables, ran out to sea, and the enterprise  
**A.D. 1665.** was abandoned. With whom the blame of the failure  
 — ought to rest, Clarendon professes himself unable to determine; Sandwich complained loudly of the duplicity and bad faith of the king of Denmark; but Sir Gilbert Talbot, the English ambassador, acquits the Danish authorities, and asserts that Sandwich refused to wait but one day for the arrival of instructions from Copenhagen, under the notion that, by acting without the permission of the Dane, he should exclude him from any right of participation in the expected booty.<sup>1</sup>

To the pensionary De Witt, the principal advocate of the war in Holland, to preserve the merchantmen in Bergen was an object of the first importance. Though a mere landsman, he took the command of the fleet, and, impatient of the obstruction caused by a contrary wind, sought and discovered a new passage out of the Texel. He sailed to Bergen, and the merchantmen placed themselves under his protection; but the fleet  
 Sept. 4. was dispersed by a storm, and Sandwich had the good fortune to capture eight men-of-war, two of the richest Indiamen, and about twenty other vessels. But avarice tempted him to take from the Indiamen a part of their cargo to the value of two thousand pounds, and the other flag-officers, with his permission, followed his example. The king, and the duke as lord high admiral, condemned his presumption; he acknowledged his offence before the council, and was in punishment deprived of the command; but to save his honour in the eyes of the public, he received the appointment of ambassador to the court of Spain.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Clarendon, 270, 277—281. Pepys, ii. 324. Miscel. Aul. 359. Echard, 821. Sir Gilbert Talbot's Narrative among the Lansdowne MSS., 6859, p. 45; and his letters in Lister, iii. 389, et seq.

<sup>2</sup> Lords' Journ. xi. 687. Clarendon, 300—306. Coke, ii. 38.

Charles, on account of the pestilence in London, had summoned the parliament to meet in Oxford. His object was to obtain another supply of money. The expenses of the war, partly through the want of naval stores,<sup>1</sup> partly through the negligence and rapacity of the officers, had considerably exceeded the calculations of his ministers, and the whole of the last parliamentary grant was already mortgaged to the creditors of the public. With the king's request that the two houses, by their liberality, would complete their own work, they cheerfully complied; and an additional grant of one million two hundred and fifty thousand pounds, with a present of one hundred and twenty thousand pounds to the duke of York, was voted without a murmur. The next object which claimed their attention was the danger to be feared from the enemies of monarchy. Algernon Sydney, and many of the exiles, had hastened to Holland, and offered their services to the States. Whether the latter seriously meditated an invasion of England or Scotland may be doubted; but they certainly gave naval and military commands to several of the refugees, and encouraged the formation of a council of English malcontents at the Hague. These corresponded with their friends in England; the most sinister reports were put in circulation; strangers, notwithstanding the mortality, were observed to resort to the capital; and information was sent to Monk of secret meetings of conspirators, and of plots for the seizure of the Tower and the burning of the city. Rathbone, Tucker, and six of their asso-

CHAP.

A.D. 1665.

Oct. 11.

Oct. 23.

Sept. 1.

Miscel. Aul. 361. D'Estrades, ii. 364, 369. Pepys, ii. 324, 347, 352. Evelyn, ii. 248.

<sup>1</sup> To supply the naval arsenals, Charles, of his own authority, suspended the Navigation Act, and yet the parliament took no notice of it.—Coke, ii. 140. He revoked the suspension, 27th Sept. 1667.

CHAP. II. ciates had been apprehended, and paid the forfeit of  
 A.D. 1665. their lives; but Colonel Danvers, the leader, escaped  
 — from the grasp of the officers, and found an asylum in  
 Sept. 3. the country. Alarmed by this insignificant plot, the  
 parliament attainted several of the conspirators by  
 name, and, in addition, every natural-born subject who  
 should remain in the service of the States after a fixed  
 day.<sup>1</sup> These enactments, however, did not satisfy the  
 more timid or more zealous. During the pestilence,  
 many of the orthodox clergy in the metropolis persisted  
 with the most laudable constancy in the discharge of  
 their duties; many, yielding to their fears, had skulked  
 away from the scene of danger, and sought security in  
 the country. The Presbyterian ministers who had re-  
 cently been ejected seized the opportunity to ascend  
 the vacant pulpits amidst the loud cries of their  
 congregations, "What must we do to be saved?" The  
 self-devotion of these men, who braved the perils of  
 death that they might administer the consolations  
 of religion to their afflicted brethren, is said to have  
 provoked the jealousy of their rivals; and that  
 jealousy, if it really existed, was speedily gratified by  
 new penal enactments. That the law had been  
 violated, no one could deny; but the violation  
 had been committed in circumstances so extraordi-

<sup>1</sup> L. Journ. xi. 688, 692. St. of Realm, v. 578. Parker, 78—  
 87. Burnet, i. 393. Clarendon, 290. It has been often asserted  
 that these plots, and the correspondence said to be carried on be-  
 tween the disaffected in England and the Dutch, were mere fictions.  
 The following extracts from the letters of d'Estrades, the French  
 minister at the Hague, to his sovereign, will perhaps prove the con-  
 trary. Les états ont de grandes intelligences en Ecosse, et parmi  
 les ministres de leur religion en Angleterre.—Mémoires d'Estrades,  
 ii. 383, Oct. 3, 1665. L'Ecosse fait entendre aux états que dès  
 que votre majesté se declarera, elle a un fort parti à mettre en  
 campagne, et que les ministres de l'Angleterre de la même religion  
 de ceux de ce pays mandent la même chose.—Id. 385.

nary as to be more worthy of praise than censure. CHAP II.  
 To add, therefore, to the legal offence, it was A.D. 1665.  
 pretended that the ministers had employed the opportunity to disseminate from the pulpit principles of sedition and treason, representing the plague as a visitation from Providence, partly on account of their own expulsion from the churches, and partly on account of the immorality of the sovereign and his court; a charge in which it is probable that the indiscretion of one or two individuals was not only exaggerated, but unjustly extended to the whole body. —  
 However that may be, an act was passed, prohibiting Oct. 30.  
 every nonconforming minister to come, unless he were passing on the road, within five miles of any town sending members to parliament, or of any village in which he had ever lawfully or unlawfully exercised his ministry, under the penalty of a fine of forty pounds for every such offence, and of six months' imprisonment, if he refused in addition to take the oath of non-resistance. For the better execution of this, the Five-mile Act, the bishops received from the orthodox clergy the names of all nonconforming ministers within their respective parishes; spies and informers were everywhere employed and encouraged; and the objects of suspicion were compelled to fix themselves and their families in obscure parts of the country, where they depended for support on their own labour and the casual charity of others. But the oath was still refused; and the sufferings of the victims served only to rivet their doctrines more firmly in the minds of their hearers.<sup>1</sup>

De Witt had long sought to strengthen himself and

<sup>1</sup> L. Journ. xi. 700. Stat. of Realm, v. 575. Wilkins, Con. iv. 583. Burnet, i. 392—393. The act did not mention nonconform-

CHAP. his party with the protection of the king of France;  
 II. and Louis was not unwilling to purchase the services  
 A.D. 1665. of a man who governed the states of Holland, and  
 — through them was able to control the other provinces  
 of the republic. To him De Witt had communicated  
 several proposals for the partition of the Spanish  
 Netherlands; and the king, though he nourished a  
 more ambitious project in his own breast, to humour  
 the Dutchman, consented to enter into a negotiation  
 Sept. 17. respecting the conditions.<sup>1</sup> But, in 1665, Philip of  
 Spain died, leaving the crown, and all the dominions  
 dependent on it, to the infant his son, under the  
 regency of Marianne of Austria, the queen-mother.  
 Louis now determined, as he had previously intended,  
 to take possession of Flanders, under the pretence  
 that by the custom of several provinces in the Nether-  
 lands, called the right of devolution, those provinces  
 belonged to his wife, Maria Teresa, the daughter of  
 Philip by his first marriage. It was, indeed, true that  
 Louis by contract, and his young queen by a separate  
 instrument, had solemnly renounced all claim to the  
 succession to the Spanish monarchy in general, and to  
 Flanders, Burgundy, and Charolais in particular;<sup>2</sup> but  
 it was contended that the king had been released from  
 the obligation of the contract by the non-payment of

ing ministers, but included them under the description of persons  
 who had enjoyed ecclesiastical promotion, or preached at unlawful  
 conventicles.

<sup>1</sup> All the letters of d'Estrades, from his arrival in Holland in  
 1664, show how firmly this unfortunate statesman had devoted  
 himself to the interests of France.

<sup>2</sup> Dumont, vi. part i. 283, 288. By the law of devolution, which  
 prevailed in several provinces of the Netherlands, the right of inhe-  
 ritage was given to the children of the first marriage, even females,  
 to the exclusion of the issue by the second. Maria Teresa, the con-  
 sort of Louis, was the daughter of Philip of Spain by his first wife;  
 Charles, the inheritor of the monarchy, was his son by the second.

the marriage portion on the part of Spain, and that Maria Teresa had never been bound by the renun-  
 ciation, because it was made during her minority. It  
 chanced, however, that the Dutch, in virtue of the de-  
 fensive alliance concluded between them and France  
 in 1662, now called upon Louis to join as their ally in  
 the war against Charles; and it seemed impolitic to  
 provoke hostilities at the same moment with two such  
 powers as England and Spain. It was, indeed, easy to  
 elude the demand, by replying that a defensive treaty  
 did not bind, when the party claiming aid had pro-  
 voked the war; but, on the other hand, it was argued  
 that Louis, by cheerfully uniting with the States, would  
 render them less hostile to his intended occupation of  
 Flanders; and that, under the pretext of preventing  
 the descents of the English, he might covertly make  
 preparations, and assemble troops on the nearest parts  
 of the coast.<sup>1</sup> Louis followed this counsel: his am-  
 bassador informed Charles that unless peace were  
 speedily concluded, his master would feel himself  
 bound to take part against him in the war; and  
 the English king had the spirit to defy the power,  
 rather than submit to the dictation, of a foreign  
 prince.

In January the French monarch, though with many  
 expressions of regret, declared war; but, at the reclama-  
 tion of the English ambassador, granted three  
 months to British subjects to withdraw with their  
 effects from his territories.<sup>2</sup> The approach of a French

CHAP.  
 II.  
 A.D. 1665.  
 —  
 1666.  
 Jan. 16.

<sup>1</sup> Dumont, vi. part ii. p. 412. Œuvres de Louis XIV. ii. 5—  
 11, 25, 130.

<sup>2</sup> Dumont, part iii. 82. Clar. 282, 288. Miscel. Aul. 373.  
 Mémoires d'Estrades, iii. 54, 64. Charles, on his part, offered  
 freedom from molestation in person or property to all natives of  
 France or the United Provinces residing in or coming into his domi-

CHAP. II. force soon compelled Von Ghalen, bishop of Munster,  
 A.D. 1666. who, as the ally of Charles, had made a formidable  
 — inroad into the province of Overysse, to submit to a  
 April 8. disadvantageous peace; and the French agent at Co-  
 Feb. 1. penhagen prevailed on the king of Denmark to with-  
 Feb. 2. draw from his alliance with England, and to make  
 common cause with the States. Charles, on his side,  
 concluded a treaty with the king of Sweden, by which  
 each party engaged not to furnish munitions of war to  
 the enemies of the other; but failed in an attempt to  
 create an opposition to De Witt in Holland, through  
 the intrigues of De Buat, a partisan of the house of  
 Oct. 5. Orange, who soon afterwards forfeited his life as a  
 traitor to the republic.<sup>1</sup>

These negotiations occupied the first months of the new year; in May, Prince Rupert and the duke of Albemarle assumed the joint command of the English fleet, and insulted with impunity the coast of Holland. There was, however, but little cordiality between the two admirals. The pride of Rupert could hardly brook an equal in rank and authority; but the people remembered the former victories of Monk over the Dutch, and Charles gratified the general wish by associating that nobleman with the prince in the chief command. They had returned to the Downs, when advice was received that the Dutch navy was not in a state to put to sea for several weeks, and that a French squadron, under the duke of Beaufort, had reached Belleisle from the Mediterranean. Unfortunately neither report was true. De Ruyter, accompanied by De Witt, had already left the Texel;

nions, "especially to those of the reformed religion, whose interest  
 "should particularly be owned by him."—Ralph, i. 159.

<sup>1</sup> Clarendon, 327, 329, 333—336. Dumont, vi. part iii. 59, 83, 106.



the duke of Beaufort had not passed the Straits of Gibraltar. Rupert, however, received an order from court to hasten with twenty sail in search of the French, while Albemarle, with fifty-four, directed his course to the Gun-fleet. The next morning the duke, to his surprise, descried the Dutch force of more than eighty men-of-war lying at anchor off the North Foreland. He had so often spoken with contempt of the enemy, had so severely criticised the caution of the earl of Sandwich, that to retire without fighting would have exposed him to the censure and derision of the public. A council of war was instantly summoned; the majority, in opposition to their own judgment, acquiesced in the rash, but decided opinion of their commander, and the signal was made to bear down without delay on the enemy. No line was formed, no order observed; the blue squadron, which led the van, fought its way through the hostile fleet; but most of the ships of which it consisted were captured, or destroyed, or disabled. Darkness separated the combatants, and the action recommenced with the return of light. But, if Monk on the preceding day had fought for victory, he was now reduced to fight for safety. A reinforcement of sixteen sail added to the hopes and the courage of the enemy; nor was it without the most heroic exertions that the English were able to protract the unequal contest till night. Monk, having burnt a part of his disabled ships, and ordered the others to make for the nearest harbour, opposed in the morning sixteen, that remained, as a rear-guard to the pursuit of De Ruyter. But, in the hurry of their flight, they ran on the Galloper Sand, where the Prince Royal, the boast of the English navy, was lost, and where the rest would probably have shared its fate,

CHAP.  
II.  
A.D. 1666.  
—  
May 29.  
May 31.  
June 1.

June 2.

June 3.

CHAP. had not Rupert, with his squadron of twenty sail, at  
 II. last arrived to their relief. He had received orders to  
 A. D. 1666. — return from St. Helen's on the first day of the battle;  
 nor was it ever explained why he did not join Albermarle till the evening of the third. The force of the hostile fleets was now more nearly balanced; they renewed the engagement on the following morning; and having passed each other five times in line, separated under the cover of a mist.<sup>1</sup> Such was the result of this succession of obstinate and sanguinary engagements. That the Dutch had a just claim to the victory cannot be doubted; though, if we consider the fearful disparity of force, we must own that no disgrace could attach to the English. "They may be killed," exclaimed De Witt, "but they will not be conquered." At home, the conduct of Monk was severely and deservedly censured; but no one could convince him that he had acted imprudently in provoking the battle, or that he had not inflicted more injury than he received.<sup>2</sup>

Both fleets stood in need of repairs: both, by extraordinary efforts, were in a short time again at sea. They met; the victory was fiercely and obstinately disputed; but the better fortune, or more desperate valour, of the English prevailed. Few prizes were, however, made. With rash but successful daring, De Ruyter repeatedly turned on the pursuers, and kept them at bay till the fugitives found a secure asylum in the Weirings. Rupert and Monk rode for weeks tri-

<sup>1</sup> Com. Journals, 1667, Oct. 31. Clarendon, 343, 344. Coke, 144. Heath, 550. Le Clerc, ii. 139. Basnage, i. 773. Pepys, i. ii. 398—402, 410, 411, 412, 415, 424, 434, 435.

<sup>2</sup> Pepys, ii. 422. Com. Journ. Oct. 31. According to Evelyn, the English lost ten ships, one thousand seven hundred men killed and wounded, and two thousand taken (ii. 258); the Dutch acknowledged the loss of two admirals, seven captains, and one thousand eight hundred men.—Le Clerc, ii. 142.

umphant along the coast, interrupting the commerce, and insulting the pride of their enemies. At the suggestion of a native, Holmes, with a squadron of boats and fire-ships, was ordered to enter the channel between Ulie and Schelling, the usual rendezvous of vessels trading to the Baltic: in a short time two men-of-war, and one hundred and fifty merchantmen with their cargoes, were in flames, and the next day the neighbouring town of Brandaris, consisting of one thousand houses, was reduced to ashes. At the sight of the conflagration De Witt maddened with rage, and swore by the almighty God that he would never sheathe the sword till he had obtained his revenge; an oath which he religiously observed.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
II.  
A.D. 1666.  
August 8.  
August 9.  
August 10.

Louis was not unwilling that the two great maritime powers should exhaust themselves in this tremendous struggle. To his allies he had promised the co-operation of his fleet, but that promise was yet to be fulfilled; and instead of risking the French navy in battle against the English, he sought to occupy the attention of Charles by exciting rebellion in his dominions. With this view he employed agents to intrigue with the Catholics of Ireland, who had lost their lands by the late act of settlement; and encouraged the hopes of the English exiles, who persuaded themselves that their party was still powerful in England. Algernon Sydney hastened to Paris; to the French ministers he maintained that the interest of France demanded the establishment of a republic in England; and to the French king he presented a memorial soliciting the gift of one hundred thousand crowns to enable his party to commence operations

<sup>1</sup> Clarendon, 345. Pepys, ii. 444. Miscel. Aul. 411, 412. Mémoires d'Estrades, iii. 346, 361.

CHAP. against the English government. But Louis paused  
 II.  
 A.D. 1666. before he would part with so large a sum of money.

— In conclusion he offered Sydney twenty thousand crowns in the first instance, with a promise of additional aid if the rising should take place.<sup>1</sup>

August 13. About the middle of August, however, the duke of Beaufort, contrary to the general expectation, arrived at La Rochelle from the Mediterranean, and a plan was arranged between the two powers for the junction of their respective fleets in the British Channel. The Dutch, for this purpose, had already passed the Straits of Dover, when they descried the English under Prince Rupert. As De Ruyter, though on board, was confined by severe indisposition, the men betrayed a disinclination to fight without the presence and orders of their favourite commander; and the fleet ran close into the shore in St. John's Road, near Boulogne. Rupert dared not follow; he turned to oppose Beaufort, as he came up the Channel; but the violence of the wind compelled him to seek shelter at St. Helen's, and the French squadron had the good  
 Sept. 3. fortune to arrive in safety at Dieppe. Louis, alarmed at the proximity of his fleet to the superior force of the English, by repeated messages insisted that the Dutch should proceed to give it protection. But their ships had suffered severely from the weather; the admiral was still unable to take the command; and instead of joining their allies, they embraced the first opportunity of returning to their own ports. Beaufort, however, extricated himself from the danger, and stole his way down the Channel with no other loss than that of the Ruby, of fifty-four guns.<sup>2</sup>

f. <sup>1</sup> Louis XIV. ii. 203, and note *ibid.* Miscel. Aul. 433.

<sup>2</sup> Clarendon, 347. Heath, 553. Miscel. Aul. 418. Louis XIV. ii. 219, 221—226. Temple, i. 477.

## CHAPTER III.

GREAT FIRE OF LONDON—PROCEEDINGS IN PARLIAMENT—INSURRECTION IN SCOTLAND—SECRET TREATY WITH LOUIS—DUTCH FLEET IN THE THAMES—PEACE OF BREDÁ—FALL OF CLARENDON—TRIPLE ALLIANCE—SECRET NEGOTIATION WITH FRANCE—CONVERSION OF THE DUKE OF YORK—INTRIGUES TO ALTER THE SUCCESSION—DIVORCE OF LORD ROOS—VISIT OF THE DUCHESS OF ORLEANS—SECRET TREATY WITH FRANCE—DEATH OF THE DUCHESS—SECOND SECRET TREATY—MISCELLANEOUS EVENTS.

THE storm which had driven the English fleet into St. Helen's was productive of the most disastrous consequences by land. About two in the morning of Sunday, the 2nd of September, a fire burst out in Pudding Lane, near Fish Street, one of the most crowded quarters of the metropolis. It originated in a bakehouse; the buildings in the neighbourhood, formed of wood, with pitched roofs, quickly caught the flames; and the stores with which they were filled, consisting of those combustible articles used in the equipment of shipping, nourished the conflagration. To add to the mischief, the pipes from the New River were found empty,<sup>1</sup> and the engine which raised water from the Thames was reduced to ashes. The lord mayor arrived on the first alarm; but his

CHAP.  
III.  
A.D. 1666.  
—  
Sept. 2.

<sup>1</sup> On the authority of an old woman, the countess of Clarendon, and of a divine, Dr. Lloyd, whose brain had been affected by the study of the Apocalypse, Burnet gravely tells a story of one Grant, a papist, a partner in the works at Islington, having on the preceding Saturday turned the cocks, and carried away the keys.—Hist. i. 401. But the fire happened on the 2nd of September, and Higgons (Remarks, 219) proves from the books of the company that Grant had no share in the works before the 25th of that month.

CHAP. III.  
A.D. 1666. timidity and inexperience shrunk from the adoption of decisive measures: he refused for several hours to admit the aid of the military; and to those who advised the demolition of a range of houses, replied that he must previously obtain the consent of their respective owners.<sup>1</sup>

During the day, the wind, which blew from the east, hourly augmented in violence; and the fire spread with astonishing velocity, leaping from roof to roof, and frequently igniting houses at a distance, and in apparent security. The following night ("if night," says an eye-witness, "that could be called, which was "as light as day for ten miles round") presented a most magnificent but appalling spectacle. A vast column of fire, a mile in diameter, was seen ascending to the clouds; the flames, as they rose, were bent and broken, and shivered by the fury of the wind; and every blast scattered through the air innumerable flakes of fire, which, falling on inflammable substances, kindled new conflagrations. The lurid glare of the sky, the oppressive heat of the atmosphere, the crackling of the flames, and the falling of the houses and churches, combined to fill every breast with astonishment and terror.

Instead, however, of adverting to the natural causes of the calamity, causes too obvious to escape an observant eye, the public credulity listened to stories of malice and treachery. It was said and believed, that men had been apprehended carrying with them parcels of an unknown substance, which on compression pro-

<sup>1</sup> The duke of York says that the expedient of blowing up houses with gunpowder was suggested by an old woman (Macpher. Pap. i. 36); Evelyn by a party of sailors; but "some tenacious and "avaricious men, aldermen, &c., would not permit it, because their "houses must have been the first" (ii. 266).

duced heat and flame; that others had been seen throwing fire-balls into houses as they passed along the street; that the foreign enemy had combined with the republicans and papists to burn the city; and that the French residents in the capital, to the number of twenty thousand, had taken up arms, and were massacring every native who came in the way. These reports augmented the general terror and confusion. All were mingled together, men labouring to extinguish the flames, citizens conveying away their families and goods, crowds flying from the imaginary massacre, others in arms hastening to oppose the murderers, and mobs surrounding and ill-treating every stranger, foreigner, and reputed papist, who ventured into the streets.

Charles never appeared so deeply affected as at the sight of the conflagration. Breaking from his pleasures and his mistresses, he displayed an energy of mind and body of which his most intimate friends thought him no longer capable. Wherever the danger appeared the greatest, the king was to be found with his brother, mixing among the workmen, animating them by his example, and with his own hand rewarding their exertions.<sup>1</sup> He divided the city into districts, and gave the command of each district to one of the privy council. He ordered biscuits and other necessities to be brought from the royal stores for the relief of the families in the fields, and sent out strong patrols of his guards to prevent robbery, and to conduct to prison all persons suspected and arrested by

<sup>1</sup> "It is not indeed imaginable how extraordinary the vigilance and activity of the king and the duke was, even labouring in person, and being present to command, order, reward, or encourage workmen."—Evelyn, ii. 268. Life of James, i. 424.

CHAP. the populace, as the most likely means of preserving  
 III.  
 A.D. 1666. their lives.

— While the storm continued, the conflagration bade defiance to all the exertions of human ingenuity or power. In many places houses had been blown up or demolished; but the ignited flakes were carried over the empty space, or the ruins again took fire, or the flames unexpectedly turned in a new direction.

Sept. 5. On the evening of Wednesday the violence of the wind began to abate; the duke of York had saved the church of the Temple by the destruction of the

Sept. 6. neighbouring buildings; and the next morning a similar precaution was adopted by the king to preserve Westminster Abbey and the palace of Whitehall. About five in the evening the weather became calm; and every heart beat with the hope that this dreadful visitation was approaching to its close. But in the night new alarms were excited. The fire burst out again in the Temple; it was still seen to rage with unabated fury near Cripplegate, and a large body of flame made rapid advance towards the Tower. The duke and the other noblemen were immediately at

Sept. 7. their posts. With the aid of gunpowder large openings were made; Charles attended at the demolition of the houses on the graff near the magazine in the Tower; and the conflagration, being thus prohibited from extending its ravages, gradually died away, though months elapsed before the immense accumulation of ruins ceased to present appearances of internal heat and combustion.<sup>1</sup>

By this deplorable accident two-thirds of the metro-

<sup>1</sup> London Gazette, No. 85. Clarend. 348—352. Evelyn, ii. 263—267. Philips, 652. Burnet, i. 401, 402; and Pepys, Diary, iii. 16—35.



polis, the whole space from the Tower to the Temple, CHAP.  
 had been reduced to ashes. The number of houses III.  
A.D. 1666.  
 consumed amounted to thirteen thousand two hundred, of churches, including St. Paul's, to eighty-nine, covering three hundred and seventy-three acres within, and sixty-three without the walls. In the fields about Islington and Highgate were seen lying on the bare ground, or under huts hastily erected, two hundred thousand individuals, many in a state of utter destitution, and the others watching the small remnant of their property which they had snatched from the flames. Charles was indefatigable in his exertions to afford relief, and to procure them lodgings in the nearest towns and villages.<sup>1</sup>

Whoever considers the place in which the fire began, the violence of the wind, and the materials of which the houses were built, will not be at a loss to account for the origin and the extent of the conflagration. But it was an age in which political and religious prejudices had perverted the judgments of men. Some considered it an evident visitation of Providence in punishment of sin; but of what sin? Of the immorality of the king and the courtiers, replied the more rigid religionists; of the late rebellion, recriminated the Cavaliers.<sup>2</sup> Others attributed it to

<sup>1</sup> St. Trials, vi. 807. Evelyn, ii. 271.

<sup>2</sup> Two remarkable coincidences have been noticed. At the trials of certain conspirators in the preceding April, it appeared that they had formed a plot to set fire to London on the 3rd of September of the current year, that they might avail themselves of the confusion to overturn the government (London Gazette, Apr. 23—26); and it was about two in the morning of Sept. 2nd that the fire made its appearance. Again, in 1656, a treatise was advertised, purporting to show, from the Apocalypse, that in the year 1666 the Romish Babylon would be destroyed by fire.—Merc. Pol. in Burton's Diary, i. cxlvii. Now this great fire actually happened in 1666, the year foretold, though it destroyed not the Romish, but the English, Babylon.

CHAP. the disloyalty and revenge, either of the republicans,  
 III. who sought to destroy the seat of the monarchy, or  
 A.D. 1666. of the papists, who wished to punish the stronghold  
 — of orthodoxy. But of these charges, though the individuals suspected were examined before the council and the lord chief justice, though the House of Commons ordered a strict inquiry to be instituted, though every species of conjectural and hearsay evidence was admitted, yet no vestige of proof could ever be discovered. The report of the committee still exists, a complete refutation of the calumny.<sup>1</sup> Subsequently, however, on the Monument erected to perpetuate this calamitous event, it was, and long stood, recorded, that "The burning of this Protestant city was begun  
 "and carried on by the treachery and malice of the  
 "popish faction, in order to the effecting their horrid  
 "plot for the extirpating the Protestant religion and  
 "English liberties, and to introduce popery and  
 "heresy." Next to the guilt of him who perpetrates an atrocious crime, is the guilt of those who charge it on the innocent.<sup>2</sup>

Sept. 11. In the same month, when the parliament assembled,

<sup>1</sup> The examinations are printed in Howell's State Trials, vi. 807—866. One Hubert, a French Protestant, who formerly worked as a silversmith in the city, gave himself up as the incendiary, was examined before the committee (see his examination, p. 824), and, persisting in his story, was condemned and executed. The man was clearly insane. "Neither the judges nor any present at the trial "did believe him guilty; but that he was a poor distracted wretch, "weary of his life, and chose to part with it this way."—Clarendon, 353; see also Higgons on Burnet, 215.

<sup>2</sup> The Monument was begun in 1671, and finished in 1677; the inscription was written by Dr. Thomas Gale, afterwards dean of York.—Pennant's London, 347. Since, however, the first publication of this work, the passage mentioned in the text, with the following line in the Latin inscription: "Sed furor papisticus, qui "tam dira patravit, nondum restinguitur"—was erased, by order of the city, on the 6th Dec. 1830.

it became manifest that the popularity of the king was on the wane in the lower house. The late disaster had thrown a gloom over the public mind; and the murmurs of the people were echoed in the speeches of their representatives. The duke of Buckingham sought the company of the discontented; by tales of the royal extravagance and immorality, he sharpened their indignation and won their confidence; and in a short time a formidable party was arrayed against the advocates of the court. No man, indeed, could be more immoral than Buckingham himself; but Charles, to gratify the anger of Castlemaine, had banished him from court, and resentment made him a saint and a patriot. The Commons began, indeed, by voting a supply of one million eight hundred thousand pounds; yet, while they held out the money as a lure to the king, they required several concessions before they would deliver it into his hands. 1. According to ancient custom, they displayed their zeal against the Catholics. The attempt to fasten on them the charge of having fired the capital unfortunately failed; but a committee was appointed "to inquire into the insolence of the papists and the increase of popery;" and, though the information which they procured consisted of tales so childish and improbable that they dared not pronounce an opinion,<sup>1</sup> yet it served as the foundation of an address to the king; and Charles, in accordance with their petition, commanded, by proclamation, all priests and Jesuits to quit the kingdom; gave directions to the judges and magistrates to execute the laws against recusants, to disarm all papists, and to administer the oath of allegiance and supremacy to all persons suspected of popery, and

CHAP.  
III.  
A.D. 1666.

---

<sup>1</sup> It is published in the State Trials, vi. 851—856.

CHAP.  
III.  
A.D. 1666.

---

ordered the commanders of regiments to dismiss from the army every officer and soldier who should refuse the oaths, or had not received the sacrament.

2. In 1663 complaints had been made in parliament that the agricultural interest of England was sacrificed to that of Ireland; that the annual importation of Irish cattle, amounting to more than sixty thousand beeves, and a proportionate number of sheep, depressed the prices in the English market; and that the English farmers were no longer able to pay their rents to their landlords, or their taxes to the king. The result was an act prohibiting, under severe penalties, the importation of cattle from the Irish to the English ports. There now remained but one resource for the Irish farmer, the introduction of the dead carcase in place of the live animal; and to meet this a bill was brought in during the session at Oxford, to extend the prohibition to salt beef, bacon, and pork. It was lost by the hasty prorogation of parliament, but revived in the present session. Never, for many years, had any question excited such agitation in the public mind, or such animosities in the two houses. On the one part it was contended that the parliament was bound in duty to protect the agricultural interest, which comprised not only the farmers and their servants, but all the landlords in the kingdom: on the other, that the people had a right to purchase their food at the cheapest market; that it was unjust to protect one interest at the expense of another; and that, if the Irish were not allowed to export their cattle, they would not be able to import the manufactures of England. The bill, after much contestation, was sent to the Lords, and returned by them with amendments to which the Commons objected. The oppo-

nents of the measure hoped, by fomenting the dis-  
 sension, to suppress the bill; but the king was so  
 anxious not to lose by delay the supply which had  
 been voted, and so alarmed by the tumultuous  
 meetings of the agriculturists in the country, that  
 he commanded the duke of York and his friends in  
 the House of Lords to desist from their opposition.  
 They withdrew before the division, and the bill was  
 suffered to pass into a law.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
 III.  
 A.D. 1666.

3. Reports were circulated that the supplies pre-  
 viously voted for the war had been diverted from their  
 original destination; and a bill was carried through  
 the Commons, appointing commissioners to audit the  
 public accounts. Charles, at the earnest solicitation  
 of Sir George Carteret, treasurer of the navy, and  
 of Cooper, Lord Ashley, the treasurer of the prize-  
 money, openly declared that he would never yield his  
 consent. It was a direct invasion of the royal prero-  
 gative; it would prevent men from taking office, if,  
 instead of the regular method of auditing accounts,  
 they were to be interrogated at will by the Commons,  
 and subjected to the arbitrary judgment of that house;  
 and, which was the most cogent argument of all, it  
 would reveal to the public the many and valuable  
 grants which the king had made of the national money

<sup>1</sup> Miscel. Aul. 432, 436, 437, 439. Coke, 131—144. Cla-  
 rendon, 371—383. Carte, ii. 317—322, 329—334. In the course  
 of these debates, Buckingham said that whoever opposed the bill  
 must have an Irish interest in his heart, or an Irish intellect in his  
 head. Lord Ossory challenged him, but he chose to mistake the  
 place of meeting, and to give an account of the whole proceeding to  
 the house. Both were put under custody, and afterwards reconciled.  
 Next he quarrelled with Lord Dorchester respecting a seat in a con-  
 ference with the Commons. The marquess in the scuffle lost his  
 periwig, the duke a handful of hair. The two champions were  
 sent to the Tower, and afterwards reconciled.—L. Journ. xii. 18,  
 19, 52. Clarendon, 376—379. Miscel. Aul. 423—426.

CHAP. to his favourites and mistresses. But to oppose it  
 III.  
 A.D. 1666. openly might provoke and confirm suspicion; when  
 — the bill came to the upper house, the Lords voted an  
 address to the king to appoint a commission of inquiry;  
 the Commons resolved that such an address, pending  
 the bill, was unparliamentary, and the two houses  
 found themselves involved in an endless controversy  
 respecting their rights and privileges. Charles, how-  
 ever, was now assailed from a different quarter. His  
 opponents threatened to impeach the countess of  
 Castlemaine; and his anxiety to screen her from pro-  
 secution induced him to employ his influence in favour  
 1667.  
 Jan. 24. of the bill. The Lords passed it with a few trifling  
 amendments; and then its supporters, as if their only  
 object had been to excite the distrust of the nation,  
 instead of proceeding with a measure which they had  
 so warmly pursued, suffered the bill to lie without  
 notice on the table. The means of raising the supply  
 by a poll-tax, and by eleven monthly assessments,  
 were voted, and the king, having obtained his end,  
 Feb. 8. prorogued the parliament.<sup>1</sup>

During this session, the council was seriously alarmed  
 by the news of an insurrection in Scotland, an insur-  
 rection attributed at first to foreign intrigue, but pro-  
 voked in reality by religious persecution. The eastern  
 and northern counties had apparently acquiesced in the

<sup>1</sup> L. Journ. xii. 34, 47, 52, 72, 88. C. Journal, Jan. 24, Feb. 7.  
 Clarendon, 368, 374. Charles, however, in the April following, did  
 appoint a commission of lords and commons, "for taking accounts  
 "of the several sums of money which had been raised and assigned  
 "to his majesty's use during the war, and of all such money and  
 "profits as had been made of prizes taken since the beginning of  
 "the war, with power to call to account all treasurers, receivers,  
 "&c., and all such authority as might serve for the effectual and im-  
 "partial execution of the said commission." They sat, continued  
 the inquiry for many months, and made reports to the House of  
 Commons. There was, however, no important result.

restoration of episcopacy ; but in the west and south a strong spirit of resistance had been manifested. Most of the ministers were ejected, and their places supplied by clergymen, whose youth and habits were not calculated to render them acceptable to the people. When they took possession of their cures, they were generally received with contumely, sometimes with volleys of stones from crowds of women and children ; and when they ascended the pulpit, their churches were deserted by the majority of the parishioners. These followed their former pastor to the barn and the moor ; the circumstances under which they met kindled the enthusiasm both of the preacher and his hearers ; and they separated with a firm determination to adhere to the national covenant, and to oppose to the death the “antichristian” institution of bishops. The parliament made laws to put down conventicles and enforce attendance at the parish church ; the High Commission court endeavoured to subdue the most refractory by arbitrary and disproportionate punishments ; and, as a last resource, a body of soldiers, under Sir James Turner, was sent into the west to levy fines and secure obedience to the law. Without attaching entire credit to the exaggerated tales of the sufferers,<sup>1</sup> we may presume that these military missionaries did not discharge their duties in a manner to please or conciliate the natives ; numerous frays occurred between them and the religionists on whom they were quartered ; one of the soldiers was shot at Dalry in Galloway ; the offenders secured his companions for their own safety ; their number quickly increased to two hundred men ;

CHAP.  
III.  
A.D. 1667.

1666.  
Nov. 14.

<sup>1</sup> Turner himself says, “Heere I shall take leave once for all to write ane undoubted truth, which is, that I was so farre from exceeding or transgressing my commission and instructions, that I never came the full length of them.”—Memoirs, 144.

- CHAP. they surprised and made prisoner Sir James Turner  
 III.  
 A.D. 1666. himself; and, astonished at their success, began to  
 —  
 Nov. 15. deliberate respecting their future proceedings. They  
 never exceeded eleven hundred men; but, on the  
 ground that "God was able to save by few as well as  
 Nov. 26. "by many," they chose officers, renewed the covenant,  
 and resolved to march towards Edinburgh. The night,  
 which was cold and dark, they spent at Bathgate; in  
 the morning, relying on the aid of their friends within  
 Nov. 27. the city, they continued to advance; but the gates  
 were shut; and the royal army under Dalziel followed  
 their footsteps. They retreated from Collingtown to  
 Nov. 28. Rullion Green, near the Pentland Hills, where their  
 commander, Colonel Wallace, faced the enemy. Of  
 the ministers who accompanied them, Crookshank and  
 Maccormick, natives of Ireland, took their station  
 among the cavalry to fight the battle of the Lord;  
 Welch and Semple, natives of Scotland, ascended a  
 neighbouring eminence to pray. The former fell in  
 the first charge; the latter, as soon as they saw the  
 loss of the battle, saved their lives by flight. About  
 fifty of the insurgents were left dead on the field, and  
 one hundred and thirty were made prisoners. It was  
 a time when, perhaps, some effect might have been pro-  
 duced by the lenity of government; but the prelates  
 deemed it more prudent to intimidate by severity.  
 Dec. 7. Twenty were executed in the capital, and about the  
 same number in Glasgow, Ayr, and Dumfries. All  
 Dec. 14. refused the oath, and died professing their adhesion to  
 Dec. 22. the covenant. The king ordered a rigorous inquiry to  
 be made into the origin of the insurrection; and the  
 chief of the prisoners were tortured in the "boots."  
 That they had received promises from their brethren  
 in Holland could not be doubted; but no disclosure of



the secret was drawn from them by torture ; Charles became satisfied that persecution had goaded them to resistance ; and an order was issued that the Whigs (the name by which the covenanters were now designated) should be treated with less severity.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
III.  
A.D. 1667.  
—

The suppression of this tumult relieved the king from one source of disquietude : there remained another, which he knew not how to remove—the poverty of the exchequer. To prepare the fleet for sea required an immediate supply of money ; and the grant made by the parliament, though liberal in the amount, offered but a distant resource. In the former years the royal wants had been promptly accommodated by the bankers, a few opulent individuals, members of the company of goldsmiths, and aldermen in the city. These it was customary to introduce into the royal presence ; they were acquainted with the amount of the intended loan ; each subscribed for such portion as he chose to take, and received in return the assignment of some branch of the public revenue, entitling him to its produce till the capital, with the interest at eight per cent., should be entirely discharged.<sup>2</sup> But

<sup>1</sup> Kirkton, 229—255. Wodrow, 247—256. App. 86, 87, 88. Burnet, i. 451. Turner's Mem. 149—187. "The poor people, who were in contempt called whiggs, became name-fathers to all that owned an honest interest in Britain, who were called whiggs after them even at the court of England : so strangely does Providence improve man's mistakes for the furthering of the Lord's purpose."—Kirkton, 255.

<sup>2</sup> Clarendon, 393—396, 314—315. Life of James, i. 425. Macpherson Pap. i. 367. The bankers were accustomed to charge eight per cent. on loans, and to give six per cent. on deposits. The manner of payment may be understood from the following order in council, published in March of this year : "That all persons who had lent money for his Majesty's service in the present war, upon the credit of the late act for 125,000*l.*, whose orders were of the numbers of 99, 100, and so forwards to 126, should take notice that there remained money for them in bank at the receipt of his

CHAP. this expedient was now impracticable, on account of  
 III.  
 A.D. 1667. the embarrassments, caused by the plague and the fire,  
 — in mercantile and pecuniary transactions. The bankers  
 had suffered considerable losses; money had grown  
 scarce; the destruction of merchandise had diminished  
 the receipt of the customs and excise; and the inability  
 of the treasury to fulfil its engagements had impaired  
 the royal credit. In an evil hour, Sir William Coven-  
 try proposed to lay up the larger ships in ordinary, and  
 to equip only two squadrons of light frigates, one to  
 harass the enemy's trade in the Channel, and the other  
 that in the German Ocean. The duke of York ob-  
 jected, with considerable force, that such an expedient  
 was in truth an abandonment of the sovereignty of  
 the sea, and an invitation to the Dutch to insult the  
 English coast, and plunder the maritime counties. But  
 the difficulty of procuring money, and the expecta-  
 tion of a speedy peace, weighed with the rest of the  
 council; and Charles consented to a measure which  
 subsequently gave him keener regret, and brought on  
 him more lasting disgrace, than, perhaps, any other  
 act of his government.

The king of France, who had completed his pre-  
 parations for the invasion of Flanders in the spring,  
 was become anxious to free himself from the incum-  
 brance of the war with England. Through Ruvigni,  
 first cousin to Lady Russell, and agent of the French  
 Protestants at his court, he persuaded the earl of St.  
 Alban's, who, it was rumoured, had privately married  
 the queen-mother, to proceed to London and sound the

"Majesty's exchequer, ready to pay both their principal and interest,  
 "and should therefore cause their respective orders and tallies to  
 "be brought into the exchequer; and give their acquittances, that  
 "they might receive their loans and interests according to the said  
 "act."

disposition of Charles. The English king earnestly wished to try again his fortune by sea ; but the difficulty of fitting out the fleet subdued his repugnance to a treaty, and he consented to send commissioners to Breda, on condition that an armistice should accompany the negotiation.<sup>1</sup> Louis met with greater difficulty on the part of the States, who, aware that his intended conquest of Flanders must prove injurious to their interests, sought to divert him from his purpose by continuing the war, from which he had recently pledged himself not to withdraw without their consent. But the monarch, irritated by their objections and delays, discovered an expedient by which he disappointed their hopes. Without the knowledge of the ministers at either court, he opened a secret negotiation with Charles. Each prince addressed his letters to the queen Henrietta Maria, Louis as to his aunt, Charles as to his mother ; and that princess forwarded them to their destination, under covers as from herself. Neither had any real cause of hostility against the other, and the only difficulty arose from a desire in the English king to recover the isles in the West Indies, which had been taken by the French, and on the part of Louis to obtain a pledge that England should not oppose his designs against Spain. At length they compromised these pretensions, and it was agreed that each should abstain from hostilities against the other ; that France should restore her conquests in the West Indies ; that England, during the space of one year, should afford no assistance to Spain ; and that so much of this treaty as was fit to meet the eye of the public should be afterwards inserted in a public treaty. Both kings solemnly pledged themselves to the observance

CHAP.  
III.  
A.D. 1667.

1666.  
Dec. 14.

April 14.

<sup>1</sup> Clarendon, 419.

CHAP. of the articles in a paper under their respective signa-  
 III.  
 A.D. 1667. tures, which for greater privacy and security was deposited with Henrietta Maria as their common relation and friend.<sup>1</sup>

While the secret treaty proceeded, the French ambassador reiterated his demands at the Hague, and four out of the seven provinces, eager for peace, resolved to withdraw their contributions towards the expenses of the war. De Witt with his party was  
 May 14. compelled to yield; Breda was named for the place of the congress, and in the month of May the ambassadors of the several powers assembled. But the pensionary still thirsted for revenge: he knew that the Dutch fleet was ready to sail, and that England had no fleet to oppose to it; and he determined not to throw away the opportunity which fortune had placed in his hands. When the armistice was proposed, the Dutch immediately refused their consent, on the ground that it would occupy as much time to discuss its conditions as those of the peace itself; and while the English argued, and the French remonstrated, De Ruyter, accompanied by the brother of De Witt, ordered the fleet, to the amount of seventy sail, to join him in separate squadrons at the buoy off the Nore.

The English government was not taken by surprise. The warnings of the duke of York had awakened them to a sense of the danger; and three months before,  
 Feb. 27. orders had been issued to raise a fort at Sheerness, to throw a boom across the Medway at the stakes, to mount the guns on the batteries, and to prepare a competent number of fireships. But it was not easy

<sup>1</sup> For the knowledge of this singular transaction, the first of the secret treaties between Louis and Charles, we are indebted to Louis himself, in his *Œuvres*, ii. 256, 286, 288, 289; v. 399, 405.

to carry these orders into execution. The commis-  
 sioners of the navy already owed more than nine hun-  
 dred thousand pounds. Their credit was gone; the  
 sailors refused to serve, the labourers to work, the  
 merchants to sell, without immediate payment; and to  
 procure ready money, either by application to the  
 treasury, or by loan from the bankers, was impossible.<sup>1</sup>  
 De Ruyter, that he might distract the attention of the  
 council, ordered one division of his fleet to sail up the  
 Thames as far as Gravesend, and the other to destroy,  
 which was his chief object, the shipping in the Medway.  
 The fort of Sheerness opposed but a feeble resistance.  
 Though Charles, to hasten the completion of the works,  
 had visited them twice during the winter, they were  
 still in an unfinished state, and a few broadsides  
 levelled them with the ground. At the first alarm,  
 Monk, by the royal order, hastened to the mouth of the  
 Medway. He erected batteries, moored guard-ships  
 for the protection of the boom, and sunk five ships  
 before it in the narrowest part of the channel. He  
 had not completed these preparations, when the Dutch  
 advanced with the wind and tide in their favour; but  
 the obstruction in the passage opposed an insuperable  
 bar to their progress, and they were compelled to fall  
 back with the ebb. During the night, however, they  
 discovered a new channel, sufficiently deep for large  
 ships at high water, and in the morning worked their  
 way without impediment in this direction. The men-  
 of-war immediately pointed their guns against the  
 batteries; and a heavy fireship, running against the  
 boom, hung upon it. A second followed in like man-  
 ner; the chain broke under their united weight; and,  
 in a short time, the guard-ships were in a blaze. The

CHAP.  
 III.  
 A.D. 1667.

June 9.

June 11.

June 12.

<sup>1</sup> See Pepys, iii. 156, 162, 169, 174.

CHAP. hull of the Royal Charles, a first-rate, which through  
 III.  
 A.D. 1667. neglect of orders had not been removed, became the  
 — prize of the conquerors.

Monk, disappointed but not disheartened, hastened back to Upnor Castle. The night was employed in mounting guns and collecting ammunition: in the  
 June 13. morning the batteries were manned with volunteers from the navy; and the return of the tide exhibited a sight most galling to the pride of every Englishman,—the Dutch fleet advancing triumphantly up the river. Two men-of-war led the line; then came six enormous fire-ships; after them followed the rest of the squadron. The men-of-war anchored to receive and return the fire of the batteries; and the fire-ships, passing behind them, pursued their course, reducing to ashes the three first-rates, the Royal James, the Oak, and the London. At the ebb, their commander, Van Ghent, whether he had fully executed his orders, or was intimidated by the warm reception which he experienced, made the signal to the fleet to fall down the river, and, having burnt two of his own vessels which had grounded, rejoined in safety the other division at the Nore.<sup>1</sup>

To the English, if we consider the force of the enemy and the defenceless state of the river, the loss was much less than they had reason to expect; but the disgrace sunk deep into the heart of the king, and the hearts of his subjects. That England, so lately the mistress of the ocean, should be unable to meet her enemies at sea, and that the Dutch, whom she had so often defeated, should ride triumphant in her rivers, burn her ships, and scatter dismay through the capital and the country, were universally subjects of

<sup>1</sup> C. Journals, Oct. 31. Pepys, iii. 237, 241, 242, 245, 250; v. 17. Evelyn, ii. 287, 288, 291.

grief and indignation. Many attributed it to that eternal source of every calamity, the imaginary machinations of the papists;<sup>1</sup> others were taught to believe that the king had secretly leagued with the enemy for the purpose of depressing the nation, that he might the more easily establish a despotic government; and numbers contrasted the disastrous result of the present war against the Dutch under a king, with the glorious result of the former war under a protector. But their reasoning was evidently unjust. Whatever might be the faults of Charles, he had conducted the war with equal spirit, and till this moment with more signal success. Even the disgrace at Chatham, originating from a measure which had been forced upon him by pecuniary distress, had not in reality diminished the power nor impaired the resources of the country.

For six weeks De Ruyter continued to sweep the English coast. But his attempts to burn the ships at Portsmouth, Plymouth, and Torbay were successively defeated; and, though he twice threatened to remount the Thames, the spirited opposition with which he was received by a squadron of eighteen sail, under Sir Edward Spragge, induced him to renounce the design. In the meantime the Dutch negotiators, who had purposely protracted the conferences at Breda, began to be alarmed at the rapid progress of the French army in Flanders; for Louis, soon after his secret treaty with Charles, passed the frontiers with an army of seventy thousand men, nominally commanded by himself, but really under the guidance of Turenne. Castel-Rodrigo, the Spanish governor, dismantled several fortresses; Binche, Tournay, Oudenarde, Courtrai, and

CHAP.  
III.  
A.D. 1667.

May 11.

<sup>1</sup> Pepys, iii. 245, 252.

CHAP. III. Douai opened their gates ; and Louis was actually oc-  
 A.D. 1667. cupied in the siege of Lisle, when the States hastened  
 — to withdraw their objections to the proposals of Eng-  
 land, that they might have leisure to secure themselves  
 against the ambition of their powerful ally.<sup>1</sup> Three  
 treaties were signed by the English commissioners on  
 July 21. the same day. By one with Holland it was stipu-  
 lated that both parties should forget past injuries,  
 and remain in their present condition, which con-  
 firmed to the States the possession of the disputed  
 island of Pulerone, and to the English their conquests  
 of Albany and New York. By the second with  
 France, Louis obtained the restoration of Nova Scotia,  
 and Charles that of Antigua, Montserrat, and part of  
 St. Kitt's ; and by the last with Denmark, which  
 country had acceded to the war as the ally of the  
 Dutch, the relations of amity were re-established be-  
 tween the two crowns.<sup>2</sup>

There was nothing in the conditions of peace to

<sup>1</sup> The success of Louis produced a benefit to England, which was unexpected ; it induced "one Brewer, with about fifty Walloons, " who wrought and dyed fine woollen cloths," to migrate to this kingdom. "The king entertained them against our barbarous law, " or rather usage, against foreigners partaking the benefit of natural-  
 " born English ; and by them the English, in a few years, were in-  
 " structed to make and dye fine woollen cloths cheaper by forty per  
 " cent. than they could do before."—Coke, ii. 161.

<sup>2</sup> See them in Dumont, vii. part i. 40—57 ; Mém. d'Estrades, iv. 395—428 ; Temple, i. 481. On the departure of the Dutch fleet from the river, the king resolved to assemble the parliament ; Clarendon objected that it could not be done lawfully before the 10th of October, the day to which parliament had been prorogued. The only remedy was the dissolution of the present, and the calling of a new parliament. But this objection was overruled ; and the two houses, in obedience to the king's proclamation of June 26, met on July 25. But their services were no longer wanted : the peace was already signed ; and Charles on the 29th prorogued the parliament to Oct. 10—a measure which excited many complaints on account of the expense and trouble to which the members had been unnecessarily subjected.—See Clarendon, continuation, 421—425, 427 ; L. Journ. xii. 112—114.



mortify the pride or to prejudice the interests of the nation; yet the calamities which had accompanied the war, the plague, the fire, and the disgrace at Chatham, though over the first two no human counsels could have had any control, had soured the temper of the people; and Charles, anxious to divert attention from his own misconduct, was not unwilling to sacrifice a victim to the public discontent. Ever since the restoration, Clarendon had exercised the power, though without the name, of prime minister; and to his pernicious counsels it was become the fashion to attribute every national calamity. It must be confessed that, with a correct judgment and brilliant talents, he had contrived, whether it arose from the infirmity of his nature or the necessity of his situation, to make himself enemies among every class of men. The courtiers had been alienated from him by the haughtiness of his manner, and his perpetual opposition to their suits, their projects, and their extravagance; the friends of liberty, by his strenuous advocacy of every claim which he conceived to belong to the prerogative, and his marked antipathy to every doctrine which seemed to him to savour of republicanism; and the Catholics, the Presbyterians, and the several classes of dissenters, by the belief that through his obstinate and successful opposition they had been deprived of the indulgence to tender consciences promised by the king in his declaration from Breda. He had offended the House of Commons by reproaching them with conduct similar to that of the long parliament, and the House of Lords by complaining that they suffered the Commons to usurp the lead in public business, and were content with maintaining their own privileges.<sup>1</sup> The king,

CHAP.  
III.  
A.D. 1667.

<sup>1</sup> Clarendon, 383—385.

CHAP. indeed, had been accustomed to listen to him with  
 III. respect, almost with awe. But these sentiments  
 A.D. 1667. — gradually wore away. The courtiers mimicked the gravity of Clarendon in the royal presence; they ridiculed his person and manner; they charged him with interested motives; and represented him as a morose pedagogue, claiming to retain the same control over the mind of the man, which he had once exercised over that of the boy. Charles laughed and reproved; but frequency of repetition insensibly produced effect; and feelings of suspicion and aversion were occasionally awakened in the royal breast. Nor did Clarendon himself fail to aid the efforts of his enemies. He often contradicted the favourite opinions of the king; sometimes carried measures against him in the House of Lords; and, on more than one occasion, so far forgot himself at the council-table, as to speak with a vehemence and authority which hurt the pride of the monarch. His opposition in the House of Lords to the bill for indulgence to tender consciences was never forgotten; and recently, when the plan of putting the treasury in commission was debated during the parliament at Oxford, his conduct had given deep and lasting offence. He was at last taught to feel that, though he might still be consulted as formerly, he no longer enjoyed the royal friendship; and his political opponents, seeing the slippery ground on which he stood, laboured to precipitate his fall.<sup>1</sup>

The first attempt was made by the earl of Bristol in 1663. The reader is aware that it failed; and the failure served for a time to confirm the power of the chancellor. Still he grew more unpopular; men of

<sup>1</sup> Clarendon, 245, 248, 321, 358, 361. Life of James, i. 398, 428. Pepys, iv. 268.

opposite interests found their way into the council; his great friend and supporter, the earl of Southampton, died; and the countess of Castlemaine and the duke of Buckingham leagued together to effect his overthrow. To the lady he had given mortal offence by forbidding his wife to visit her, a prohibition which he refused to withdraw even at the request of the king.<sup>1</sup> Buckingham, during the last session, had placed himself in opposition to the court, and declared open war against Charles and his mistress. But his intrigues with the disaffected had been betrayed by one of the agents; and, after the prorogation, the king deprived him of all the offices which he held under the crown, and ordered him to surrender himself to the lieutenant of the Tower. He absconded, but fortunately the agent died, and the duke, having made his peace with Castlemaine, presented himself to the lieutenant, was examined before the council, discharged, permitted to kiss the king's hand, and restored to his former employments.<sup>2</sup> From that moment the doom of Clarendon was sealed. When the Dutch fleet rode victorious in the mouth of the river he had advised the king to dissolve the parliament, and support the troops on the coast by forced contributions from the neighbouring counties, to be repaid out of the next supply. This counsel was divulged by some of his enemies, and represented as a plan to govern the kingdom with a standing army in the place of the parliament. The imputation was everywhere received with expressions of abhorrence, and provoked the additional charges of venality and

CHAP.  
III.  
A.D. 1667.  
—

Feb. 8.

March 11.

June 18.

July 16.

<sup>1</sup> Clarendon, 361. Life of James, i. 428. Macpherson, 35, 37.

<sup>2</sup> Clarendon, 434. Pepys, iii. 276, 287, 288, 292. Carte, ii. 347, 349.

CHAP. ambition. The presents which he had been in the  
 III.  
 A.D. 1667. habit of receiving from all who sought his friendship  
 — or protection, were held forth as proofs of his rapacity ;  
 that magnificent pile, called Clarendon House, was  
 said to be so far beyond the resources of his private  
 fortune that it must have been raised with the aid of  
 money received from the enemies of his country ; and  
 the marriage of his daughter to the duke of York was  
 attributed to his desire of becoming the father of a  
 race of monarchs ; a desire which had moreover led  
 him to introduce to the royal bed a princess incapable  
 of bearing children, that the crown might descend to  
 the issue of the duchess.<sup>1</sup> The latter charge was not  
 only circulated in public, but insinuated to Charles  
 himself, together with the information that the con-  
 vention parliament would have settled a much more  
 ample revenue on the crown, had not its liberality  
 been checked by the jealousy or the presumption of  
 Clarendon.<sup>2</sup> If the king appeared to listen to these  
 suggestions, he still refused to believe that the chan-  
 cellor had been unfaithful to his trust in any point of  
 importance ; but he was daily beset by Buckingham,  
 Arlington, Sir William Coventry, and Lady Castle-  
 maine, who represented to him the discontent of the  
 nation, the power of the chancellor's enemies, and the  
 probable consequences of an impeachment in parlia-  
 ment ; and he at last informed that minister, through

<sup>1</sup> "How far this jealousy may have entered into the king him-  
 self, to make him more easily part with his minister, I leave it  
 "for others to guess."—Life of James, i. 393. Burnet, i. 435.

<sup>2</sup> "Some have thought, not improbably, that this remissness of  
 "his proceeded from a jealousy that the king was inwardly in-  
 "clined to popery."—Life of James, i. 393. On the contrary, it is  
 said by Sir William Coventry, that it proceeded from an over-  
 weening opinion of his own influence, "that he could have the  
 "command of parliaments for ever."—Pepys, iv. 276.

the duke of York, that he expected him to resign, as an expedient by which he might at the same time save himself from prosecution, and spare his sovereign the pain of taking his office from him.

But the pride of Clarendon scorned to bend to the storm; and consciousness of innocence urged him to brave the malice of his enemies. He waited on the king, and avowed his determination not to resign—it would amount to a confession of guilt; expressed a hope that the seal would not be taken from him—it would prove that his sovereign was dissatisfied with his services; and conjured him to disbelieve the suggestions of Lady Castlemaine—for she was an angry and vindictive woman. After a conference of two hours he retired, leaving the king disappointed by his obstinacy, and offended by his allusions to “the lady.” The duke of York pleaded strongly in behalf of his father-in-law. But he himself was no longer in favour; the influence of the brother yielded to that of the mistress; and the chancellor received a positive order by Morrice to surrender the great seal, which was delivered to Sir Orlando Bridgeman, chief justice of the Common Pleas.<sup>1</sup>

In six weeks, the parliament assembled. Buckingham had previously been restored to his place in the council and the bedchamber ; and Bristol, issuing from his retirement, had appeared again at court. To an

<sup>1</sup> Clarendon, 422—425, 427, 435—440. Life of James, i. 427—429. Macpherson Pap. 138. Pepys, iii. 332, 338. Pepys tells a laughable story of Castlemaine, who, when she heard about noon that Clarendon had left the king after their interview, leaped out of bed, and ran into the aviary, that she might observe his countenance as he passed (334). Bridgeman was unfortunate in his promotion. Afraid of deciding wrong, he laboured to please both sides, and always gave something to each of the contending parties in his court. He forfeited his reputation.—North's Lives, &c. i. 179.

CHAP. address of thanks from the two houses for the removal  
 III.  
 A.D. 1667. of the chancellor, the king replied by promising never  
 —  
 Oct. 15. more to employ him in any capacity whatsoever. It  
 may be that by this promise he hoped to satisfy the  
 enemies of Clarendon; but they argued that the  
 fallen statesman might, on some future day, recover  
 the favour of his sovereign, or be restored by his  
 son-in-law, should that prince succeed to the throne;  
 their personal safety demanded precautions against  
 his subsequent revenge; and, to consummate his ruin,  
 it was resolved to proceed against him by impeach-  
 Nov. 6. ment. Seventeen charges were fabricated in a  
 committee of the lower house, imputing to him  
 venality and cruelty in the discharge of his office of  
 chancellor, the acquisition by unlawful means of enor-  
 mous wealth, the sale of Dunkirk to France, the dis-  
 closure of the king's secrets to his enemies, and the  
 design of introducing a military government without  
 the intervention of parliament. Nothing, however,  
 could be more informal than the proceedings on this  
 occasion. No papers were ordered, no witnesses were  
 examined; the several charges were adopted on the  
 credit of members, who engaged to produce proof  
 whenever it might be deemed necessary; and the Com-  
 mons in a body impeached Clarendon at the bar of the  
 House of Lords of high treason, and other crimes and  
 misdemeanours, requesting, at the same time, that he  
 Nov. 12. might be committed to custody, till they should exhibit  
 articles against him.<sup>1</sup>

It is probable, that from the absence of the duke of  
 York (he was confined to his chamber by the small-  
 pox) the enemies of Clarendon had promised them-

<sup>1</sup> C. Journals, Nov. 6, 8, 11. State Trials, vi. 330. Clarendon,  
 445—448, 450. Life of James, i. 431. Pepys, iii. 410, 411, 420.

selves an easy victory. But the duke commissioned his friends to defend his father-in-law; the bishops felt themselves bound to support him as the patron of orthodoxy; and several peers, convinced of his innocence, cheerfully seconded their efforts. They did not, indeed, dare openly to advocate his cause, but they intrenched themselves behind forms and privileges; they contended that to commit on a general charge was contrary to ancient practice; that the first precedent in its favour was furnished by the impeachment of the earl of Strafford, a precedent which the house would not follow, because the attainder had been reversed, and the proceedings erased from the journals; and they maintained that the Lords ought to be careful how they sanctioned a pretension which might prove in future times prejudicial to them and their posterity. After several animated debates, it was twice resolved, by a small majority, that the accused should not be committed, because no specific charge was contained in the impeachment.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
III.  
A.D. 1667.

Nov. 14.

Nov. 20.

The Commons resented this decision of the Lords; conferences were repeatedly held, and each house pertinaciously adhered to its former opinion. The king's perplexity daily increased. He observed that the proceedings began to take the same course as in the impeachment of the earl of Strafford; and the calamities which followed the condemnation of that nobleman stared him in the face. He proposed, as an expedient, that the earl should clandestinely leave the kingdom; but no argument, no entreaty, could prevail on Cla-

<sup>1</sup> Clar. 450. L. Journ. 135—137. Pepys, iii. 415. Clarendon, in a letter to Ormond, says, "I must not omit to tell you that the "duke of York hath been, and is, as gracious to me, and as much "concerned for me as is possible. I have not many other friends to "brag of."—Carte, ii. App. 38.

CHAP. rendon to take a step which he deemed derogatory  
 III.  
 A.D. 1667. to his character ; and the monarch, irritated by his  
 — obstinacy, began to speak of him in terms of aver-  
 sion. His enemies now ventured to make use of the  
 royal name. It was rumoured that the king had  
 also offences to punish ; that Clarendon, to thwart  
 him in his amour with the beautiful Miss Stewart,  
 had persuaded her to marry the duke of Richmond.  
 Nov. 16. The earl, in a letter which he sent by the lord  
 keeper, denied this charge ;<sup>1</sup> the king read it, burnt  
 it deliberately in the flame of a candle, and coolly  
 replied, that he was unable to understand its con-  
 tents, but wondered what Clarendon was doing in  
 England.<sup>2</sup>

This hint, however, was lost on the determined  
 mind of the fallen minister. It was followed by an  
 unavowed message delivered by the bishop of Here-  
 ford ; the same advice was then urged by the French  
 ambassador ; and, when every other expedient had  
 failed, the duke of York, by express command,  
 carried to him a royal order to retire to the conti-  
 nent. He reluctantly obeyed ; and, having addressed

<sup>1</sup> In this letter he intimated an intention of going beyond the  
 seas, but made it a condition that the king should first put a stop to  
 the impeachment.—Clarendon Cont. 454.

<sup>2</sup> Clarendon, 454—456. Life of James, i. 432. L. Journ. 154.  
 That Charles was offended with the marriage is certain.—Clar. 453.  
 If we may believe Stewart herself, she wished to marry to relieve  
 herself from his importunities, and therefore accepted the offer of the  
 duke of Richmond, with the king's acquiescence.—Pepys, iii. 203.  
 But the report was, that Charles thought of her for his own wife,  
 that he consulted Sheldon, archbishop of Canterbury, on the means  
 of procuring a divorce, that Sheldon revealed the secret to Clarendon,  
 and that Clarendon, to secure the succession to his daughter's issue,  
 brought about the marriage of Stewart with the duke of Richmond.  
 —Burnet, i. 436. Lord Dartmouth's Note, 438. Pepys, iii. 293. It  
 makes against this story, that, when a divorce was suggested after-  
 wards to Charles, he replied that his conscience would not permit it.  
 —Life of James, i. 439.



a vindication of himself to the House of Lords, secretly withdrew to France.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
III.  
A.D. 1667.

His departure put an end to the quarrel between the two houses,<sup>2</sup> but did not satisfy the resentment or the apprehension of his enemies. His vindication was voted a scandalous and seditious libel, and ordered to be burnt by the hands of the common hangman. In it he had stated that he had withdrawn only for a time; and would return to prove his innocence, whenever he saw a likelihood of justice having its course, "uncontrolled by the power and malice of men who had sworn his destruction." His enemies pounced on this passage, and, under pretence of holding him to his word, introduced a bill which, after a feeble opposition, was passed, ordering him to surrender for trial before first of February, and, in default of appearance, banishing him for life, disabling him from holding office, subjecting him to the penalties of high treason, if he returned to England, and rendering him incapable of pardon unless by act of parliament.<sup>3</sup> Clarendon, the moment he heard of this enactment, hastened from Rouen to meet his accusers, but was detained at Calais by a dangerous illness, the consequence of fatigue of body and anxiety of mind. Before he could leave his bed, the allotted term had expired, and he thus became, without the possibility of preventing it, an exile for life.<sup>4</sup>

Nov. 29.

Dec. 9.

Dec. 19.

1668.  
Jan. 21.

April 3.

<sup>1</sup> It is certain that the duke took the order to Clarendon; yet Lord Cornbury says that his father withdrew, because it was intended to dissolve the parliament, and try him by a jury of peers.—Carte, ii. App. 39.

<sup>2</sup> The Commons, however, entered two resolutions on their journals, that in such cases the accused ought to be secured, and that, when he is in custody, the Lords may limit a time within which the particular charge may be specified.—C. Journ. December 5.

<sup>3</sup> L. Journ. 154, 157, 162, 167, 169. St. of Realm, 628.

<sup>4</sup> Life of Clarend. 355, et seq.

CHAP.  
III.  
A.D. 1668.

Notwithstanding this severity, it is certain that he fell a victim to the hostility of party. The charges against him were not supported by any lawful proof, and most, if not all, were satisfactorily refuted in his answer.<sup>1</sup> Yet he must not be considered an immaculate character. His dread of republicanism taught him to advocate every claim of the prerogative, however unreasonable, and his zeal for orthodoxy led him to persecute all who dissented from the establishment. He was haughty and overbearing; his writings betray in many instances the faithlessness of his memory, or his contempt for veracity; and his desire of amassing wealth provoked Evelyn to remark of him, that "the lord chancellor never did, nor would do, anything but "for money."<sup>2</sup> In exile he spent most of his time at Montpelier and Moulins, relieving with literary composition the tedium of banishment, and soliciting repeatedly permission to revisit his native country, that he might breathe his last in the company of his children. But Charles, who felt no inclination to engage in a new contest for the sake of a man who had long ago forfeited his esteem, treated these prayers with neglect; and the unfortunate exile, whom hope had brought back to Rouen in Normandy, died there in 1674.<sup>3</sup>

1674.  
Dec. 9.

By the exile of Clarendon, the ministry which had been established at the restoration was entirely dissolved. The duke of Ormond resided in his government of Ireland, Southampton was dead, Albemarle incapacitated by age and infirmity, and Nicholas had resigned. The new cabinet, or, as it was called in the

<sup>1</sup> Clarendon, 478.

<sup>2</sup> See Historical Inquiry respecting the character of Clarendon, by the Hon. George Agar Ellis, 1827.

<sup>3</sup> Supp. to Clar. Pap. iii. xlv. xlv. Wood, Athen. Oxon. ii. 1024.

language of the time, "the king's cabal,"<sup>1</sup> consisted of the duke of Buckingham, who held no ostensible office till he purchased that of master of the horse from Monk; of Sir Henry Bennet, now Lord Arlington, principal secretary of state; of the lord keeper Bridgeman; and of Sir William Coventry, one of the commissioners of the treasury.<sup>2</sup> Of these, Coventry, by his superior information and abilities, excited the jealousy of his colleagues, but unfortunately possessed not the art of pleasing the king, who, from his habit of predicting evil, gave him the name of "the visionary." Buckingham and Arlington were bitter enemies at heart, though the necessity of their situation made them apparent friends. Bridgeman was consulted for convenience. Hitherto he had acquired no particular claim to the favour of the monarch or the confidence of the people.

CHAP.  
III.  
A.D. 1667.

The rapid conquests of the French king in Flanders, during the last summer, had drawn the eyes of Europe towards the seat of war in that country. The pope, Clement IX., through pity for the young king of Spain, and the States, alarmed at the approach of the French arms to their frontier, offered their mediation. To both Louis returned the same answer, that he sought nothing more than to vindicate the rights of his wife;

<sup>1</sup> Pepys, iv. 243. The word "cabal" at this period meant a secret council. See the Diaries of Pepys and Evelyn, and White-lock (p. 477), as early as the year 1650. By d'Estrades the present ministers are called "la caballe d'Espagne."—D'Estrades, v. 39. The whole council was divided into three committees; one for foreign affairs, the real cabal; another for military and naval affairs; a third for trade; and a fourth for the redress of grievances (Jan. 31).

<sup>2</sup> Southampton, the lord treasurer, died May 16th, 1667, and June 1st the treasury was put into commission. The commissioners were the duke of Albemarle, Lord Ashley, Sir Thomas Clifford, Sir William Coventry, and Sir John Duncombe. Bennet was made secretary of state on Oct. 2, 1662.

CHAP. that he should be content to retain possession of the  
 III. conquests which he had already made, or to exchange  
 A.D. 1667. them either for Luxembourg or Franche-comté, with  
 — the addition of Aire, St. Omer, Douai, Cambrai, and  
 Charleroi, to strengthen his northern frontier; and  
 that he was willing to consent to an armistice for  
 three months, that the Spanish government might  
 have leisure to make its election between these alter-  
 natives. But Spain was not sufficiently humbled to  
 submit to so flagrant an injustice; the time was sul-  
 lenly suffered to pass by, and the mediators renewed  
 their instances to obtain from Louis a prolongation of  
 the armistice for the additional space of three months.  
 He consented to abide by his former offer during that  
 term; but, refusing the armistice, overran in the mean-  
 time the whole province of Franche-comté, for the sole  
 purpose, as he pretended, of compelling Spain to come  
 to a decision.<sup>1</sup>

If it was the interest of England, it was still more  
 the interest of the States, to exclude France from the  
 possession of Flanders. Under this persuasion, Sir  
 Dec. 15. William Temple, the resident at Brussels, received  
 instructions to proceed to the Hague, and sound the  
 disposition of De Witt; and, on his return to London,  
 1668, was despatched back again to Holland with the pro-  
 Jan. 1. posal of a defensive alliance, the object of which should  
 be to compel the French monarch to make peace with  
 Spain on the terms which he had previously offered.<sup>2</sup>  
 The States were embarrassed. On the one hand, they  
 Jan. 8. considered the interposition of the Spanish Nether-  
 lands as the great bulwark of their independence  
 against the superior power of France; on the other,

<sup>1</sup> Œuvres de Louis XIV. ii. 326, 334, 344—355; v. 419.

<sup>2</sup> See his instructions in Courtenay's Life of Temple, ii. 381, 384.

they hesitated to engage in a dangerous war against an ancient friend and ally at the advice of a prince whom they had hitherto considered their personal enemy. But Temple acted with promptitude and address : he appealed to their fears ; he represented the danger of delay ; and, contrary to all precedent at the Hague, in the short space of five days—had the constitutional forms been observed, it would have demanded five weeks—he negotiated three treaties, which promised to put an end to the war, or, if they failed in that point, to oppose at least an effectual barrier to the further progress of the invader. The first was a defensive alliance by which the two nations bound themselves to aid each other against any aggressor with a fleet of forty men-of-war, and an army of six thousand four hundred men, or with assistance in money in proportion to the deficiency in men ; by the second, the contracting powers agreed by every means in their power to dispose France to conclude a peace with Spain on the alternative already offered, to *persuade* Spain to accept one part of that alternative before the end of May, and, in case of a refusal, to *compel* her by war, on condition that France should not interfere by force of arms. These treaties were meant for the public eye : the third was secret, and bound both England and the States, in case of the refusal of Louis, to unite with Spain in the war, and not to lay down their arms till the peace of the Pyrenees were confirmed. On the same day the Swedish ambassadors gave a provisional, and afterwards a positive assent to the league, which from that circumstance obtained the name of the triple alliance.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
III.  
A.D. 1668.  
—

Jan. 13.

April 25.

<sup>1</sup> Temple's Works, i. 312—384, 415. Dumont, vii. 66, 68, 91. Much praise has been lavished on this negotiation, as if it had ar-

CHAP. III.  
A.D. 1668. — Louis received the news of this transaction with an air of haughty indifference. His favourite commanders, Condé and Turenne, exhorted him to bid defiance to the interference of the three powers;

rested Louis in his career of victory, and preserved the independence of Europe; but, in fact, it accomplished nothing more than the French king had offered, and was desirous to effect. The terms which the triple alliance sought to enforce were those which Louis had already offered (D'Estrades, vi. 46), as is admitted by the treaty itself, which, having mentioned the offer, binds the contracting parties to prevail on the *sæpius dictas duas coronas ad ineundam pacem legibus et conditionibus supra memoratis*.—Dum. vii. 68. Whence the English king, in a letter to his sister, the duchess of Orleans, says, "The effect of the treaty is to bring Spain to consent to the peace upon the terms the king of France has avowed he will be content with; so as I have done nothing to prejudice France in this agreement" (Jan. 23): and in another letter to Louis, "En quoi je ne dois croire vous avoir fait une chose désagréable, puisque nous nous sommes convenus de vous proposer ladite paix sur des conditions, que vous aviez plusieurs fois témoigné de vouloir accepter, et plus expressément dans votre dernière lettre du 27 (17, O.S.) du mois passé" (Feb. 3).—Dalrymple, ii. 5, 6. In that letter, to which Charles refers—a letter written after the conclusion of the alliance, but before that conclusion could be known to Louis, he says, "Ce seroit un coup pour la paix, qui la rendroit infallible et prompt, si le roi de la Grand Bretagne entroit dans le même sentiment des états généraux, d'obliger les Espagnols à l'acceptation des deux alternatives."—*Euvres*, v. 421.

Mr. Macaulay, in a critique on the foregoing note (Critical and Historical Essays, iii. 39), pronounces it unreasonable and ridiculous to suppose that Louis would have held himself bound by his former offers, if he had not been compelled by the triple alliance. To me, however, there appears good reason to suppose that he would have held himself so bound even if the triple alliance had never existed; because he must otherwise have abandoned all hope of those splendid advantages which he had expected to derive from the eventful treaty, and have looked forward to find in Leopold no longer a most valuable ally, but an injured and formidable foe. When, therefore, the Spanish king had made his election between the two alternatives prescribed by Louis, Louis himself would be reduced to the necessity of making also his election between two alternatives, the restoration of his recent conquests or the dissolution of his league with the emperor. There can be little doubt that in such case his prepossession in favour of the eventful treaty would induce him to consider the restoration of Franche-comté as the lesser evil of the two, and thus hold him faithful to the promises which he had originally made.

his cabinet ministers to be content with the alternative which he had himself proposed. He assented to the advice of the latter; but for a reason of which they were ignorant. In consequence of the infirm state of Charles II. of Spain, he had secretly concluded with the emperor Leopold an "eventual treaty;" so called, because it was made to depend on a distant, but not improbable *event*,—the death of the king of Spain without male issue to succeed him. Its object was to regulate, in that case, the partition between Leopold and Louis of the Spanish monarchy, with its numerous dependencies in the four quarters of the globe. Every question concerning their respective portions of this splendid inheritance was satisfactorily adjusted, and the treaty itself signed on the 19th of January, at a time when neither of the contracting parties could have been informed of Temple's proceedings at the Hague. It was, moreover, agreed between them, that Leopold, as head of the house of Austria, should prevail on Charles to make his choice of one of the alternatives already proposed by Louis, and that Louis on his part should abide by his previous offer, and should advance no additional claim in virtue of any conquest which his armies had subsequently made.<sup>1</sup>

The marquess of Castel-Rodrigo, the Spanish governor of the Netherlands, sought delay, under the vain hope of inducing the Dutch (of England he was secure) to engage at once in the war. But the intervention of the emperor, in consequence of the eventual treaty, put an end to the hesitation of the Spanish

CHAP.  
III.  
A.D. 1668.  
—

<sup>1</sup> Œuvres de Louis, ii. 360—372. See the account of the "eventual treaty," which was kept secret for almost a century, in the works of Louis, vi. 402.

CHAP. cabinet; the ambassadors of the several powers met  
 III. at Aix-la-Chapelle; Spain made her choice; the con-  
 A. D. 1668. quered towns in Flanders were ceded by her to  
 — Louis, and peace was re-established between the two  
 April 22. crowns.<sup>1</sup> The conduct of Charles during the whole  
 May 2. of this transaction served to raise him in the estimation  
 of Europe. But the States could ill dissemble their  
 disappointment. They never doubted that Spain, with  
 the choice in her hands, would preserve Flanders, and  
 part with Franche-comté. It was this persuasion that  
 induced them to refuse the first project of the English  
 ministry, and to prefer the binding of Louis to his offer  
 of the alternative. The result was owing, it is said, to  
 the resentment of Castel-Rodrigo, who, finding that  
 the States would not join with England to confine  
 France within its ancient limits, resolved to punish  
 them by making a cession which brought the French  
 frontier to the very neighbourhood of the Dutch ter-  
 ritory.<sup>2</sup>

Feb. 10. When the parliament assembled after the adjourn-  
 ment, Buckingham discovered that his success against  
 Clarendon in the last session had proceeded, not from  
 his own influence, but the unpopularity of that states-  
 man. His immediate dependants in the lower house  
 were heard without attention; and in the higher the  
 jealousy of the churchmen had been awakened by his  
 close connection with the Presbyterians, that of the  
 Cavaliers by his discharge of the republicans, whom  
 the late administration had incarcerated as a measure  
 of precaution. Neither did it add to the reputation of  
 the prime minister that his profligacy had led him, for  
 Jan. 16. the sake of Lady Shrewsbury, with whom he lived in

<sup>1</sup> Temple, 420—456. D'Estrades, v. 351. Dumont, vii. 89, 91.  
 Louis, vi. 417.

<sup>2</sup> Temple, 414—417.



open adultery, to fight a duel, in which one of his seconds was killed on the spot, and the earl of Shrewsbury, the injured husband, was mortally wounded.<sup>1</sup> The Commons began by instituting a rigid inquiry into the conduct of persons employed under the former administration. Prince Rupert and the duke of Albe-  
CHAP.  
III.  
A.D. 1662.  
 marle had already furnished narratives of their proceedings during the war; commissioner Pett was impeached of culpable neglect in the care of his majesty's ships when the Dutch entered the river; Penn of the embezzlement of prize goods to the value of one hundred and fifteen thousand pounds; and Brunkhard, who had absconded, was expelled the house for his presumption in having ordered sail to be slackened during the pursuit after the victory of the 3rd of June, 1665. To these proceedings Buckingham had no objection; but, to his surprise, the Commons voted only one-half of the sum which he demanded under the head of naval expenses, and obstinately resisted all his efforts to obtain some favour for the dissenters, in accordance with the wish of the sovereign. The Conventicle Act would expire within six months; and Charles, who still felt himself bound by the declaration of Breda, was anxious to prevent its renewal. Aware of the rock on which his former endeavours had split, he was careful to make no mention of the Catholics: he confined his request of indulgence to the dissenters among his Protestant subjects; but the very report of his intention had

<sup>1</sup> Pepys, iv. 15. Lady Shrewsbury was daughter to the earl of Cardigan. Report said that, in the dress of a page, she held the duke's horse while he was fighting with her husband. When Buckingham took her to his own house, the duchess observed to him, that it was not for her and his mistress to live together: he replied—"Why, so I have been thinking, madam, and therefore have ordered your coach to carry you to your father's."—Pepys, 109.

CHAP. III.  
A.D. 1668. — awakened the usual cry that the church was in danger ; on the morning, just before he expressed his wish to the two houses, the Commons voted an address to him to put in execution all the laws against non-conformists and papists ; and afterwards a bill was passed and sent to the Lords, having for its object to continue the existing penalties against the frequenters of conventicles. This, however, did not prevent the friends of toleration from proposing, in conformity with the royal suggestion, measures for the comprehension of Protestant dissenters ; but the motion, after several adjourned debates, was negatived, on a division, by a majority of more than two to one.<sup>1</sup>

The remaining business in parliament was now interrupted by a most violent quarrel between the two houses, on a question of privilege. Several years had passed since Skinner, a private trader, preferred to the king in council a complaint of divers injuries which he alleged that he had suffered from the agents of the East-India Company. After several hearings, the council commissioned the archbishop of Canterbury, the chancellor, and two other lords, to effect a compromise between the parties ; but the company refused to abide by their decision, and the king was advised to recommend the case to the attention of the House of Lords, as the supreme court of judicature in the nation. But the opponents of Skinner objected to the jurisdiction of the Lords. The cause, it was maintained, did not come before them by way of appeal, or bill of review, or writ of error. It was an original complaint, which must be first heard in the ordinary courts of law. In the following session, Skinner petitioned the Lords for redress ; the company

<sup>1</sup> Pepys, iv. 34. C. Journals, Ap. 28. Parl. Hist. iv. 413—422.

renewed their objection; but the house pronounced the complainant entitled to damages, and appointed a committee to assess the amount. After the adjournment, the company petitioned the House of Commons for protection against the usurpation of the Lords. By the upper house this petition was voted a scandalous libel; the lower not only received it, but passed resolutions censuring the conduct of the Lords as contrary to law, and derogatory from the rights of the subject. They were met with opposite resolutions from the upper house, declaring the votes of the Commons a breach of privilege; and the proceedings of the Lords warranted both by law and precedent. Thus open war was declared; each house obstinately maintained its own pretensions; the Lords resolved to pass no other bill than that of the supply; and the Commons rejected a bill which had been sent to them for the regulation of the trials of peers. By the king, the 9th of May had been fixed for the conclusion of the session. Early in the morning the Commons sent a message to the Lords, proposing a suspension of all proceedings in the cause till the next meeting of parliament, and having received no answer, resolved that whosoever should put in execution the orders or sentence of the House of Lords in the case of Thomas Skinner, should be deemed a traitor to the liberties of Englishmen, and an infringer of the privileges of the House of Commons. The king having given the royal assent to the bills which were prepared, ordered the two houses to adjourn, and expressed a hope that, before he should meet them again, some expedient might be discovered for the accommodation of this difference. The Commons obeyed; but the Lords

CHAP.

III.

A.D. 1663

March 16.

May 2.

May 7.

May 9.

CHAP. continued to sit, called before them Sir Samuel  
 III.  
 A.D. 1668. Barnardiston, the governor of the company, and com-  
 — mitted him to the custody of the black rod, till he  
 should have paid to the king a fine of three hundred  
 pounds. Having thus vindicated their authority, they  
 also adjourned.<sup>1</sup>

At the restoration of peace, trade quickly returned  
 into its ancient channels; the murmurs of discontent  
 were gradually hushed; and the expiration of the  
 Conventicle Act afforded relief and satisfaction to the  
 dissenters. The present proved the most tran-  
 quil period of the king's reign, but it was disgraced  
 by the extravagance and licentiousness of the higher  
 classes. The gallants of the court shocked the more  
 sober of the citizens by their open contempt of the  
 decencies of life,<sup>2</sup> while Charles laughed at their  
 follies and countenanced them by his example. At  
 the same time that he renewed his visits and atten-  
 tions to the duchess of Richmond, he robbed the  
 theatres of two celebrated actresses, known to the  
 public by the dignified appellations of Moll Davies  
 and Nell Gwin. Davies had attained eminence as a  
 dancer—Gwin attracted admiration in the character  
 and dress of a boy. The former received a splendid  
 establishment in Suffolk-street, and bore the king a  
 daughter, afterwards married into the noble family of

<sup>1</sup> St. Trials, vi. 710—763. L. Journ. xii. 420, 427. Parl. Hist. iv. 422. Marvell, 109. On the 8th of May the Commons sat on this question from dinner-time till five the next morning.—Marvell, i. 107. Pepys, iv. 103. Barnardiston remained in custody till the night of August 10, the day before the expiration of the adjournment. By whose authority he was discharged he did not know.—Parl. Hist. iv. 431.

<sup>2</sup> See Pepys, iv. 116, 118, 145. Sir Charles Sedley and Lord Buckhurst distinguished themselves above others.—Ibid. 185, 186, 187. Ant. Wood, Autobiog. June, 1663.

the Radclyffes. The latter became the mother of the first duke of St. Alban's. Charles never allowed her to interfere in matters of state; but he appointed her of the bed-chamber to the queen, and assigned her lodgings in the neighbourhood of the court. She was so wild, and witty, and eccentric, that he found in her company a perpetual source of amusement, a welcome relief from the cares that weighed so heavily upon him at times in the subsequent years of his reign. Habit, however, still preserved to Castlemaine the empire which she had formerly acquired. She suppressed all appearances of jealousy, and sought her revenge by allowing to herself the same liberty in which her paramour indulged.<sup>1</sup>

While Charles pursued his pleasures, Buckingham sought to consolidate his own power. By degrees he weeded all of whose fidelity he was suspicious out of the different departments of the administration. Secretary Morrice was exchanged for Sir John Trevor; the duke of Ormond, after a long struggle, surrendered the government of Ireland to the Lord Robartes; and Coventry himself was provoked to furnish a decent pretext for his dismissal. Buckingham had procured a farce to be written for the purpose of ridiculing him on the stage. Coventry sent the duke a challenge; the matter was laid before the king in council; and the challenger was sent to the Tower, and deprived of office. But the principal person against whom he

<sup>1</sup> Pepys, iv. 10, 14, 90, 111, 223, 250. Evelyn, ii. 339. Burnet, i. 457. Sandford, 652, 654. About this time, May 11, a meteor was seen, and the ignorance and bigotry of the people are amusingly described by Pepys on the occasion. "The world do make much discourse of it, their apprehensions being mighty full of the rest of the city to be burned, and the papists to cut our throats" (iv. 112).

CHAP. directed his attacks was the duke of York. He was  
 III.  
 A.D. 1668. aware of the contempt which that prince expressed  
 — for his character, and of the influence exercised by the  
 duchess, Clarendon's daughter, over the mind of her  
 husband. James received repeated affronts in the  
 name of the king, which he bore without complaint.  
 The conduct of the Admiralty was blamed; his friends  
 were displeased; and the dependants of his adversary  
 were introduced into his office in defiance of his  
 remonstrances. It was rumoured that he had lost the  
 royal confidence, and would soon be deprived of his  
 place of lord high admiral. But Charles was recalled  
 to a sense of the protection which he owed to his  
 brother, by the boldness of an old Cavalier, Sir  
 William Armourer, who told him publicly of the  
 reports in circulation respecting his jealousy of the  
 duke of York. He instantly replied that they were  
 false; and when Buckingham, under pretence of fear  
 for his life from the resentment of James, affected to  
 travel surrounded by armed men, the king laughed  
 in his face at the utter folly of the insinuation. The  
 minister began to feel alarm; he turned round to  
 solicit a reconciliation with the duke, and received a  
 contemptuous refusal.<sup>1</sup>

Buckingham, however, might depend on the royal  
 favour as long as he could supply the king with money.  
 That nothing was to be obtained from the liberality of  
 the parliament, had been proved by the proceedings in

<sup>1</sup> Life of James, 432—440. Macph. Pap. i. 41, 43, 45, 47, 50.  
 Pepys, iv. 151, 155, 158, 188, 191, 192, 195, 246, 249, 255, 257,  
 362. The reports mentioned by Pepys are confirmed by the duke  
 of Ormond: "Arlington told me that I joined too much in my  
 "counsels and conversation with men unsatisfied; and (which I won-  
 "dered at) he named the duke and the archbishop of Canterbury."  
 —Carte, ii. App. 67.

the last session ; and an attempt was therefore made to reduce the annual expenditure below the amount of the royal income. On examination it was found that the yearly receipts did not exceed one million and thirty thousand pounds ; by a new regulation, three-fourths of this sum were allotted to defray the expenses of the civil list ; and of the remaining fourth, one hundred thousand pounds was appropriated to discharge the interest of the debt, the remainder to cover accidental deficiencies, and to pay, as far as it would go, several pensions granted by the king.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
III.  
A.D. 1668.

July 22.

But this plan of economy accorded not with the royal disposition, nor did it offer any prospect of extinguishing the debt. Charles remembered the promise of pecuniary assistance from France in the beginning of his reign ; and, though his previous efforts to cultivate the friendship of Louis had been defeated by an unpropitious course of events, he resolved to renew the experiment. Immediately after the peace of Aix-la-Chapelle, Buckingham opened a negotiation with the duchess of Orleans, the king's sister, in France, and Charles, in his conversation with the French resident, apologized for his conduct in forming the triple alliance, and openly expressed his wish to enter into a closer union, a more intimate friendship, with Louis. These overtures were at first received with coldness and reserve, which, instead of checking, seemed to stimulate the ardour of the king. There was one point in which both monarchs most cordially agreed,—their hatred of the Dutch. Charles could not forget their inhospitality during the time of his exile ; the unsuccessful termination of the late war had strengthened his dislike ; and he ardently wished for

May 11.

<sup>1</sup> See it at length in Ralph, i. 175.

**CHAP.** the opportunity of gratifying his revenge. On the  
**III.** other hand, the pride of Louis had often been offended  
**A.D. 1668.** — by the pride of these republicans ; and their presumption in acceding to the secret articles in the triple alliance was deemed by him the strongest proof of their ingratitude. About the end of the year the communications between the two princes became more open and confidential ; French money, or the promise of French money, was received by the English ministers ; the negotiation began to assume a more regular form, and the most solemn assurances of secrecy were given, that their real object might be withheld from the knowledge, or even the suspicion, of the States.<sup>1</sup>

In this stage of the proceedings, Charles received an important communication from his brother James. Hitherto that prince had been an obedient and zealous son of the church of England ; but Dr. Heylin's History of the Reformation had shaken his religious credulity, and the result of the inquiry was a conviction that it became his duty to reconcile himself with the church of Rome. He was not blind to the dangers to which such a change would expose him ; and he therefore purposed to continue outwardly in communion with the established church, while he attended at the Catholic service in private. But, to his surprise, he learned from Symonds, a Jesuit missionary,

<sup>1</sup> See the papers in Dalrymple, ii. 4—21. They are all published as referring to the same subject. But this is a mistake. The letters of Feb. 27, 1669, in p. 4, and of Jan. 19, 1669, in p. 19, ought to be dated in 1665, and that of Feb. 9, 1669, in p. 21, in the year 1666. This is evident from their contents. Also Macpherson, i. 56. The secret, however, was not kept. For the sole information of the king of Sweden, Puffendorf, his agent, was permitted by Turenne to read a letter from Colbert, the ambassador in England, who boasted of his success, adding that he had made some of the leading ministers to feel, *sentir tout l'étendue de la libéralité de sa majesté*. This Puffendorf communicated to De Witt.—Temple, ii. 40.



that no dispensation could authorize such duplicity of conduct; a similar answer was returned to the same question from the pope; and James immediately took his resolution. He communicated to the king in private that he was determined to embrace the Catholic faith; and Charles, without hesitation, replied, that he was of the same mind, and would consult with the duke on the subject in the presence of Lord Arundell, Lord Arlington, and Arlington's confidential friend, Sir Thomas Clifford. Of these three, the first was a known Catholic; the other two had hitherto professed themselves Protestants, but more for fashion's sake than through any real attachment to the reformed creed. They, like most others in the higher circles of society at that period, had, in the language of James, "their religion still to choose."

CHAP.  
III.  
A.D. 1669.

The meeting was held in the duke's closet. Charles, with tears in his eyes, lamented the hardship of being compelled to profess a religion which he did not approve, declared his determination to emancipate himself from this restraint, and requested the opinion of those present as to the most eligible means of effecting his purpose with safety and success. They advised him to communicate his intention to Louis, and to solicit the powerful aid of that monarch.<sup>1</sup>

Jan. 25

Here occurs a very interesting question,—was Charles sincere or not? That of the two churches he preferred the more ancient, there can be no doubt. Both the duke of Ormond and Daniel O'Neil had seen reason to suspect him of a secret leaning towards the Catholic worship about the time of the conferences at the Pyrenees; and he had recently avowed the

<sup>1</sup> James, i. 440. Dalrymple, ii. 22. Macpher. i. 50, 52. See also the Travels of Cosmo for the orthodoxy of James, 456.

CHAP. same to Arlington and Clifford.<sup>1</sup> But the king's  
 III.  
 A.D. 1669. religious belief was of his own creation. To tran-  
 — quillize his conscience, he had persuaded himself that his immoralities were but trifling deviations from rectitude, which a God of infinite mercy would never visit with severity; and as for speculative doctrines, the witty and profligate monarch was not the man to sacrifice his ease and to endanger his crown for the sake of a favourite creed. He was the most accomplished dissembler in his dominions; nor will it be any injustice to his character to suspect, that his real object was to deceive both his brother and the king of France. In his next letter to his sister Henrietta, he informs her that the duke had been brought into "the business on the score of religion," and he openly told her at Dover, that "he was not so well satisfied "with the Catholic religion, or his own condition, as "to make it his faith."<sup>2</sup>

Now, however, the secret negotiation proceeded with greater activity; and Lord Arundell, accompanied by Sir Richard Bellings,<sup>3</sup> hastened to the French court. He solicited from Louis the present of a

<sup>1</sup> Carte's Ormond, ii. 254. James, i. 441. That he was a staunch Protestant in 1658 is evident from the papers in Thurloe, i. 740—745; but in 1669, the author of Cosmo's Travels remarks, that though he "observes with exact attention the religious rites "of the church of England, there is reason to believe that he does "not entirely acquiesce, and that he may perhaps cherish other "inclinations" (456).

<sup>2</sup> Dalrymple, i. 226; ii. 22. From the expression noticed above, and the duke's subsequent assertion to Barillon that, in the first treaties between Charles and Louis, *il n'avoit fait qu'obeir et se conformer aux volontés du Roi* (ibid. 269), I infer that at first James did not approve of the money treaties between the two monarchs.

<sup>3</sup> Bellings had been secretary to the Catholic confederacy in Ireland, and since the restoration had been confidentially employed by Clarendon in several foreign negotiations. On this occasion he was instructed to draw the articles of the treaty.—James, i. 442.

considerable sum, to enable the king to suppress any insurrection which might be provoked by his intended conversion, and offered the co-operation of England in the projected invasion of Holland, on the condition of an annual subsidy during the continuation of hostilities. To these proposals no direct objection was made; and the discussion turned chiefly on one point, whether the declaration of the king's catholicity should precede or follow the declaration of war.

CHAP.  
III.  
A.D. 1668.  
—

James, with all the fervour of a proselyte, urged his brother to publish his conversion without delay. War, by creating a want of money, would render him dependent on the bounty of parliament; but now he was his own master; the army was loyal; all the governors of garrisons were attached to his person; the sufferings of the nonconformists from the intolerance of the established church would teach them to look on any change as a benefit; and within the pale of the establishment itself there were numbers who had no settled notions of religion, but were ready to fashion their creed by their convenience.

Louis, on the contrary, represented to the king that a premature declaration might endanger his crown and his person; that nine-tenths of his subjects were hostile to the Catholic faith; that religious discord acted with the fury and the rapidity of a volcano; that insurrection was to be expected in the capital and in every part of his dominions, and that his army was too small, his friends were too few, to countenance the hope of his being able to suppress his opponents. Charles made but a faint endeavour to refute this reasoning. The attempt, he acknowledged, wore the appearance of madness, yet there were reasons to think that it might succeed. In these discussions, the year

CHAP. III. passed away. At Christmas the king publicly received  
 A.D. 1669. the sacrament; the absence of James, who had been  
 — accustomed to accompany his brother, though it did  
 not escape notice, awakened no suspicion.<sup>1</sup>

After repeated adjournments, the parliament had  
 been suffered to meet in October. The Commons  
 immediately revived the quarrel with the Lords re-  
 specting the case of Skinner. They ordered the printer  
 Oct. 19. of "The Grand Question concerning the Judicature  
 "of the House of Lords" to be prosecuted, voted that  
 Barnardiston had behaved like a good commoner of  
 England, and passed a bill vacating the judgment  
 pronounced against him, as contrary to law and the  
 privileges of parliament. It was immediately rejected  
 by the Lords, who, on their part, passed a bill in vindica-  
 tion of their jurisdiction, which met with a similar  
 fate in the Commons. For some time no further com-  
 munication took place between the two houses, and  
 the king, to prevent a more violent rupture, put an  
 Dec. 11. end to the session by adjournment. The interval was  
 spent by him in earnest endeavours to heal this mis-  
 1670. understanding; and, when they met again, he recom-  
 Feb. 14. mended to both to erase all the proceedings out of  
 Feb. 22. their journals, and to abstain from the renewal of the  
 question. They consented; in appearance each house  
 was replaced in the same situation in which it stood  
 before the quarrel; in reality the victory was gained by  
 the Commons. By the erasures, the two judgments  
 of the Lords were vacated, and since that moment  
 their claim to original jurisdiction in civil causes has  
 been silently abandoned.<sup>2</sup>

The public business now occupied the attention

<sup>1</sup> Dalrymple, ii. 30—37. Life of James, i. 442. Macpher. i. 50.

<sup>2</sup> L. Journ. xii. 287, 291. Com. Journ. Feb. 22. Parl. Hist.  
 iv. 431. St. Trials, vi. 763—770.

of parliament. 1. The expiration of the Conventicle Act had raised the hopes of the dissenters, and the lord-keeper and the chief justice Hales had been employed to draw an act of comprehension, by which the greater part of them might be incorporated with the establishment. On the one side, Wilkins, bishop of Chester, with Tillotson, Stillingfleet, and Burton; on the other, Bates, Manton, and Baxter, were consulted; and, to remove the chief stumbling-block, the controversy respecting the validity of Presbyterian ordination, it was ingeniously proposed that the bishop in the form of reordination should make use of the words, "to serve as minister in any parish in England." But the agitation of the project threw the kingdom into a ferment. Parker and Patrick distinguished themselves by the warmth of their writings in support of orthodoxy, and Owen by his learning, Marvell by his wit, ranked at the head of their opponents. One party contended, that to concede at all was to betray the cause of the church; the other, that a comprehension of the dissenters offered the only sure expedient to check the diffusion of Socinianism and popery. The House of Commons did not degenerate from the zeal which it had displayed on so many former occasions. A bill for the suppression of conventicles was sent to the House of Lords, where it met with strong opposition from the duke of York and his friends, as well as from the Presbyterian peers: but Charles, though he had promised his protection to the nonconformists, deemed it prudent to interfere, and through his solicitations, this intolerant bill was suffered to pass. By it certain fines were enacted against all persons above sixteen years of age who should attend, and all ministers who should officiate, at any religious

CHAP.  
III.  
A.D. 1670.

April 11.

CHAP. service different from that of the church of England,  
 III.  
 A.D. 1670. against the occupiers of the houses in which meetings  
 — for that purpose should be held, and against the  
 magistrates who should neglect to enforce the provi-  
 sions of the law.<sup>1</sup>

This act subjected the dissenters to a portion of those severities which had been so frequently inflicted on the Catholics. Spies and informers multiplied; the ministers found it necessary to abscond; houses were entered by force, and searched without ceremony; and the inmates were dragged to prison, and condemned to pay fines. That ease, of which the king was so fond, suffered repeated interruptions from complaints and appeals to his justice. When the nonconformists reminded him of his promise of indulgence, he acknowledged the hardship of their case, and checked the vigilance of the officers; when the magistrates remonstrated, that these religious meetings were hotbeds of sedition, he asked, why then did they not execute the law? and to the clergy who complained of the prevalence of sectarianism, he sarcastically replied that it would never have been the case had they paid less attention to their dues and more to their duties. Among the sufferers none excited more admiration than the Quakers by their fearless adhesion to their principles. Disdaining the precautions taken by the other religionists, they proceeded, at the usual hour, openly but peaceably, to their meeting-house, and, being carried before the magistrates, refused to pay the fines, and were committed to prison. On their release, they returned to the place of meeting as if nothing had happened; the doors were closed; they assembled in the street; and Penn

<sup>1</sup> St. 22 Car. II. c. i. Burnet, 449—451.

and Mead successively preached. But the auditory was soon dispersed; and the preachers were indicted before the lord mayor and recorder, on the charge of having created a riot. During the trial, the firm and temperate behaviour of the prisoners formed a striking contrast with the harsh and violent proceedings of the court. The jurors, having, after a confinement of thirty-six hours, returned a verdict of not guilty, were fined forty marks each, and committed to prison; and Penn and Mead, though acquitted, suffered the same punishment for contempt, in refusing to uncover their heads in presence of the court.<sup>1</sup>

2. The mind of Buckingham was still haunted with the apprehensions of revenge on the part of the late chancellor's family, if James were ever to ascend the throne. The reader will remember that a boy of the name of Crofts, the reputed son of the king by Lucy Barlow, had been placed for education at the Oratory in Paris. Soon after the restoration he came to England; Charles ordered him to conform to the established church, created him, by the advice of Bristol and Castlemaine, but in opposition to the remonstrances of the queen-mother and Clarendon, duke of Monmouth, and gave to him in marriage the countess of

<sup>1</sup> Burnet, i. 471. Neal, c. viii. St. Trials, vi. 951—1036. Sewell, ii. 259—271. James, or perhaps the compiler of his life, tells us that "the rigorous church of England men were let loose, and encouraged underhand to persecute, that the nonconformists might be more sensible of the ease they should have when the Catholics prevailed."—Life, i. 434. Marvell, "that the lieutenantancy of London alarmed the king continually with the fear of the conventicles, so that he gave them powers" (i. 420). It may be remarked that this is the last instance of a fine imposed on jurors under pretence that their verdict was contrary to evidence or the direction of the judge. One of the jurors brought the question before the court of Common Pleas, and the chief justice Vaughan decided in his favour.

CHAP. III. Buccleugh, the most wealthy heiress in Scotland.<sup>1</sup>  
 A.D. 1670. Buckingham, observing the unbounded affection of the king for this young man, resolved to set him up as a competitor for the crown in opposition to the duke of York. It was confidentially whispered at court that Charles intended to own him for his successor, and the earl of Carlisle and Lord Ashley ventured to hint to the king, that if he were willing to acknowledge a private contract of marriage with the mother of Monmouth, it would not be difficult to procure witnesses who would confirm it with their testimony. The monarch replied without hesitation that, "much as he loved the duke, he had rather see him hanged at Tyburn than own him for his legitimate son."<sup>2</sup>

Buckingham, though disappointed, was not discouraged. He often lamented the king's misfortune in being married to a woman whose repeated miscarriages proved that she would never bear him a successor to the throne. When he offered to steal her away, and convey her to some distant region where she would be never heard of, Charles laughed at his folly; but he was listened to with greater attention when he suggested to the monarch to take another wife. He had already consulted lawyers and divines; and Burnet, afterwards bishop of Sarum, in an elaborate judgment, had decided that barrenness in the woman furnished in certain cases a lawful cause for polygamy or divorce.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Clarendon, 205, 206, 207.

<sup>2</sup> Life of James, i. 437, 490. Macpher. i. 44. Burnet, i. 452. "As for the duke of Bucks," says Ormond, "I am confident he not only undervalues, but hates the king's person and his brother's, and has designs apart, if not aimed at the ruin of them both."—Carte, ii. 377.

<sup>3</sup> See Burnet, i. 454, note; and Higgons on Burnet, 232—243. The paper concludes thus: "I see nothing so strong against polygamy as to balance the great and visible imminent hazards that hang over so many thousands, if it be not allowed."



Of the two, a divorce appeared preferable, as it offered less to shock the feelings of the public ; but in cases of divorce no instance could be found of a subsequent legal marriage pending the lives of the parties. Buckingham, however, undertook to create a precedent. Lady Roos had long lived in adultery ; she had been separated from her husband by a sentence of the ecclesiastical judge ; and her children by her paramour had been declared illegitimate by act of parliament. A more favourable case could hardly be wished for ; and a bill was introduced into the upper house, "to enable the Lord Roos to marry again." Its object instantly transpired ; and the royal brothers exerted all their influence, the king to support, the duke of York to oppose, the bill. The latter did not only obtain the votes of his friends and dependants ; but as the question involved a point of doctrine respecting the indissolubility of marriage, he was joined by all the bishops, with the exception of Cosins of Durham, and Wilkins of Chester,<sup>1</sup> by the Catholic peers, and by such of the Protestant peers as deemed it proper to follow, on theological grounds, the opinion of the prelates. The second reading was carried only by a small majority : before the third, Charles adopted a measure to animate his friends which surprised both the house and the nation. One morning he suddenly entered, took his seat on the throne, and desired the lords to proceed, as if he were not present, for he came only to renew a custom which his immediate predecessors had allowed to fall into desuetude, that of attending at their debates.<sup>2</sup> James, who saw the motive of his brother,

CHAP.  
III.  
A.D. 1670.

March 5.

May 17.

March 21.

<sup>1</sup> Marvell adds Dr. Reynolds of Norwich, but it appears from the journals that he did not attend at all during this session.

<sup>2</sup> L. Journ. xii. 318. Evelyn, Diary, ii. 320. The king had previously consulted a learned antiquary, who replied that it was the

CHAP. was stimulated to still more active exertions; and,  
 III.  
 A.D. 1670. when the third reading was carried against him by a  
 — majority of two, entered his protest on the journals,  
 March 28. in which he was followed by thirteen spiritual and  
 fifteen temporal peers. Buckingham triumphed, and  
 yet he gained nothing by the victory. He served a  
 fickle and uncertain master, who changed his resolves  
 according to the impulse of the moment. Charles had  
 entertained with pleasure the project of divorce, as  
 long as its accomplishment appeared distant; but,  
 when the effort was to be made, his sense of justice,  
 perhaps his good nature, assumed the ascendancy, and  
 he refused to avail himself of the benefit to the pre-  
 judice of an unprotected and unoffending female.  
 The precedent, however, has not been lost to posterity;  
 and the permission to marry again which was in this  
 instance granted to Lord Roos, forms the authority for  
 the similar permission which has since been regularly  
 inserted in bills of divorce.<sup>1</sup>

3. There still remained the great object for which

custom for the sovereign to be present in parliament till the reign of Henry VIII. ; that of Henry's attendance no proof could be found, whence it was probable that he had been induced to absent himself by the policy of Wolsey; that Henry's son Edward was prevented by his youth, his daughters Mary and Elizabeth by their sex; and that this disuse during four successive reigns was "the ill occasion of the contrary opinion and practice." It was therefore his opinion that the king had a right to be present in all consultations of state, and discussions of private plaint, "not only to advise and hear, but to determine also." Whether this right extended to capital cases, he had his doubts; that it did to criminal cases, not of blood, was certain.—From the answer in manuscript in the collection of Thomas Lloyd, Esq.

<sup>1</sup> L. Journals, xii. 300, 306, 311, 328, 329. Life of James, i. 438, 439. Macpher. i. 48, 53. Burnet, i. 452—455. Marvell, i. 112, 412. From this period Charles generally attended the house. It proved some restraint on his opponents, and furnished him with the means of whiling away his time. "It was," he said, "as good as going to a play."—Marvell, 419.

the parliament had been permitted to meet. Charles, CHAP. III. A.D. 1670. in his speech at the opening of the session, had assured both houses that the rumours respecting the misapplication of the public money during the late war were entirely groundless, and that no part of the parliamentary grants had been diverted from its original destination, but that, in addition, considerable sums, taken partly from his standing revenue, and partly raised on his credit, had been devoted to the same purpose. He therefore requested them to consider the prejudice arising to the national interests from the pressure of an enormous debt, and to supply him with the means of satisfying his creditors. On this occasion he did not plead in vain. His assent to the act against conventicles was the price which he paid; and in return he obtained an additional duty on foreign wines and vinegar for eight years, and an act to advance the sale of fee-farm rents belonging to the crown. It was calculated that the first could furnish the king with fifty thousand pounds, the others with a much larger sum.<sup>1</sup>

April 11.

We may now resume the secret negotiation. It had been arranged that, while Louis with his queen made a progress through the territory lately ceded to him by Spain, the duchess of Orleans could pay a short visit to her brother Charles at Dover. It was hoped by the French king that she could induce him to depart from his intention of postponing the war against the States, till he had made the announcement of his conversion; her real object was to procure his permission to sepa-

<sup>1</sup> L. Journals, xii. 349. I may here notice that though the bankers paid only six per cent. interest on deposits in their hands, they now required from the king ten per cent. on the loans advanced to him, instead of eight. At the same time the States General paid only two and a half per cent.—Temple, ii. 33, 34.

CHAP. rate from her husband, and to fix her residence in  
 III. England. Charles received her affectionately, and  
 A.D. 1670. laboured to gratify her with presents and entertain-  
 May 17. ments ; but on both points he resisted her prayers and  
 her reasoning ; the French ambassador reluctantly  
 consented to subscribe the treaty as it had been drawn  
 May 22. by the English commissioners, and Henrietta, with a  
 heavy heart, returned to her state of splendid misery  
 in the court of France.<sup>1</sup>

Of this treaty, thus at length concluded, though much was afterwards said, little was certainly known. All the parties concerned, both the sovereigns and the negotiators, observed an impenetrable secrecy. What became of the copy transmitted to France is unknown ; its counterpart was confided to the custody of Sir Thomas Clifford, and is still in the keeping of his descendant, the Lord Clifford of Chudleigh. The principal articles were : 1. That the king of England should publicly profess himself a Catholic at such time as should appear to him most expedient, and subsequently to that profession should join with Louis in a war against the Dutch republic at such time as the most Christian king should judge proper. 2. That to enable the king of England to suppress any insurrection which might be occasioned by his conversion, the king of France should grant him an aid of two mil-

<sup>1</sup> Life of James, i. 448. Macpher. i. 54. Louis was prepared to make every sacrifice to engage Charles in his "grande affaire,"—the war against the States. When Colbert, his ambassador in London, made financial objections to the yearly payment of three millions for the grande affaire, particularly as that affair might last for some years, and draw a considerable quantity of specie out of the realm, he answered, on May 2, "Je sais que vos raisons sont bonnes ; je les connois pour telles. J'ai mandé qu'il falloit combattre jusqu'à la fin ; mais, au pis-aller, ne pas manquer la grande affaire."—Œuvres, v. 466.

lions of livres, by two payments, one at the expiration of three months, the other of six months after the ratification of the treaty, and should also assist him with an armed force of six thousand men, if the service of such a force should be thought necessary. 3. That Louis should observe inviolably the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle, and Charles be allowed to maintain that treaty in conformity with the conditions of the triple alliance. 4. That if, eventually, any new rights on the Spanish monarchy should accrue to the king of France, the king of England should aid him with all his power in the acquisition of those rights. 5. That both princes should make war on the United Provinces, and that neither should conclude peace or truce with them without the advice and consent of his ally. 6. That the king of France should take on himself the whole charge of the war by land, receiving from England an auxiliary force of six thousand men. 7. That by sea Charles should furnish fifty, Louis thirty, men-of-war; that the combined fleet should be placed under the command of the duke of York; and that, to enable the king of England to support the charge of the naval armament, he should receive every year of the war the sum of three millions of livres from the king of France. 8. That out of the conquests which might be made, his Britannic majesty should be satisfied with Walcheren, Sluys, and the island of Cadsand; and that, in separate articles, provision should be made for the interests of the prince of Orange, so that he might find his advantage in the war. 9. And that, to unite more closely the interests and affections of the subjects of both crowns, the treaty of commerce already commenced should be speedily concluded.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
III.  
A.D. 1670.

<sup>1</sup> See Note (B). It is plain, from comparing the treaty itself with

CHAP.  
III.  
A.D. 1670.

—  
June 2.  
June 20.

November.

From Dover, the king repaired to London, his sister to the palace of St. Cloud ; and in less than three weeks from the time of their parting the fair and fascinating Henrietta, at the age of twenty-six, was, after a very short illness, numbered with the dead. The report that, to punish the infidelity of her husband, she had indulged in similar infidelities, was solemnly contradicted by her in her last moments ; and the suspicion that she had been poisoned by his order, with a cup of succory-water, received no support from the appearance of the body when it was opened after death.<sup>1</sup> Henrietta left a favourite maid, Mademoiselle de Querouaille. Whether it was through his recollection of her beauty, or through regard for his departed sister, Charles, after some time, invited her to England, and appointed her maid of honour to the queen. In a short time she became one of the royal mistresses.<sup>2</sup>

the account of it in the life of James, that that prince, or the compiler of the life, was but ill acquainted with the true history of these transactions. He states erroneously that the treaty was concluded and signed, and some of the money paid, in the beginning of the year, and that Henrietta succeeded in persuading the king to waive his right, and to commence with the war against the Dutch. It is remarkable that James left London with Charles for Dover ; but on the road was sent back to take care of the metropolis, under the pretence that some disturbance might be caused by the shutting up of conventicles. He reached Dover three days later, and seems to have suspected that Charles wished him out of the way.—James, i. 448. Macpher. i. 54.

<sup>1</sup> For the first report, see Temple, ii. 125 ; for the second, James, i. 451. Montague, the ambassador, says in his letter to Charles, of July 15, "I asked her then if she believed herself poisoned ; her confessor that was by, understood that word, and told her, Madam, you must accuse nobody, but offer up your death to God as a sacrifice. So she would never answer me that question though I asked several times, but would only shrink up her shoulders."—See a letter of condolence from Louis to Charles in the appendix, Note (C).

<sup>2</sup> Evelyn (ii. 332) says, "I saw that famous beauty, but in my opinion of a childish, simple, and baby face, Mademoiselle Que-

It was thought dangerous to confide the secret of the late treaty to a man so unstable in his counsels, so reckless in his resentments as Buckingham; yet it could not be carried into execution without his aid, and that of his friends and colleagues, Ashley and Lauderdale. The expedient which was adopted does credit to the ingenuity of the two monarchs. The marshal de Bellefonds was sent to England to condole with Charles on the death of his sister, and Buckingham was despatched to France to return the compliment to Louis. The duke was received with distinguished honour: the king consulted him on his intended war against the States, and held out to him the prospect of the command of the auxiliary force, if he could persuade his sovereign to join as a party in the campaign. This was a bait which the vanity of Buckingham could not refuse. On his return he urged the subject on the consideration of the king and of his colleagues; he obtained permission to open a negotiation with the French ambassador; he amused the two monarchs by complaining of the apathy or infidelity of Arlington and Colbert, who had been instructed to raise objections, that they might irritate his impatience, and entangle him more deeply in the intrigue; and, at length, the dupe had the satisfaction of concluding a treaty, of which he vainly deemed himself the author, but which in reality was a copy of the former, with the omission of the article respecting the king's profession of the Catholic religion.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
III.  
A.D. 1670.

June 30.

August 1.

Sept. 13.

Nov. 19.

1671.  
Jan. 23.

"rouaille."—See also 349. The maids of honour were Henrietta Maria Price, Winefred Wells, Louisa de Querouaille, Margaret Blagg, Dorothy Howard, and Sophia Stuart.

<sup>1</sup> Dalrymple, ii. 68—77. *Cœuvres de Louis*, v. 471, 474. By the second treaty Charles was to receive five instead of three millions of livres, but, in a secret article unknown to Buckingham, he

- CHAP. To this farce was added another. When the first  
 III.  
 A.D. 1670. instalment became due, Louis inquired of his good  
 — brother, whether he was yet prepared to make the  
 Sept. 18. declaration of his catholicity. Charles replied, that he  
 thought it advisable previously to consult the pope,  
 and to obtain such conditions as might render the  
 change less objectionable to his people. This answer  
 was approved, and, in consequence, a vigorous attempt  
 was made to induce him to join in the war first, and  
 publish his conversion afterwards. But the king was  
 inflexible, and to a second requisition replied, that he  
 could discover no person fit to be trusted with so deli-  
 cate a negotiation. Louis offered the bishop of Laon,  
 Oct. 13. whose services were accepted; but, in a few days, it  
 occurred to Charles that the reigning pontiff was old  
 and infirm, and that it would be more prudent to wait  
 Nov. 7. till the accession of his successor; next he determined  
 to employ an Englishman, and spent some time before  
 he named the president of the English college at  
 Douai; then he contrived to obtain a delay of three  
 months, under pretence of framing and amending the  
 instructions to be given to this envoy; and at last  
 1671.  
 Feb. 15. honestly declared that existing circumstances com-  
 pelled him to postpone the execution of his design to  
 some more favourable opportunity. A year later Louis  
 returned to the same subject, and Charles objected re-  
 1672.  
 March 11. ligious scruples, which made him desirous of consult-  
 ing some celebrated theologian, but a theologian also  
 skilled in chemistry, that the subject of their conver-  
 sations might be supposed to be his favourite science.  
 June 7. Soon afterwards he determined to make the celebration

acknowledged that two out of the five were the sum which by the former treaty he was to receive for professing himself a Catholic.—  
 Dalrymple, 77.



of mass in English, and the administration of the sacrament under both forms, the indispensable conditions of his conversion. But Louis was then satisfied; he had obtained his purpose of drawing the king into the war, and therefore ceased to call for a declaration, which must have rendered him a useless and burdensome ally.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
III.  
A.D. 1672.

With the hope of procuring another supply, Charles had summoned the parliament in autumn; and the lord keeper in his name informed the houses of the several treaties which had been made for the encouragement and protection of commerce, directed their attention to the naval and military preparations of France and Holland, and announced the king's determination to fit out a fleet of fifty sail, to protect the British coasts from such insults as they had suffered in the year 1667. But for this money would be requisite. The last grant had enabled him to pay the interest, and extinguish a portion of the debt. But a considerable part was still unredeemed; and the best means of sustaining the fame and interests of the nation was to give him at once a speedy and plentiful supply. The ministers had been careful to secure a majority in the Commons. Charges of prodigality were made, and hints of popery and arbitrary power were thrown out in vain; and the sum of two millions and a half, to be raised from different sources, was cheerfully voted. During the debate, a member suggested a tax on the frequenters of the theatre; and when it was said that the theatre contributed to his majesty's pleasure, Sir

Oct. 24.

<sup>1</sup> Dalrymple, ii. 62—65, 83, 84. It is impossible to suppress the suspicion that both princes acted with insincerity. Charles put forward his intended conversion merely as an inducement to Louis to supply him with money; and Louis submitted to the deception, that he might draw Charles into the war with the States.

CHAP. III. John Coventry sarcastically inquired, whether “ his  
 A.D. 1672. “ majesty’s pleasure lay among the men or the women  
 — “ players.” This expression was bitterly resented at  
 court; the gallants resolved to punish the insult  
 offered to their sovereign ; and the duke of Monmouth  
 committed the task of revenge to Sandys, his lieu-  
 tenant, and O’Brian, the son of Lord Inchiquin. These,  
 taking with them thirteen men of their troop, sur-  
 Dec. 21. prised Coventry in the Haymarket, as he was repairing  
 to his lodgings in the evening, after the house had  
 adjourned during the Christmas holidays. They beat  
 him, threw him on the ground, and made a deep inci-  
 sion on his nose with a penknife. The outrage, which  
 was perpetrated with the connivance of the king, and  
 against the remonstrances of the duke of York, created  
 feelings of discontent in the house. It was resolved  
 1671. the first thing after the adjournment, not to proceed  
 Jan. 9. with the public business till reparation had been made  
 to the Commons of England for the injury inflicted on  
 Jan. 14. one of their members ; an act was passed, banishing  
 for life the four principal offenders, unless they should  
 surrender themselves for trial against a certain day,  
 and rendering them incapable of pardon, except by act  
 of parliament ; and the maiming or disfiguring of the  
 person was made, for the future, felony without benefit  
 of clergy. Charles dared not interfere for the protec-  
 tion of his champions ; and the Commons, appeased  
 by his forbearance, passed the money bills through  
 their several stages.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Stat. of Realm, 691. Marvell, i. 413. Macpher. i. 57. Ralph, 193. Burnet, i. 469. Lord Dartmouth informs us that Coventry after this was much engaged with the Whigs, and professed himself a zealous Protestant, yet died a Catholic, leaving the bulk of his estate to the college of the Jesuits at St. Omer.—Ibid. note. Monmouth, the real contriver of the outrage, escaped, and in a few weeks

This benefit was, however, purchased with the usual sacrifice to the religious prepossessions of the two houses. Complaints had been made of the growth of popery, that Jesuits and priests had become more numerous; that English Catholics frequented the chapels of foreign ambassadors; that mass was often celebrated in private houses; that few processes were served out of the Exchequer against convicted recusants; that convents and schools had been established for papists; and that two persons openly officiated as popish archbishops in Ireland. Charles, though he was then bound by the late treaty to profess himself a Catholic, published a proclamation, such as was desired by the houses, in which he declared that, "as he had always adhered, against all temptations "whatsoever, to the true religion established, so he "would still employ his utmost care and zeal in its "maintenance and defence." But proclamations had often failed of effect: the more orthodox demanded an act of parliament; and a bill for that purpose was sent to the House of Lords, where it was read twice, and committed. A dispute respecting privilege prevented its further progress.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
III.  
A.D. 1671.  
—  
March 10.  
March 11.  
March 24.

In a bill imposing new duties on imports, the Lords, at the petition of the merchants, had altered some of the rates. The Commons acknowledged that, in the case of money bills, the upper house had the power to approve or reject, but denied that it had the power to committed a still more atrocious offence. On the night of Feb. 28th, in company with the young duke of Albemarle and of eight others, in a drunken frolic, he attacked the watch, and killed the beadle of the ward, though the poor man on his knees begged for his life. Charles, to save his son, granted a pardon to all the murderers; but both the crime and the pardon were severely censured by the people.—See Marvell, i. 195, 416.

<sup>1</sup> Com. Journ. Feb. 21, March 1, 10, 11. L. Journals, xii. 451, 468.

CHAP. make alterations. The Lords called for some proof of  
 III. this assertion. Where was the record? When had  
 A.D. 1671. they forfeited the right? It might as well be said  
 — that they had not the power to reject; for, if they  
 April 17. could not alter a part, how could they annul the  
 whole? Had they confined themselves to this reason-  
 ing, they would probably have embarrassed their op-  
 ponents; for the attorney-general replied that to give  
 any reason would be to weaken a privilege which the  
 Commons had possessed in all ages. But the Lords  
 appealed also to precedents: the application of these  
 precedents was disputed by the managers; the contro-  
 versy became daily more intricate; the obstinacy of  
 April 22. the parties augmented; and Charles, though by it he  
 lost a valuable bill, was compelled to put an end to  
 the session. The question had been raised by the  
 imprudence of Buckingham; and the result did not  
 tend to raise him in the estimation of his sovereign.<sup>1</sup>

Before we proceed to the next chapter, the reader  
 may direct his attention to a few miscellaneous events  
 which occurred about this time.

1669.  
 August 10. 1. In the month of August, 1669, died at the castle  
 of Colombe, near Paris, the queen-mother, Henriette  
 Marie de Bourbon. It has been the custom to attribute  
 a great portion of the misfortunes of Charles I. to the  
 control which this beautiful princess possessed over  
 the heart, and through the heart, over the judgment of  
 her husband. But there is reason to believe that her  
 influence was considerably exaggerated by those whose  
 policy it was to alienate the people from the sovereign  
 by representing him as guided by the counsels of a  
 popish wife. On most questions she coincided in

<sup>1</sup> L. Journals, xii. 449, 494, 502, 510. Marvell, i. 471. Parker,  
 119. Compare Macpherson, i. 58, with Dalrymple, ii. 86.

opinion with secretary Nicholas ; nor will it be rash to conclude that the unfortunate monarch would have fared better, had he sometimes followed their advice. After the death of Charles, she was privately married to Jermyn, earl of St. Alban's, and lived to see the restoration of her son to the throne of his father. Her last years were chiefly spent in acts of charity and exercises of devotion.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
III.  
A.D. 1669.

2. At the commencement of the next year died another celebrated personage, Monk, duke of Albemarle. By Charles his services were always acknowledged, and amply rewarded ; but the royalists regretted that the merit of restoring the king should have fallen to an apostate from their cause ; and their dislike of the man indulged itself in throwing ridicule and censure on his manners and conduct. It must be owned that there was nothing very brilliant in his character ; he was not made to shine in a gay and voluptuous court, nor did he seek to support his rank by a splendid and expensive establishment. But the king always treated him with respect, employed him in posts of difficulty and danger, and honoured his remains with a public funeral in Henry the Seventh's chapel. Within three weeks after his death, the duchess (she had been successively his washerwoman, his mistress, and his wife) followed him to the grave.<sup>2</sup>

1670.  
Jan. 4.

Jan. 23.

3. The duke of Ormond, on the 6th of December,

Dec. 6.

<sup>1</sup> See "The Life and Death of Henrietta," &c., printed for Dorman Newman, 1685, reprinted by G. Smeeton, 1820. Life of James, i. 446.

<sup>2</sup> The following portrait of Monk is drawn by the French traveller Monconis. Monk est petit et gros ; mais il a la physiognomie de l'esprit le plus solide, et de la conscience la plus tranquille du monde, et avec cela une froidure sans affectation, et sans orgueil ny desdain : il a enfin tout l'air d'un homme modéré et fort prudent : ses meubles, sa table, et le peu de gens qui le courtisent, marquent assez qu'il n'est pas ambitieux.—Moncon. Journ. ii. 82.

CHAP. was returning in the dark from a dinner given by the  
 III. city to the young prince of Orange, when in St.  
 A.D. 1670. James's-street, his footmen, who walked on each side,  
 — were suddenly stopped ; and two men forcibly drew the duke out of his carriage, mounted him on horse-back behind a third, and, that he might not escape, fastened him with a leathern belt to the rider. The chief of the banditti hastened beforehand to Tyburn, that he might make preparations for hanging the captive ; but on the road to Knightsbridge, the duke, leaning on one side, and raising with his foot the foot of his companion on the other, contrived to drag him from the saddle. Both fell to the ground ; footsteps were heard to approach ; and the assassin, having loosened the belt, discharged a brace of pistols at the duke, and instantly fled. The darkness proved favourable to both. The duke escaped with no other injury than what he had suffered in the fall and struggle ; and his adversary eluded with ease the search of his pursuers. Yet the cause and the perpetrators of the outrage remained an impenetrable mystery. Though a committee of the House of Lords instituted an inquiry into the case, though the king promised a reward of one thousand pounds to those who should discover the offenders, though a pardon with the same sum of money was offered to any of the accomplices who should inform against the guilty, no clue could be obtained to lead to their apprehension ; only it became known that the chief of the gang was Blood of Sarney, in the county of Meath, the author of a libel called "Mene Tekel," who had been outlawed for an attempt to surprise the castle of Dublin.

1671.  
 May 9.

Soon afterwards a person, in the cassock of a clergyman, sought the acquaintance of Edwards, the

keeper of the regalia in the Tower, and proposed to him a marriage between his own nephew and the old man's daughter. About seven in the morning of May 9th, the pretended clergyman, with two companions, called on Edwards, and requested to see the regalia. As soon as they entered the room, they threw a cloak over the keeper's head, and forced a gag into his mouth, promising to spare his life, if he remained quiet; but his struggles provoked them to knock him down, and wound him in the belly. The clergyman then put the crown under his cassock, one of his companions secreted the globe in his breeches, and the other, having divided the sceptre with a file, deposited the pieces in a bag. But the son of Edwards came by at the time; the alarm was given; the robbers ran; one of them fired at the first sentinel, who, though untouched, immediately fell; the second offered no resistance; and the three ruffians had nearly reached their horses at St. Catherine's Gate, when they were overtaken and secured. They were carried before Sir Gilbert Talbot, but the clergyman, who was the leader, refused to answer. Charles himself, through curiosity, or at the instigation of others, attended, when the prisoner improved the opportunity to flatter and terrify the king; he said that his name was Blood, the same who had seized the duke of Ormond, and would have hanged him at Tyburn; that he had even on one occasion undertaken to shoot the king himself at Battersea, but, the moment he took his aim, the awe of majesty unnerved him, and his piece dropped harmless to the ground. He was, however, but one of three hundred, who had sworn to revenge each other's blood. The king might act with him as he pleased. He might doom him to suffer—but it would

CHAP.  
III.  
A.D. 1671

CHAP. be at the risk of his own life, and of the lives of his  
 III. advisers;—or he might show him mercy—and in that  
 A.D. 1671. — case he would secure the gratitude and services of  
 a company of fearless and faithful followers. If the  
 unprecedented attempts of this man excited surprise,  
 the conduct of Charles was a mystery which no one  
 could understand. He not only forgave the offence  
 offered to himself, but he solicited and obtained for  
 Blood a pardon from Ormond, ordered him to remain  
 as a gentleman at court, and gave him an estate of  
 the yearly rent of five hundred pounds in Ireland,  
 probably as a compensation for that which he had  
 previously forfeited.<sup>1</sup>

5. For a long time the health of the duchess of  
 York had visibly declined, and she died at St. James's  
 March 31. in her thirty-fourth year, having been the mother of  
 eight children, of whom only two daughters survived  
 her, Mary and Anne, both afterwards queens of  
 England. She had been educated in the regular per-  
 formance of all those devotional exercises which were  
 practised in the church of England before the civil  
 war. She attended at the canonical hours of prayer:  
 she publicly received the sacrament in the royal chapel  
 on every holiday, and once in every month; and she

<sup>1</sup> See for both facts Sir Gilbert Talbot's Narrative. Lansdowne, MSS. 1659, p. 1—15. Evelyn, who dined in company with Blood at Sir Thomas Clifford's, describes him thus: "The man had not only a daring, but a villanous unmerciful countenance, but very well spoken, and dangerously insinuating."—Evelyn's Diary, ii. 341. Blood's companions were Hunt, his son-in-law, and Parret, who had been lieutenant to Major-General Harrison under the commonwealth. Charles told Ormond that he had certain reasons for asking him to pardon Blood. He replied that his majesty's command was a sufficient reason.—Talbot, *ibid.* Blood lived in London till he was charged with having suborned witnesses to swear sodomy against the duke of Buckingham, and died in the prison of the King's Bench, 24th Aug. 1681.—Somers's Tracts, viii. 438—454.



always prepared herself for that rite by auricular confession and the absolution of the minister. After the birth of her last child, she became still more religious, spending much of her time in her private oratory, and in conversation with divines; and for several months before her death it was observed that she had ceased to receive the sacrament, and began to speak with tenderness of the alleged errors of the church of Rome. Suspicion was excited; and her brother Lord Cornbury in person, her father, the exiled earl of Clarendon, by letter, endeavoured to confirm her in the profession of the established doctrines. But she had already been reconciled in August to the church of Rome, and in her last illness received the sacrament from the hands of Hunt, a Franciscan friar. Blandford, bishop of Oxford, her Protestant confessor, visited her on her deathbed; but the duke informed him of her change of religion, and he contented himself with speaking to her a few words of consolation and advice. Her conversion was known only to five persons; but the secret gradually transpired, and its publication served to confirm the suspicion that the duke himself was also a Catholic. It was indeed, observed that he occasionally attended on the king during the service in the chapel, but two years had elapsed since he had received the sacrament.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
III.  
A.D. 1671.

1670.  
August.

<sup>1</sup> Life of James, i. 452. Burnet, i. 537. Evelyn, ii. 380. Travels of Cosmo, 456.

## CHAPTER IV.

CHARACTER OF THE CABAL—STOPPAGE OF PAYMENTS FROM THE EX-CHEQUER—DECLARATION OF INDULGENCE—OF WAR AGAINST THE STATES—VICTORY AT SOUTHWOLD BAY—FRENCH CONQUESTS BY LAND—PROCEEDINGS IN PARLIAMENT—THE INDULGENCE RECALLED—THE TEST ACT PASSED—NAVAL ACTIONS—DISGRACE OF SHAFTESBURY—ADDRESSES AGAINST LAUDERDALE AND BUCKINGHAM—IMPEACHMENT OF ARLINGTON—CONCLUSION OF PEACE—DESIGN OF EXCLUDING THE DUKE OF YORK—REPEATED PROROGATIONS OF PARLIAMENT—INTRIGUES OF MONMOUTH—OF ARLINGTON—PROCEEDINGS OF THE POPULAR PARTY—NON-RESISTING TEST OF DANBY—DISPUTE RESPECTING APPEALS—ANOTHER SESSION—REVIVAL OF THE DISPUTE—MOTION FOR DISSOLUTION OF PARLIAMENT—PROCEEDINGS IN SCOTLAND—AND IRELAND.

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1671.

THOUGH the second of the secret treaties with France had been concluded in January, the ratifications were not exchanged till June, at which time it is probable that Charles had consented to engage in the projected war against the States, and to postpone to an indefinite period the announcement of his conversion. Louis had already sent presents to the commissioners who signed the secret treaty at Dover; he now sent others to Buckingham, Ashley, and Lauderdale, who had signed the second treaty in June. In this there was nothing unusual; but, to bind the leading ministers more strongly to his interests, he granted a pension of ten thousand livres to Lady Shrewsbury, the mistress of Buckingham; and, when a similar pension was declined by Arlington, bestowed a magni-

ficent present on his wife.<sup>1</sup> The only privy counsellors intrusted with the secret of the king's connection with Louis, were Arlington, Clifford, Buckingham, Ashley, and Lauderdale; who formed the cabinet or cabal, in which, according to the practice introduced by Clarendon, every measure was debated and determined before it was submitted, for the sake of form, to the consideration of the council.

1. Of these ministers, Arlington, originally Sir Henry Bennet, had signalized himself in the civil war, during which he received a sabre-wound in the face. From Madrid, where he resided as ambassador from the king, he was recalled and introduced into the ministry by the enemies of Clarendon. To strength of mind or brilliancy of parts he had few pretensions; but he was an easy and pleasing speaker, was well acquainted with the routine of business, and covered the deepest cunning under the most insinuating address. As the best bred man in the English court, he acquired the favour of the king and of the foreign noblemen whom business or pleasure brought to the capital; and Charles, as a proof of his esteem, caused the Lord Harry, afterwards the duke of Grafton, his son by Lady Castlemaine, whom he had created duchess of Cleveland, to marry the daughter of Arlington, a most beautiful child only five years old. In the cabinet, the prudence of this minister shrunk from the responsibility of being the foremost to suggest or to defend measures of doubtful tendency.

1672.  
August 3.

<sup>1</sup> Dalrymple, ii. 81, 82. Buckingham, to enhance the merit of his services, asserted that the Spaniards had offered him two hundred thousand pounds. Colbert observes, "Je crois qu'il n'en est rien; mais je crains que l'appetit de ces nouveaux commissaires" (Buckingham, Ashley, and Lauderdale) ne soit grand."—Ibid. 81. By a singular coincidence, the initials of the names of the five ministers form the word "cabal."

CHAP. This timidity afterwards proved his safeguard. It  
 IV.  
 A.D. 1672. was taken for moderation, and served to mitigate the  
 — displeasure and resentment of the people. He retained to the last the favour of his sovereign.<sup>1</sup>

2. The influence which Clifford, by his industry and eloquence, had acquired in the House of Commons, had originally recommended him to the notice of the ministers; and, under the patronage of Arlington, he had rapidly advanced in preferment. He now held the offices of privy counsellor, treasurer of the household, and commissioner of the treasury. He was brave, generous, and ambitious; constant in his friendships, and open in his resentments; a minister with clean hands in a corrupt court, and endued with a mind capable of forming, and a heart ready to execute, the boldest and most hazardous projects. The king soon learned to prefer his services before those of his more cautious patron.<sup>2</sup>

3. With Buckingham, his levity and immorality, his ambition and extravagance, the reader is already acquainted. Even when he was considered the prime minister, pleasure formed his favourite pursuit. He turned the night into day, and indulged in every sensual gratification “which nature could desire, or “wit invent.” Charles, much as he was amused with the follies of the duke, frequently treated him with contempt:—his princely fortune (a landed estate of twenty thousand pounds) insensibly disappeared; his mind became enfeebled with his body; and he lin-

<sup>1</sup> Life of James, i. 398. Clarend. Pap. iii. Sup. lxxxi. Evelyn, ii. 372, 432. Macph. i. 48. Burnet, i. 170. Clarendon's Life, 181, 196. Works of Sheffield, Duke of Buckingham, ii. 84.

<sup>2</sup> Evelyn, ii. 386, 387. Pepys, Correspondence, v. 79. Macph. i. 48.

gered out the last years of his life in penury and disgrace.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1672.

4. Lauderdale made it the great object of his policy to advance his own fortune by securing the royal favour. He was ungainly in his appearance and boisterous in his manner; but his experience in business, his ready acquiescence in every wish of the sovereign, and the boldness with which he ridiculed the apprehensions and predictions of his colleagues, endeared him to the monarch. It was not in Lauderdale's disposition to allow principles, either political or religious, to interfere with his interest. A sincere friend to the covenant, he made it the constant subject of ridicule; a violent enemy to the Catholics, he lent his support to every measure in their favour; and, with a strong predilection towards a limited and constitutional monarchy, he fearlessly executed in his native country the most arbitrary determinations of the government. For these reasons he had numerous enemies among the dissenters and the men of liberal principles; and, on another account, he had incurred the hatred of all the Cavaliers, both English and Scots. He was accused of having been a principal in the sale of Charles I. to the parliament, and of having received a considerable portion of the money. But the efforts of his countrymen to bring him into disgrace recoiled on their own heads. The king remained his friend; Middleton, the chief of his enemies, was removed from the government of Scotland, and that high office, after a decent interval, was bestowed on Lauderdale himself. But his triumph

<sup>1</sup> Burnet, i. 171. Macph. i. 467. Evelyn, ii. 355. Clarendon, i. 369. North's Lives, i. 97.

CHAP. served only to multiply his enemies. The English  
 IV.  
 A. D. 1672. Cavaliers took up the cause of their northern brethren,  
 — and waited with impatience for the favourable opportunity of gratifying their vengeance by accomplishing the downfall of the Scottish favourite.<sup>1</sup>

5. Sir Anthony Ashley Cooper formerly possessed the ear of Cromwell; at the restoration, through the influence of Monk, whose friendship he had gained, and of Southampton, whose niece he had married, he was appointed chancellor of the exchequer, and soon afterwards called to the House of Lords by the title of Baron Ashley. When Charles said of him that he was "the weakest and wickedest man of the age" the king consulted his anger more than his judgment. Ashley possessed talents of the highest order, but made them subservient to his passion and interest. As long as the royal cause promised to be successful, he was careful to suggest the most arbitrary measures and to support them at the expense of liberty and justice; but, when the current turned, when the spirit of discontent, which animated the House of Commons, led him to anticipate a failure, he divested himself of his employment at court, and, coming forward as the champion of popular right, "usurped a patriot's all-atoning name." But whether he served the king, or the king's opponents, he was still the same character, displaying in his conduct a singular fertility of inven-

<sup>1</sup> Burnet's own Time (Oxford reprint in 1823), i. 174. Clarendon, 51. Miscel. Aul. 212, 234. Pepys, 154. In the Scottish parliament, it had been agreed that a certain number of delinquents should be incapacitated from holding office, not openly by the majority of votes, but secretly by way of ballot, to prevent family feuds between the excluders and the excluded. Among the names was that of Lauderdale. But Charles disapproved of the proceeding, and recalled Middleton. See the pleadings before the king in Miscel. Aul. *ibid.*

tion, a reckless contempt of principle, and a readiness to sacrifice the rights of others in the pursuit of his object, whether it were the acquisition of power or the gratification of revenge.<sup>1</sup>

Of these five ministers, Lauderdale adhered to the Scottish covenant; Buckingham, with all his ridicule of bishops and sermons, called himself an orthodox churchman; and Ashley was supposed to belong to no church whatever. Of Arlington and Clifford, it has often been said that they were Catholics. But hitherto they had certainly professed themselves Protestants, though, perhaps, like many others, for no better reason than because Protestantism was in fashion. For, during the revolutions of the last twenty years, the immorality of the royalists, the cant of the fanatics, and the successive prevalence of contrary doctrines in the pulpits, had, especially among the higher classes, unsettled religious opinion, and rendered men indifferent to particular forms of worship. It may, however, be that the knowledge of the duke's conversion, and of the king's sentiments, made impression on Arlington and Clifford. The latter certainly embraced the Catholic faith before the close of the Dutch war: Arlington continued a Protestant till his last sickness, when he was reconciled to the church of Rome.<sup>2</sup>

These were the ministers with whose assistance Charles determined to engage in the war against the States; a war from which he promised to himself an abundant harvest of profit and glory, in the humiliation of a republic, the prosperity of which held out to

<sup>1</sup> Macph. 70. Dalrymple, ii. 15. Burnet, i. 164, 165. Clarendon, 26, 245.

<sup>2</sup> In May, 1671, Evelyn from Clifford's conversation "suspected him a little of warping to Rome."—Evelyn, ii. 341, 382. In May, 1673, he is called "a new convert."—Life of James, i. 484.

CHAP. his subjects the example of successful rebellion; in  
 IV. the superiority which the trade of the British mer-  
 A.D. 1672. chants would derive from the ruin of their commercial  
 — rivals; and in the additional authority with which he  
 would be himself invested at the head of a conquering  
 army and navy. To obtain these results it was neces-  
 sary to make the most gigantic efforts, and to provide  
 pecuniary funds commensurate with these efforts. An  
 ample supply had been already granted by parliament;  
 to secure the stipulated subsidy from France, a third  
 treaty had been concluded with Louis;<sup>1</sup> and an addi-  
 tional resource was now discovered by the ingenuity  
 of Ashley or Clifford.<sup>2</sup> The reader is aware that ever  
 since the time of Cromwell the bankers and capitalists  
 had been accustomed to advance money to the govern-  
 ment, receiving in return assignations of some branch  
 of the public revenue till both capital and interest  
 should be extinguished. Hitherto the exchequer had  
 maintained its credit by the punctuality with which  
 it discharged these obligations; but now it was pro-

<sup>1</sup> It is plain that a third treaty was concluded in the beginning of 1672. Dalrymple notices it as merely a Latin copy of the second treaty, signed on Feb. 5th; but that it was different in some points appears from this, that the command of the English auxiliaries was given by it to the duke of Monmouth.—Dalrymp. ii. 88. The services of Montague, the English ambassador, were so pleasing to Louis on this occasion, that he solicited Charles to send to the ambassador the order of the Garter, and to allow him (Louis) the pleasure of presenting it to Montague.—Œuv. de Louis, v. 493; March 21, 1672.

<sup>2</sup> It seems doubtful with whom this measure originated. Evelyn assigns it to Sir Thomas Clifford (Diary, ii. 361, 385), probably because he was chosen to recommend it to the privy council. In Arlington's letters it is attributed to Lord Ashley; also in the Life of James, "it was he (Ashley) who advised the shutting up the "exchequer."—Life, i. 488. See also Burnet, i. 532. Shaftesbury himself, in a letter to Locke (Life by Lord King, i. 65), gives some reasons why, not he, but Clifford, should be thought the author of it; but the care with which he avoids a direct denial provokes suspicion that the charge was well founded.



posed, 1. to suspend all payments to the public creditors for the space of twelve months, which would permit the king to devote the whole of his income to the purposes of the war; and 2. to add the interest now due to the capital, and to allow six per cent. interest on this new stock, which would afford a reasonable compensation to the holders for any inconvenience which they might suffer from the delay. Clifford, as one of the commissioners of the treasury, carried this project from the cabinet to the privy council; he endeavoured to defend it on the ground of state necessity; and requested that no member would raise objections, unless he were prepared to offer some other expedient equally productive and equally expeditious.<sup>1</sup> Clifford was supported by Ashley; the council gave its consent; and the suspension was announced by proclamation to the public. It stated that the safety of the kingdom rendered it necessary to forbid the payment of any money out of the exchequer in virtue of existing warrants and securities, but promised that the creditors should receive "interest at the rate of six per cent.; that no person whatsoever should be defrauded of anything that was justly due, and that the restraint should not continue any longer than one year."<sup>2</sup> By this iniquitous act, a sum of about one million three hundred thousand pounds was placed at the disposal of the ministers; but the benefit was dearly purchased with the loss of popularity and reputation. Many of the bankers, who had placed their money in the exchequer, failed; a general shock was given to the commercial credit of the country, and numbers of annuitants, widows and

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1672.

Jan. 2.

<sup>1</sup> Temple, ii. 181.

<sup>2</sup> Declaration. In the Savoy, by the king's printers.

CHAP. orphans, were reduced to a state of the lowest dis-  
IV.  
A.D. 1672. tress.<sup>1</sup>

—

In this attempt the five ministers could not fail of success; in the next they met with a signal defeat. It was known that in the month of March a fleet of Dutch merchantmen, laden with the commerce of the Levant, would pass up the Channel; and a resolution was taken to capture them as lawful prizes, without any previous declaration of war. To the objection that such conduct would resemble the rapacity of the pirate and the highwayman, it was replied, that arrogance and avarice had led the Hollanders to trample on all the received usages of civilized nations, and that they could not reasonably complain, if they received in return such treatment as they had already inflicted upon others.<sup>2</sup> The States, however, were not to be taken unawares. The immense preparations of Louis had opened their eyes to the danger which menaced them; and the recall of Temple, who had negotiated the triple league, with the mission, in his place, of Downing, a man so hateful in Holland, that he fled back to England to escape the vengeance of the mob,<sup>3</sup> taught them to suspect that Charles was the secret ally of the French king. Under this impression they were careful to furnish protection to their merchantmen, and to acquaint their naval commanders with the possibility of a sudden rupture between the two nations. The task of intercepting the Dutch fleet had been intrusted by the English ministers to Sir Robert Holmes, who received orders to take under

<sup>1671.</sup>  
Dec. 4.

<sup>1672.</sup>  
Feb. 6.

<sup>1</sup> L. Journ. xii. 526. North, Examen, 37. Parker, 121. Marvel, ii. 475.

<sup>2</sup> See the question discussed in Parker, 124.

<sup>3</sup> Downing was sent to the Tower for his cowardice.—Temple, ii. 180. May 23.

his command all the ships which he should find at Portsmouth, or should meet at sea. Holmes, at the back of the Isle of Wight, saw the squadron of Sir Edward Spragge, which had recently destroyed the Algerine navy in the Mediterranean; but, unwilling that another should obtain any share in the glory and profit of the enterprise, suffered him to pass by. The next morning he descried his object, sixty sail of merchantmen, many of them well armed, under convoy of seven men-of-war. Van Nesse, the Dutch admiral, saw the design of Holmes, and so admirably did he dispose his force, so gallantly was he seconded by the officers and men under his command, that he completely baffled all the efforts of his enterprising opponent. During the night the English admiral received a reinforcement; in the morning he renewed the action; and at last succeeded in cutting off one man-of-war and four merchantmen, two of which proved of considerable value. The failure was certainly owing to the presumption and ambition of Holmes. To Charles it became a subject of bitter disappointment, both as it diminished the pecuniary resources on which he had reckoned, and as it covered him and his advisers with disgrace; for both his subjects and foreigners united in condemning the attempt, which they would probably have applauded, had it been crowned with success.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1672.  
March 2.

March 3.

During the last war with Holland the counsels of

<sup>1</sup> James, i. 456. Macph. Pap. i. 58. Marvell, ii. 478. Heath, 582. Notwithstanding this attack, both parties faithfully observed the provision in the treaty of Breda, that, in case of a rupture, the ships and merchandise belonging to the subjects of either party, and existing in the ports and territory of the others, should not be molested for six months. *Eæ naves, merces, et bona quævis motabilia quæ in portibus et ditione partis adversæ hinc inde hæerere et extare deprehenduntur.*—Dumont, vii. 47.

CHAP. government had been distracted, and the most serious  
 IV. alarm had been repeatedly excited, by the close and  
 A.D. 1672. — dangerous correspondence between the foreign enemy  
 and the malcontents within the kingdom. Since that  
 period the number of the latter had been multiplied  
 by the intolerant enactments against the dissenters ;  
 and, to apply a remedy to the evil, the king's advisers  
 determined to carry into execution his favourite project  
 of indulgence to tender consciences. With this view  
 March 15. a declaration was published, stating that the experience  
 of twelve years had proved the inefficacy of coercive  
 measures in matters of religion ; that the king found  
 himself "obliged to make use of that supreme power  
 "in ecclesiastical matters which was not only inherent  
 "in him, but had been declared and recognised to be  
 "so by several statutes and acts of parliament ;" that  
 it was his intention and resolution to maintain the  
 church of England in all her rights, possessions, doc-  
 trine, and government ; that it was moreover his will  
 and pleasure that "all manner of penal laws in  
 "matters ecclesiastical, against whatsoever sort of non-  
 "conformists or recusants, should be from that day  
 "suspended ;" and that to take away all pretence for  
 illegal or seditious conventicles, he would license a  
 sufficient number of places and teachers for the exer-  
 cise of religion among the dissenters, which places and  
 teachers so licensed should be under the protection of  
 the civil magistrate ; but that this benefit of public  
 worship should not be extended to the Catholics, who,  
 if they sought to avoid molestation, must confine their  
 religious assemblies to private houses."<sup>1</sup>

This declaration, like the former, had been moved  
 in the council by Clifford, and seconded by Ashley :

<sup>1</sup> Parl. Hist. iv. 515.

the provision respecting the Catholics was added to satisfy the scruples of the lord keeper. By the public it was received with expressions of applause or vituperation, as men were swayed by interest or religion. Its opponents complained that it tolerated popery, and consequently idolatry; that, by affording encouragement to schism, and the opportunity of meeting to the factious, it must tend to weaken the stability both of the church and of the throne; and that it claimed for the king a power subversive of a free constitution,—the power of dispensing with the laws. In reply, it was contended by the advocates of indulgence, that religious opinion was beyond the control of government, and that no people could be powerful abroad, as long as they were divided by dissension at home; that the public exercise of their worship was still forbidden to the Catholics; that the indulgence, by removing religious discontent, was calculated to strengthen both the church and the throne; that no claim was set forth by the king, which did not by ancient usage belong to the crown; and that, of necessity, the power of dispensing with the law in matters ecclesiastical grew out of the ecclesiastical supremacy, and in civil matters, out of the very nature of government; for no form of government could be perfect, in which the executive power did not possess the means of providing for the exigencies of the state during the intervals when the legislative power was not assembled: that to dispense with the penal laws respecting religion had been the practice of every sovereign since the reformation; and that the king himself, during the late war with Holland, had suspended the trade and navigation acts without exciting contradiction or murmur. The result showed the power of interest over principle. The

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1672

---

CHAP. dissenters, who had been in the habit of confining  
 IV.  
 A.D. 1672. within the narrowest limits the pretensions of the  
 — crown, gratefully accepted the indulgence, and presented by their ministers an address of thanks to the king; while the ardent friends of orthodoxy began to dispute their own doctrine of passive obedience, and to think that the prerogative ought to be fettered in those cases in which it might operate in opposition to their own claims and possessions.<sup>1</sup>

In a few days appeared the English and French declarations of war. Louis was content to assert that, after the many insults which he had suffered from the arrogance of the States, to dissemble his resentment  
 March 17. would be to detract from his glory. Charles condescended to enumerate the several causes of his displeasure, the unwillingness of the States to regulate with him according to treaty the commerce of the two nations in the East Indies, their perfidious detention of the English traders in Surinam, their refusal to strike to his flag in the narrow seas;<sup>2</sup> and the repeated insults which had been offered to him personally by injurious medals and defamatory publications. It was his duty to maintain the honour of his crown, to preserve the trade and commerce of the nation, and to

<sup>1</sup> For these particulars and reasonings, see Parker, 251—258; Parl. Hist. iv.; App. xli. xlii; Arlington to Gascoign, 66; James, i. 455. It is often said, but certainly without authority, that the lord keeper refused to put the seal to the declaration. Had this been the case, he would probably have been dismissed in March instead of November.

<sup>2</sup> The negotiations on this subject show that the king claimed as a right what the Hollanders would yield only as a compliment.—Parker, 106—109. "You must always know my mind and resolution," says Charles to Downing, "is not only to insist upon the having my flag saluted when on their very shores (as it was always practised), but in having my dominion of the seas asserted, and Van Ghent exemplarily punished" (Jan. 16, 1672).—Lord King's Life of Locke, i. 76.

protect from oppression the persons of his subjects. But, if this consideration compelled him to appeal to arms, it was still his intention to “maintain the true intent and scope of the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle,” in all alliances which he “had made, or should make, “in the progress of the war, to preserve the ends thereof inviolable, unless provoked to the contrary.”<sup>1</sup> In a few days the king of Sweden, the second party to the triple alliance, acceded to the designs of Charles and Louis, and, under the specious pretence of preserving the peace of Germany, bound himself by a second treaty to make war on any prince of the empire who should undertake to aid the States in the approaching war between them and the king of France.<sup>2</sup>

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1672.

April 4.

The Dutch were the first at sea; and De Ruyter,

<sup>1</sup> Parl. Hist. iv. 512. Dumont, vii. 163, 164. “Yet,” says Marvell, “it is as clear as the sun that the French had by the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle agreed to acquiesce in their former conquests in Flanders; and that the English, Swede, and Hollander, were reciprocally bound to be aiding against whomsoever should disturb that regulation.”—Marvell, ii. 482. This, though it has been repeated hundreds of times, is far from being an accurate exposition of the transaction. The real object of the triple alliance was to compel the crowns of France and Spain to make peace on the terms already offered by France, and to guarantee to Spain the provinces in the Netherlands which should remain to her after that peace—Tant pour aider à faire finir par leur intervention la guerre qui s'estoit alors allumée entre les deux couronnes, que pour garantir aussi le plus fortement et efficacement, que faire si pourroit, la paix.—The peace was accordingly made at Aix-la-Chapelle, and the kings of England and Sweden, and the States, signed the act of guaranty—promettent par ces presentes de garantir le dit traité—and promised if Louis were, under any pretext whatever, to invade any of the territories belonging to *Spain*,—aucun des royaumes, estats, pays, on sujets du Roy catholique,—to employ all their forces in resisting the aggression and obtaining reparation.—See the act of guaranty in Dumont, vii. 107. In the treaty between Louis and Charles, the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle was confirmed, and no infraction of it took place during the war.

<sup>2</sup> Dumont, vii. 169. Miscel. Aul. 68, 70.

CHAP. with seventy-five men-of-war, and a considerable num-  
 IV. ber of fire-ships, stationed himself between Dover and  
 A. D. 1672. Calais, to prevent the intended junction of the French  
 — and English fleets. The duke of York could muster  
 May 3. no more than forty sail at the Nore; but with these  
 he contrived, under the cover of a fog, to pass un-  
 May 4. noticed by the enemy, and, proceeding to St. Helen's,  
 awaited the arrival of the French squadron under  
 May 10. D'Estrées. The combined fleet now sailed in search  
 of the enemy, whom they discovered lying before  
 May 19. Ostend. But the prudence of De Ruyter refused to  
 engage even on equal terms. Availing himself of the  
 shallows, he kept his opponents at bay, and baffled all  
 their manœuvres with a skill which extorted their  
 admiration. At last he reached Goree, and the duke  
 returned to Southwold Bay, on the coast of Suffolk,  
 that his ships might take in their full complement of  
 men and provisions.<sup>1</sup>

In a few days, De Ruyter learned, from the captain  
 of a collier, the situation and employment of the  
 May 27. English fleet. He suddenly resolved to become the  
 aggressor, sailed from Goree in the evening with his  
 whole force, and would probably have surprised his  
 enemies at anchor, had it not been for the sagacity of  
 Cogolin, the commander of a French frigate. That  
 officer, on account of his ignorance of the coast, had  
 cast anchor during the night at a distance of some  
 May 28. miles from Southwold Bay. At the first dawn he  
 descried two Dutch men-of-war of equal force, which  
 immediately brought to, and stood from him, and, con-  
 cluding from these motions that the main body could  
 not be far distant, he discharged his guns in succession  
 as a signal. James immediately ordered every ship to

<sup>1</sup> James, i. 457—461. Miscel. Aul. 69, 70.



get under weigh, and take her station in the line ; but the wind was easterly, and the tide to leeward, and not more than twenty sail could form to meet the enemy. The duke, with a part of the red squadron, opposed De Ruyter and the fleet from the Maese ; the earl of Sandwich, with part of the blue, Van Ghent and the fleet from Amsterdam. D'Estrées received Banker with the ships from Zeeland ; but both stood under easy sail to the southward, and, as they never came to close action, suffered comparatively but little injury.<sup>1</sup>

Seldom has any battle in our naval annals been more stubbornly contested. The English had to struggle with a bold and experienced enemy, and against the most fearful disparity of force. Their ships were so intermingled among the multitude of their opponents, that they could afford little support to each other ; still they fought with the most desperate courage, hoping to protract the action till they could be joined by the remainder of the fleet in the bay. About eleven o'clock, the duke's ship, the *Prince*, of one hundred guns, had lost above one-third of her men, and lay a motionless wreck on the water. Having ordered her to be towed out of danger, he passed through the window of the cabin into his shallop, rowed through the enemy's fire, and unfurled the royal standard in the *St. Michael*, of ninety guns.<sup>2</sup>

The earl of Sandwich, in the *Royal James*, repeatedly beat off the enemies by whom he was surrounded, carried by boarding a seventy-gun ship which lay athwart his hawse, and killed Van Ghent, the com-

<sup>1</sup> James, i. 461—465.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. 465, 466. So afraid were the sailors of fire-ships, that the duke expressly forbade the name to be mentioned during the action. If any man saw a fire-ship approaching, he was ordered to communicate his suspicion in a whisper to the nearest officer (465).

CHAP. IV.  
A.D. 1672. mander of the Amsterdam squadron ; but, after an engagement of eight hours, the Royal James became unmanageable ; of two fire-ships which approached, one was sunk by her guns, the second grappled her on the larboard side ; and in a few minutes that noble vessel was enveloped in flames. The duke, from a distance to leeward, saw the blue flag towering above a dense column of smoke, and ordered the Dartmouth, and a number of boats, to hasten to the assistance of the crew. Between two and three hundred were saved ; the rest, with their gallant commander, perished in the waves.<sup>1</sup>

During the afternoon, the other ships joined the fleet, and the combatants began to fight on a footing of equality. About five it was reported to the duke, that the St. Michael could with difficulty be kept afloat, on account of the injury which she had received in her hull ; and trusting again to his shallop, he transported his flag to the London. De Ruyter was the first to shrink from the conflict. He sailed about seven to overtake the Zeeland squadron ; and most of the English took the opportunity of joining D'Estrées to leeward, while the duke, with five-and-twenty sail,

<sup>1</sup> James, i. 467, 468. He appears to have had a presentiment of his fate. When Evelyn (ii. 369) took leave of him, the earl said, he should see him no more. "No," he added, "they will not let me live. *Had I lost a fleet I should have fared better.* But be it as it pleases God. I must do something, I know not what, to save "my reputation." Evelyn tells us that Monk and Clifford were accustomed to describe the earl's caution as cowardice, and that the words in Italics allude to his expedition to Bergen. May they not allude to the conduct of Monk, as if he had said : *Had I, by excess of courage, lost a fleet, as Monk did, I should have fared better?*—"He dined," says Sheffield, duke of Buckingham, "in Mr. Digby's "ship the day before the battle, when nobody dreamt of fighting, "and showed gloomy discontent, so contrary to his usual cheerful "humour, that we even all took notice of it : but much more afterwards."—Works, ii. 14.

remained to the windward of the enemy. Thus terminated this bloody and obstinate engagement. The cool and determined courage of the English enabled them, notwithstanding the disadvantages of surprise, and wind and tide against them, to claim the victory. They lost but one, their opponents three ships of the line.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1672.  
—

In the morning, the two divisions of the English fleet joined, and it was determined to proceed to the Nore, but in a short time De Ruyter, who had sailed to the southward, reappeared; and James ordered the line to be formed, and made the signal to bear down on the enemy. They immediately fled; a general chase was ordered, and twice the Dutch ships, which had been disabled in the late action, were on the point of falling into the hands of the pursuers, and as often saved by the timely intervention of a fog. On the second day the Dutch found a secure shelter within the Wierings; and the English fleet returned in triumph to the river.<sup>2</sup>

May 29.

May 30.

By land, the storm which had so long menaced the States soon burst on their most distant frontier. Louis had placed himself at the head of more than one hundred thousand men, and was assisted by the counsels of Condé and Turenne. Orsoi, Burick, Wesel, and Rhinberg, fortresses on the Rhine, in the possession of Dutch garrisons, opened their gates;

<sup>1</sup> Ibid. 468—471. "The duke of York himself had the noblest share in this day's action: for when his ship was so maimed as to be made incapable of service, he made her lye by to refit, and went on board another that was hotly engaged, where he kept up his standard till she was disabled, and then left her for a third, in order to renew the fight, which lasted from break of day till sunset."—Works of Sheffield, duke of Buckingham, who was present, ii. 15.

<sup>2</sup> James, i. 475, 478.

CHAP. the river itself was passed near Schenck in the face  
 IV. of the enemy ; Arnheim, Naerden, Utrecht, Daventer,  
 A.D. 1672. — Zutphen, and Nimeguen submitted ; three out of the  
 seven provinces were torn from the republic, and the  
 French outposts established themselves in the vicinity  
 of Amsterdam.<sup>1</sup> At first the States seemed to  
 abandon themselves to despair ; they were roused to  
 exertion by the approach of the enemy, and the sym-  
 pathy of Europe. The Louvestein faction, hitherto  
 the ally of France, sunk into insignificance ; the  
 prince of Orange was declared captain-general of the  
 army and admiral of the fleet ; promises of succour  
 were obtained from the emperor, the king of Spain,  
 and the elector of Brandenburg ; and attempts were  
 made to detach Charles from his alliance with the  
 French monarch. The king, indeed, began to waver.  
 The success by sea had not answered his expecta-  
 tions ; the conquests of Louis threatened to provoke  
 a general war in Christendom ; and a rupture between  
 France and Spain would not only overturn the treaty  
 of Aix-la-Chapelle, but also deprive his subjects of the  
 Spanish trade, the most profitable branch of British  
 commerce. With his son, the duke of Monmouth,  
 who, at the head of six thousand British soldiers,  
 served in the French army, were joined, as pleni-  
 potentiaries, Buckingham, Arlington, and Savile,  
 June 12. lately created Viscount Halifax. The three latter  
 repaired to the Hague, where they assured the States  
 of the pacific disposition of their sovereign,<sup>2</sup> and thence,

<sup>1</sup> For the progress of the French army, see *Cœuvres de Louis*, iii. 130—248.

<sup>2</sup> When Buckingham assured the dowager princess of Orange that they, the ambassadors, would not use Holland like a mistress, but love her like a wife ; she replied, “ Vrayment je croy que vous “ nous aymez comme vous aymez la votre.”—*Temple*, ii. 260.

accompanied by deputies, hastened to the camp of the French monarch at Heeswick, where, in union with Monmouth, they signed a new treaty, binding the two kings to act in concert, and never to conclude a peace but by joint consent. The separate demands of Charles and Louis were then communicated to the Dutch ministers. Charles, on his part, required, as the basis of peace, the dignity of stadtholder for the prince of Orange; the honour of the flag as an acknowledgment that England was mistress of the narrow seas; the yearly payment of ten thousand pounds for permission to fish on the British coasts; indemnification for the charges of the war to the amount of one million sterling, and the possession of Flushing, Goree, and the neighbouring fortresses, as security for the payment: Louis offered to restore the three provinces which he had conquered, on condition that the States should cede to him such places as they had formerly wrested from Spain, and such part of their territory as lay on the left bank of the Rhine; should pay to him an indemnification of seventeen millions of livres; should yearly offer him a gold medal in acknowledgment of his forbearance, but in reality as a satisfaction for the insulting medal which they struck at the conclusion of the triple alliance, and should grant to their Catholic subjects the free exercise of the Catholic worship.<sup>1</sup> The States, at the persuasion of the prince

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1672.  
July 6.

<sup>1</sup> Dumont, vii. 205, 206, 208. Miscel. Aul. 71, 72. In the united and the neighbouring provinces the Catholics and Protestants were intermixed in considerable numbers, and the intolerance of the States abolished, wherever their influence extended, the exercise of the Catholic worship. This was met with similar intolerance on the other side; and the inconveniences arising from such a state of things induced the Protestant elector of Brandenburg, and the Catholic count-palatine of the Rhine, to conclude in this spring a treaty of equitable adjustment, by which the churches were divided

CHAP. of Orange, indignantly rejected these proposals. They  
 IV.  
 A.D. 1672. opened their dikes; the country was deluged with  
 — water; and the progress of the French arms was suspended.

From this moment the war began to languish both by sea and land. Louis left the camp for his capital, and while part of his army was employed to retain possession of his conquests, the other portion marched to the Rhine to observe the German princes, who were arming in support of the States. At sea, De Ruyter had the prudence to shun a second engagement; and the duke of York cruised in vain off the Dogger Bank to intercept the East India fleet, which found shelter in the river Ems. Charles, however, continued faithful to his engagements with Louis, and, to mark his satisfaction with the conduct of his  
 April 22. ministers, he raised Sir Thomas Clifford to the peerage, by the title of Lord Clifford of Chudleigh;  
 April 14. created Lord Arlington earl of Arlington; Lord  
 April 23. Ashley earl of Shaftesbury; and honoured Buckingham

between the two communions, and provision was made for their respective ministers out of the property formerly belonging to the clergy in the duchies of Cleves, Juliers, and Berg, and the counties of Mark and Ravensburg.—Dumont, vii. 171—194. Louis, following the example, demanded for the Catholics within the territory of the States the use of one church where there were two, and the permission to build another where there was only one, with a decent provision for the clergymen out of the old church property, or some other fund.—Ibid. 205. This demand, however, gave occasion to the opponents of the court in England to represent Charles as leagued with Louis in a crusade for the establishment of popery; and, to excite greater irritation, they informed the public that the *principal* church in each town was demanded for the Catholics.—Burnet, i. 560. Another falsehood spread at the time was, that Louis assured the States that he would make peace if they accepted his conditions, whether Charles were satisfied or not.—Marvell, i. 492. Yet the contrary is the truth. In article xiii. he declares that the acceptance of his conditions will not be sufficient alone; they must also satisfy the king of England, before peace can be made.—Dumont, 206.

and Arlington with the order of the Garter. For a while Shaftesbury seemed to monopolize the royal favour, so delighted was the monarch with the fertility of his invention and the fearlessness of his courage. Charles deemed himself bound in honour to shelter the bankers, whose money he had locked up in the exchequer, from the pursuit of their creditors. They applied for protection to the court of Chancery; but the lord keeper hesitated; he doubted whether it were a case in which he ought to interfere; and Shaftesbury seized the occasion to represent him to the king as an old dotard unequal to his situation. The hint was taken; the seal was transferred from Bridgeman to Shaftesbury; and the new lord chancellor soon exposed himself by his vanity and self-sufficiency to the ridicule of the bar as well as the odium of the people. Instead of the sober and decent robes worn by his predecessors in office, he appeared on the bench in "an ash-coloured gown silver-laced, and full-ribbed pantaloons displayed." In the procession to Westminster Hall to open the seal, instead of being conveyed in a carriage, he rode on horseback; and the king's counsel, the law-officers of the crown, and the several judges, were compelled to accompany him in a similar manner, to the great annoyance of some among these reverend personages; one of whom, Mr. Justice Twisden, by the curvetting of his horse, was laid prostrate in the mire. In his court he professed a sovereign contempt for ancient forms; his orders were made with rapidity, and fashioned after his own fancy; for a few days the counsel did not interrupt him; but he was afterwards so harassed with motions for the explanation and amendment of his orders, that he grew ashamed of his precipitancy, and

СНАР.  
IV.  
A.D. 1672.

Nov. 17.

CHAP. the imperious reformer gradually sunk into the tamest  
 IV. judge that ever sat on the bench. Mindful, however,  
 A.D. 1672. — of the charge which he had brought against Bridgeman, he was careful to stay the proceedings against the bankers in the inferior courts; but, at the same time, with a prudent regard to his own security, he appointed a distant day on which he would be ready to hear counsel against this injunction.<sup>1</sup>

The elevation of Shaftesbury made a vacancy in the commission of the treasury. Charles dissolved the board, and at the recommendation of his brother gave  
 Nov. 26. the staff of lord high treasurer to Lord Clifford. The friendship which had so long subsisted between Arlington and Clifford was instantly broken. Arlington charged him with ingratitude, with having by his intrigues supplanted his patron and benefactor. But the king commanded them to be friends. He exculpated Clifford. The refusal of the staff to Arlington arose, he asserted, from his own kindness for that nobleman; from a wish to spare him the disgrace and mortification which he would have entailed upon himself by his want of due qualification and firmness.<sup>2</sup>

It had been expected that in October Charles would apply to the parliament for money to enable him to open the exchequer in January; and the States flattered themselves with the hope of a powerful opposition on the part of the Commons. To their disap-

<sup>1</sup> James, i. 481. North, 38, 46, 57, 58, 60. It were, however, unfair to omit the praise allotted to him by an enemy:—

In Israel's courts ne'er sat an Abethdin  
 With more discerning eyes, or hands more clean:  
 Unbribed, unbought, the wretched to redress,  
 Swift of despatch, and easy of access.

*Dryden, Abs. and Achit.*

<sup>2</sup> Compare James, i. 482, with Evelyn, ii. 386.



pointment, the two houses were prorogued till February, and the suspension of payment to the public creditors was continued by proclamation for another half-year. Shaftesbury improved the interval to add to the number of his dependants in the lower house. During the prorogation several members had died; some had been called to the House of Lords. Instead of waiting till the parliament assembled, he issued writs out of Chancery for new elections; these writs, with recommendations from the court, were intrusted to the hands of the persons whose return was desired; and they, availing themselves of the opportunity, in general secured their election. It was, however, observed that almost all, whether designedly or not, were dissenters, a circumstance which awakened the anger of the Cavaliers and the churchmen; and a resolution was taken to dispute the legality of the writs, and consequently of the returns. Colonel Strangeways, an old Cavalier of the first opulence and influence in the western counties, whose friends had been defeated in four instances by the arts of Shaftesbury, placed himself at the head of the opposition.<sup>1</sup>

At the opening of the session the king and the chancellor successively addressed the two houses. Charles was an ungraceful orator, but on this occasion he spoke with an ease and dignity which surprised his hearers. Shaftesbury dilated on the different topics which had been mentioned by the king. He justified the declaration of indulgence, and the shutting up of the exchequer; he assumed that the war was popular, and that the pretensions of the Hollanders were so inconsistent with the rights of Great Britain, that

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1672.  
—  
Oct. 30.  
Dec. 11.

1673.  
Feb. 5.

<sup>1</sup> Miscel. Aul. 79. Parker, 262, 264. North, 56.

CHAP. "Carthage must be destroyed:" he ridiculed the  
 IV. jealousy of those who feared that the army raised on  
 A.D. 1673. account of the war might afterwards be employed  
 — against the liberties of the country, and solicited a plentiful supply, to disappoint the expectations of the enemy, and secure a speedy and profitable peace.<sup>1</sup>

1. The first object which occupied the attention of the Commons was the legality of the writs issued during the prorogation; and in this they obeyed the  
 Feb. 6. command of the king, whether he already began to withdraw his confidence from Shaftesbury, or was desirous to propitiate the men who had displayed so much devotion to his person. That the chancellor had acted according to the precedent of former times, was certain: the claim set up by the house, that the order for the writ must originate with the speaker, could not be traced to an earlier period than the year 1640; and it seemed reasonable to conclude, that, like the other prerogatives of the crown, this had also been recovered at the restoration. But the House of Commons has never surrendered a privilege which it has once exercised: it was contended that numerous inconveniences would arise from the right claimed by the chancellor; and a resolution was passed that the elections were void, and that new writs should be issued in virtue of a warrant from the speaker. The disappointment opened the eyes of Shaftesbury to the real character of the prince whom he served. He saw that Charles was fonder of ease than of power, more disposed to conciliate than to compel,

<sup>1</sup> L. Journ. 523—526. Miscel. Aul. 98. "Shaftesbury expressed "to Locke the vexation which he felt at being made the organ of "such sentiments."—Lord King's Life of Locke, i. 63. But he considered himself as speaking the king's sentiments, and therefore not responsible for what he said!

and more likely to sacrifice an obnoxious minister than to put down a fierce and stubborn opponent.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1673.  
—  
Feb. 7.

2. The house proceeded, in the next place, to the consideration of the supply, and, by an unanimous vote, fixed it at the amount of one million two hundred and sixty thousand pounds, to be raised by eighteen monthly assessments. For this liberal and unexpected grant Charles was indebted to the exertions of the two leaders of the opposition, Garroway and Lee, who did not escape the suspicion of having sold themselves to the court, though their friends endeavoured to account for their conduct on the specious ground that they deemed it politic to hold out to the king so large a sum as a temptation to his indigence. He had assured them in his speech, that "he would stick to his declaration of indulgence." They meant to put his resolution to the test. If he yielded, the money was at his command; if he persisted, no steps would be taken to perfect this previous vote.<sup>2</sup>

3. The country party now directed all their efforts to procure the recall of the declaration. Of the indulgence itself they affected not to disapprove; their objections went to the form. They were willing to extend relief to the Protestant dissenters, but it must be done in a parliamentary way. The royal authority was bounded by the same limits in ecclesiastical as in

<sup>1</sup> C. Journ. Feb. 6. Parl. Hist. iv. 507—512. Parker, 262—265. Orleans, 242.

<sup>2</sup> Com. Journ. Feb. 7. Burnet, ii. 13. We are, however, told by North, that Sir Thomas Lee, Mr. Garroway, and Sir Thomas Meres, "the bell-wethers of the country party," obtained places in the customs, admiralty, and excise, for their occasional compliance with the court (p. 456): and Lord Dorchester asserts that Lee received for his services on this occasion the sum of six thousand pounds, which one of the clerks of the treasury brought in a hackney-coach to Fleet-ditch, where Lee met him. At a signal they stopped, changed coaches, and drove away.—Burnet, ii. 83, note.

CHAP. civil matters; the king might remit the penalties of  
 IV. the offence, but he could not suspend the execution of  
 A.D. 1673. the law. By the courtiers the claim of the prerogative  
 — was feebly supported on the ground of necessity; be-  
 cause the power of dispensing with the law must  
 reside somewhere; otherwise numerous cases might  
 arise during the intervals of parliament, in which the  
 welfare, the very safety of the state, would be sacri-  
 ficed to an impolitic and unreasonable jealousy. After  
 a long and adjourned debate, it was resolved by a  
 Feb. 10. majority of one hundred and sixty-eight to one hun-  
 dred and sixteen, that "penal statutes in matters  
 "ecclesiastical cannot be suspended but by an act of  
 Feb. 14. "Parliament."<sup>1</sup> This resolution was embodied in an  
 address presented to the king. Charles required time  
 Feb. 24. to consider the question, and then replied, that he was  
 sorry they had questioned his ecclesiastical authority,  
 which had never been questioned in the reigns of his  
 ancestors; that he pretended to no right of suspending  
 any laws concerning the properties, rights, or liberties  
 of the subject; that his only object, in the exercise of  
 his ecclesiastical power, was to relieve the dissenters;  
 and that he did it not with the intention of avoiding  
 the advice of parliament, but was still ready to assent  
 to any bill which might be offered to him, appearing  
 better calculated than his declaration to effect the  
 ends which he had in view, the ease of all his subjects,  
 and the peace and establishment of the church of  
 Feb. 26. England. But this answer was voted insufficient;  
 and a second address informed him that he had been  
 misled by his advisers; that the power of suspend-  
 ing statutes in matters ecclesiastical had never been

<sup>1</sup> C. Journ. Feb. 10. Yet Burnet describes it as "a very unani-  
 "mous resolution" (ii. 6).

claimed or exercised by his ancestors; and that his faithful Commons prayed from his goodness a more full and satisfactory reply to their petition.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1673.

By Charles this second address was received as an insult. He declared that he would dissolve the parliament rather than submit to the dictation of his opponents. Shaftesbury, Clifford, Buckingham, and Lauderdale applauded his spirit; and the duke of York, though he differed from them on most subjects, concurred with them in this. Concession, it was argued, had been the ruin of the father, it would prove the ruin of the son; to bend in one instance would only lead to additional demands. Let him assume a determined and authoritative tone; let him show that he would never resign a single right of the crown; the opposition would then melt away, and the proudest of his opponents would learn to crouch at the feet of the sovereign. Animated by their discourse, Charles gave himself credit for a degree of resolution which he did not possess; and, when Arlington conjured him to yield, scornfully rejected the advice of his timid and time-serving counsellor. It was determined to oppose one house to the other. In a short speech to the Lords, the king complained of the encroachments of the Commons, ordered their addresses and his answers to be laid on the table, and solicited the advice of the peers, the hereditary counsellors of the crown. Clifford spoke with his accustomed boldness; but Shaftesbury, who began to doubt of the result, betrayed a disposition to court popularity. His individual opinion was, he said, in favour of the prerogative; but he would not venture to place it in the

Feb. 27.

March 1.

<sup>1</sup> C. Journ. Feb. 14, 24, 26. L. Journ. xii. 540. Parl. Hist. iv. 518—534, 546—551.

CHAP. balance against the authority of so august a body as  
 IV. the House of Commons. After a long debate, the  
 A.D. 1673. Lords resolved, without a division, that the king's  
 — proposal to settle the question in a parliamentary way  
 March 4. was a good and gracious answer.<sup>1</sup>

The public had watched with intense interest these proceedings in parliament, and many thought that they discovered in them the certain prognostics of a second civil war. By the States the hope of a dissolution was cherished; thus the aid of one million two hundred and sixty thousand pounds would be intercepted, and the king be compelled to conclude a peace, or to adopt the defensive system which had been attended with indelible disgrace in the late war. The sagacity of Louis suggested to him the apprehension of similar results. By his order Colbert waited on the king, represented to him the disastrous consequences of a breach between him and the parliament, exhorted him to yield for the moment, and promised, on the return of peace, to aid him with men and money for the purpose of recovering the rights which he might be induced to surrender. The resolution of Charles was already exhausted by its previous efforts; he willingly listened to the counsels of the ambassador; and the promise of money, always welcome to his indigence, was gratefully accepted; but as far as regarded military aid, that, he said, should never be solicited by him against his subjects, unless he were reduced to the last extremity by another rebellion. The same evening, sending for the decla-

<sup>1</sup> L. Journals, xii. 539, 543. Dalrymple, ii. 89. Orleans, 240. Burnet, ii. 7, 8. There is, however, in Burnet's narrative, so much unquestionably false, that it is difficult to judge what may be probably true. But his account of Shaftesbury's speech is confirmed by the lord-keeper Guildford.—Dalrymple, ii. 90.

ration, he cancelled it in the presence of the ministers, and the next morning forwarded a solemn promise to the Lords and Commons, that "what had been done" with respect to the suspension of the penal laws "should never be drawn into consequence." The two houses testified their joy by acclamation; and in the evening numerous bonfires illuminated the streets of the metropolis.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1673.  
—  
March 8.

4. It may excite surprise that the dissenters did not rally round the throne in defence of a measure in which their interests were so deeply concerned. But it was an age in which religious antipathies exercised an unbounded influence over the judgments of men. The knowledge that the duchess of York had died a Catholic, the suspicion that the duke of York, the presumptive heir to the crown, had embraced the Catholic faith, and the fact of the alliance with France, a Catholic power, against the Dutch, a Protestant state, were confidently brought forward to prove the existence of a most dangerous conspiracy against all the reformed churches; the declaration of indulgence to tender consciences was represented as the first of the measures devised by the conspirators for the accomplishment of their unholy purpose; and the dissenters were exhorted and solicited to surrender the advantages which it promised them, for more secure, though, perhaps, less extensive relief to be granted by act of parliament. These arguments had weight with numbers; their jealousies and apprehensions were awakened; they consented to sacrifice their personal interest to the general good, and joined in the popular cry, which demanded additional securities for the reformed

<sup>1</sup> Dalrymple, ii. 93—96. L. Journ. xii. 549.

CHAP. IV. A.D. 1673. — faith.<sup>1</sup> Of these securities, the first regarded the small force lately raised to be employed on the continent. It was remarked that Fitzgerald, the major-general, and a few other officers, were Catholics, and that Schomberg, the commander-in-chief, though a Calvinist, was not only a foreigner, but also held high rank in the French army. Why, it was asked, were such men selected for the command? Did there not exist an intention of employing them, at the conclusion of the war, to establish popery and arbitrary power? To remove these fears, an address was voted, requesting the king to discharge from the army every officer and soldier who should refuse to take the oaths of allegiance and supremacy, and receive the sacrament after the rite of the church of England; and to admit no man, thereafter, into the service, who did not take the oaths before the first, and the sacrament before the second, muster. Charles returned a satisfactory answer;<sup>2</sup> and the anti-Catholics, elate with their victory, proceeded to urge the exclusion of those who were the objects of their jealousy from civil as well as military offices. The suggestion of a test for this purpose came to them from a quarter whence it was not to have been expected,—from Arlington, the reputed papist. But to Arlington it presented several advantages. It would remove from him the suspicion of catholicity; it would enable him to gratify his resentment against Clifford; it would bring once more within his reach the treasurer's staff, the great object of his ambition; and it would serve to screen him from danger, by creating in his favour an interest among the popular leaders. By them

<sup>1</sup> Guildford apud Dalrymple, ii. 91.

<sup>2</sup> L. Journ. xii. 547, 548, 549.



the proposal was gratefully accepted, under the expectation that such a test would solve the question of the duke of York's religion, and, by stripping him of office, exhibit him to the people in a state of political weakness and degradation. Neither did the chiefs of the court party prove more hostile than their opponents to a measure which opened to them the prospect of power and emolument from the resignations and removals which it would inevitably occasion. Even the king himself was brought to give his consent. The passing of the test was represented to him as the only condition on which he could hope to obtain the liberal supply that had been voted; and to a prince, with whom, as it was observed, "logic, built upon money, "had more powerful charms than any other sort of "reasoning," this consideration proved a convincing argument. If he felt at all for his brother, he probably strove to persuade himself that James would never sacrifice the possession of office to the profession of his religion.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1673.

In conformity with the suggestion of Arlington, the House of Commons had resolved, that every individual "refusing to take the oath of allegiance and supremacy, and to receive the sacrament according to the "rites of the church of England, should be incapable "of public employment, military or civil;" and a bill

Feb. 28.

<sup>1</sup> The French ambassador supplies the information respecting Arlington and his object (Dalrymple, ii. App. p. 90); Marvell respecting the motives of the king, and the leaders of the opposite parties.—Marvell, i. 494, 495. Neal attributes the Test Act to an omission on the part of the king, whom he represents as returning no answer to the petition of the two houses for the removal of Catholics from office.—Neal, ii. 693. But their petition did not ask for any such removal, and it was posterior in time to the resolution for a test. The petition was presented March 7; but the resolution was passed Feb. 28. See Journals on those days.

CHAP. was introduced requiring, not only that the oaths should  
 IV.  
 A.D. 1673. be taken, and the sacrament received, but also that  
 — a declaration against transubstantiation should be subscribed by all persons holding office, under the penalty of a fine of five hundred pounds, and of being disabled to sue in any court of law or equity, to be guardian to any child, or executor to any person, or to take any legacy or deed of gift, or to bear any public office. In  
 March 12. the lower house, a feeble opposition was offered to the clause imposing the declaration, on the ground that to make the disavowal of a speculative opinion the qualification for civil office was contrary to the nature of a civil test, and calculated to render men hypocrites or atheists. In the upper house the principal novelty in the debate was furnished by the earl of Bristol, who, though a Catholic, argued in support  
 March 15. of the test. That considerable alarm existed could not, he said, be denied. It mattered little whether it was well founded or not. The more groundless the panic was, the more rapidly it would spread. If, then, the bill tended to lull the apprehensions of the people, it deserved the approbation of the house. It did not enact new, it did not enforce even the old, penalties against the Catholic worship. It went merely to remove a few individuals from offices which they could not exercise without scruple and dissimulation. For himself, he was no wherryman in religion, to look one way and row another. He was a Catholic, attached to the church, but not to the court of Rome. He should vote, indeed, against the bill, because it contained expressions to which he could not conscientiously assent; but he hoped that the house would adopt it, as a measure of prudence, calculated to prevent mischief and to pacify discontent. By this speech,

Bristol obtained the reputation of a patriot: the reader will, perhaps, think him a hypocrite; for he prevailed on the parliament to adopt a proviso in his favour, securing to him and his wife a large pension from the crown, and exempting them, and them alone, from the obligation of taking the test.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1673.

5. The bill passed the House of Lords, as it had passed that of the Commons, without provoking a division; and it may reasonably be asked, how it happened that it received no opposition from the dissenters, when it was so framed as to comprehend them, though its avowed object was the exclusion of others? They seem again to have suffered themselves to be duped by the artifice of their pretended friends. With the bill for the test, was introduced another for ease to Protestant dissenters, and thus their objection to the first was neutralized by their hopes from the second. But while one passed rapidly through the house, the other crept slowly on; new questions successively arose, and day after day was spent in debating what quantity of relief should be granted, to what description of nonconformists it should extend, and for how long a time it should be continued. The house at length agreed to confine the benefit to those dissenters who objected only to the articles of discipline, and were willing to subscribe the articles of doctrine of the church of England, to allow all such to hold separate meetings for the purpose of religious worship, to exempt them from the penalties for absence from the parish church, and to repeal in their favour the compulsory declaration of *assent* and *consent* ordained by the Act of Uniformity. In this shape the

March 20.

March 17.

<sup>1</sup> C. Journ. Mar. 12. L. Journ. 557, 559, 561, 567, 569. Parl. Hist. iv. 561—566. Stat. of Realm, v. 782.

CHAP. bill was forwarded to the House of Lords, where it  
 IV.  
 A.D. 1673. received numerous amendments: to some of these the  
 Commons objected; and though the king warned  
 March 24. them of the approaching termination of the session,  
 no care was taken to come to an agreement. On  
 March 29. Easter eve, the parliament was adjourned at nine in  
 the evening; before it met again a prorogation fol-  
 lowed, and the hopes of relief which the dissenters  
 had been encouraged to cherish were utterly extin-  
 guished.<sup>1</sup>

In the history of this session, it is worthy of notice:  
 1. That not a murmur was heard from the ranks of  
 the opposition against the war, or the alliance with  
 France, or the suspension of payments in the exche-  
 quer. Of these great subjects of complaint no men-  
 tion is made either in the addresses or the debates.  
 But not only was silence observed; in addition, an act  
 of grace was passed, which, by pardoning all offences  
 committed before the 25th of March, covered the  
 ministers from the risk of subsequent punishment.  
 It seems as if a secret understanding existed be-  
 tween some of the leaders of the two parties; and  
 that the members of the cabal had sacrificed the  
 Catholics to the jealousy of their opponents, on  
 condition of indemnity to themselves.<sup>2</sup> 2. The House  
 of Commons, in the bill which it passed for the ease  
 of dissenters, departed from those doctrines which it  
 had so strenuously advocated in its celebrated address  
 to the king, in 1663. At that time it protested

<sup>1</sup> Lords' Journ. 561, 564, 571, 576, 579, 584. Parl. Hist. iv. 535, 542, 551, 556, 571, 575.

<sup>2</sup> "It was the constant practice of these ministers, that when any  
 "of them were afraid of the House of Commons for themselves,  
 "they presently exposed the papists to be worried, hoping thereby  
 "to save themselves from being fastened upon."—James, i. 499.

against any indulgence, because it was inconsistent with the Act of Uniformity, calculated to breed schism and multiply sects, and would ultimately lead to universal toleration.<sup>1</sup> But now the distinction between articles of doctrine and articles of discipline, at that time refused, was broadly admitted; the pains and penalties for absence from church, or attendance at conventicles, then considered essential to the safety of the establishment, were taken away; and the declaration of assent and consent, the principal provision in the Act of Uniformity, was rendered entirely optional. 3. With respect to the test, it should be remembered that the oath of supremacy and the subscription against transubstantiation were sufficient to exclude the Catholics from office; the obligation of receiving the sacrament after the rite of the established church was unnecessary as far as regarded *them*; but it operated effectually to the exclusion of the dissenters. Thus the latter, by contributing to the establishment of the test, placed themselves in a much worse situation than before. They forfeited the benefit of the king's declaration; they remained subject to the intolerant laws passed against them since the restoration; and in addition, they entailed on themselves and their posterity a new disability, that of holding employment, civil or military, under the crown.

In Holland, the rapid success of the French had provoked, instead of subduing, resistance. De Witt, who had so long governed the republic, fell a victim with his brother to the vengeance of an infuriated mob; the prince of Orange took on himself the proud task of liberating his country; and the absence of contending factions gave a more uniform direction to

<sup>1</sup> C. Journ. Feb. 27, 1663.

CHAP. the national efforts, and inspired with greater confi-  
 IV.  
 A.D. 1673. dence the princes who dreaded the ascendancy of  
 — France. During the winter Louis made no additional  
 conquests: in the summer the reduction of Maestricht  
 May 13. was the only exploit which distinguished his arms.  
 After a succession of marches and operations in  
 Flanders, undertaken for the sole purpose of masking  
 June 1. his real object, he suddenly sat down before that  
 fortress, which capitulated after an obstinate defence  
 June 23. of twenty-three days. Monmouth, who led the  
 English auxiliaries, commanded under him with the  
 rank of lieutenant-general. His want of military  
 experience was supplied by the counsels of Montal;  
 his personal courage won the applause of the king  
 and of the army.<sup>1</sup>

In England, the liberal supply voted by parliament  
 gave new vigour to the preparations for war. A fleet  
 of more than sixty sail of large ships was equipped,  
 and an army of eight thousand men was raised and  
 encamped at Blackheath for foreign service. But at  
 first all men fixed their eyes on the duke of York,  
 anxious to learn whether he would take or refuse the  
 March 30. test. His conversion to the church of Rome still  
 remained a matter of mere suspicion; but it was  
 observed that, at Easter, when the king received the

<sup>1</sup> Buckingham (Sheffield, Works, ii. 24) says that "a sure and  
 "easy attack was kept back till his day of commanding, that he  
 "might have the credit of the success." This insinuation is ground-  
 less. On that occasion, says Louis in a letter to Charles, il fit  
 tout ce qui se pouvoit pour signaler davantage sa conduite et sa  
 valeur. Je ne dois pas même oublier que le lendemain les assiégés  
 étant sortis sur la demi-lune à la faveur d'un fourneau, il fut à eux  
 l'épée à la main au premier bruit de la sortie, et leur fit quitter le  
 logement.—Louis, iii. 412. That this was not mere compliment  
 appears from the following passage in the king's journal of the  
 siege:—"Le duc de Monmouth s'acquit à la tête des mousquetaires  
 "une grande reputation."—Ibid. 375. See also James, i. 493.

sacrament, James did not accompany him ;<sup>1</sup> and soon afterwards the fact became public by his voluntary resignation of all the offices which he held under the crown. At the same time, and for the same reason, the Lord Clifford relinquished the treasurer's staff, in opposition to the advice and entreaty of the king. By those who were acquainted with his aspiring character, and able to judge how much it must have cost him to suppress at once the hopes which he had so fondly cherished, it was supposed that he had bound himself by promise to follow the duke of York ; but that prince declares that Clifford was actuated by motives of conscience, and pronounces his conduct the more honourable, as it was the less to be expected from one who had so recently become a proselyte. By his resignation the ambition of Arlington was again awakened, but was again disappointed. The king, by the advice of James and Clifford, gave the staff to Arlington's enemy, Sir Thomas Osborne, who was soon afterwards raised to the peerage, by the title of Viscount Latymer.<sup>2</sup>

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1673.

June 19.

August 15.

By the retirement of James, the command of the combined fleet, amounting to ninety sail of the line, had devolved on Prince Rupert. With so formidable

<sup>1</sup> Evelyn, ii. 380. The king had employed Lord Clifford to prevail on James to take the sacrament with him at Christmas ; but the duke replied that his conscience forbade him.—James, i. 482.

<sup>2</sup> Evelyn (ii. 383) says, "I am confident he (Clifford) forbore receiving the communion, more from some promise he had entered into to gratify the duke, than from any prejudice to the Protestant religion, though I found him wavering a pretty while." But he proved his sincerity, for "the test ousted him of the place of lord treasurer of England, and of being any longer a privy councillor ; who, though a new convert, generously preferred his conscience to his interests."—James, i. 484. These passages prove that those writers are incorrect who represent him all along as a Catholic. Besides Lord Clifford, Lord Belassye, Sir Thomas Strickland, and several others in eminent stations, resigned.—Marvell, i. 458.

CHAP. a force, it was expected that he would sweep the  
 IV.  
 A.D. 1673. Dutch navy from the face of the ocean; but he per-  
 — formed nothing worthy of his reputation; and, though  
 May 28. he fought three actions with De Ruyter, neither  
 June 4. received nor inflicted considerable injury. His friends  
 August 11. complained that his powers were limited by unusual  
 restrictions, and that his ships wanted stores and pro-  
 visions; an officer who was present asserts that he  
 was too closely leagued with the country party to  
 obtain a victory, which might render their opponents  
 lords of the ascendant. He was ordered to take  
 under his protection the army commanded by Schom-  
 berg, and to land it on the coast of Holland. Schom-  
 berg, unacquainted with naval etiquette, affixed the  
 colours of his regiment to the mast of his vessel, as a  
 signal to the officers in the other transports; but  
 Rupert considered his conduct as an act of insub-  
 ordination or insult; two shots were fired through  
 the rigging; and orders were given to sink the gene-  
 ral's vessel, unless the flag were immediately struck.  
 Schomberg reluctantly submitted, and the armament  
 proceeded to the Dutch coast; but no landing was  
 effected. Rupert, having alarmed the inhabitants on  
 several points, from the mouth of the Maese to that  
 of the Ems, ordered the military force to return to  
 Yarmouth, where it remained encamped during the  
 rest of the season. Schomberg, attributing both the  
 violence of the prince with respect to the flag, and his  
 refusal to land the army in Holland, to personal dis-  
 like, sent him a challenge; but Charles interfered to  
 prevent the meeting, and the general quitted the  
 English service.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Buckingham (Sheffield), ii. 25, 29. See also a letter from the king to Rupert, in which he calls the raising of the flag "a casual



A congress had been held at Cologne, under the mediation of the king of Sweden. But the States had now a brighter prospect before them, and scornfully refused conditions which they would have gladly accepted in the preceding summer. The assassination of the two De Witts by the populace had destroyed the influence of the Louvestein party; the Orange interest obtained the predominance in every province; and the young prince already displayed that decision of mind, that inflexibility of purpose, which marked his character through life. The other powers of Europe did not remain indifferent spectators of the contest. Leopold of Austria and Charles of Spain offered their assistance; and a defensive alliance bound them to unite their arms against the enemies of the republic.<sup>1</sup> This was not the least singular of the revolutions which the seventeenth century exhibited. The remembrance of past injuries was suppressed; the objections of religion were silenced; and the emperor and king of Spain, the representatives of that family from whose iron yoke the United Pro-

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1673.

August 20.

“and inoffensive error, laments the mortification of Schomberg, and “is not willing that the quarrel should be carried any further.”—Lansdowne MSS. 1206, p. 158.

<sup>1</sup> Dumont, vii. 240, 243. Soon afterwards Louis, to keep Charles firm to his engagements, granted him a very singular favour. By the death of the last duke of Richmond, Aubigni, in the province of Berry, which had been granted to one of his ancestors, reverted to the French crown. On the 29th of July, 1672, Louise de Querouaille bore a son to Charles; the next year he created her duchess of Portsmouth; and Louis, at the desire of the king, conferred on her the domain of Aubigni, to be enjoyed by her during her life, and at her death to go to any one of the natural sons of Charles whom that monarch might please to name, and to the male descendants of that son, “to the end that the land of Aubigni might continue in “possession of the illustrious house of Stuart.” Charles, of course, named his son by Querouaille, and created him duke of Richmond, Aug. 19, 1675. See the letters patent of Louis XIV. (Note D), who naturalized the duke on the 12th of Jan. 1685, three weeks before the death of his father.

CHAP. vines had been lately freed, now hastened to their  
 IV.  
 A.D. 1673. support in opposition to England and France, the two  
 — powers which had originally watched and protected  
 the cradle of Dutch independence.

But the States not only obtained foreign aid, they indulged a well-founded hope of separating Charles from his alliance with France, and with that view kept up a close correspondence with the discontented party in England. If the religious antipathies of the people had been excited by the conversion of James to the Catholic faith, they were now blown into a flame by the intelligence that he had recently married by proxy the sister to the reigning duke of Modena, Maria d'Este, a Catholic princess of the age of fifteen.<sup>1</sup> The danger to the Protestant religion from this inauspicious union became the subject of every discourse; and Charles, that the popular excitation might have time to subside, and the real intention of the States be satisfactorily ascertained, resolved to postpone the meeting of parliament to the termination of the Christmas holidays. From this counsel he was seduced by the artful and treacherous suggestion of the chancellor, who had secretly been reconciled, and had made the promise of his services, to the country party. On the appointed day, the 20th of October, the two houses assembled; but Shaftesbury, in defiance of the order which he had received, neglected to adjourn them till the Commons had voted an address to the king, praying that he would not permit "the marriage between the duke and the "princess of Modena to be consummated." They

<sup>1</sup> James, i. 484. He had first solicited the hand of the archduchess of Inspruck, but that princess preferred the emperor Leopold. See the negotiation in Miscel. Aul. 65, 107.

met again on the 27th, and were informed that his majesty could not in honour break a contract of marriage which had been solemnly executed. But his opponents in the lower house were not to be deterred; their plan of operations had been previously arranged, and they proceeded to resolve that a second petition, of the same import with the first, should be presented; that no supply should be granted, unless the obstinacy of the Dutch made it necessary, till the country was secured from the danger of popery and popish counsellors, and the existing grievances were redressed; that a test should be imposed to distinguish between Protestant and Papist, and render the latter incapable, not only of office, but of sitting in either house of parliament; that the standing army was a grievance which ought to be redressed; and that (as had been done by the long parliament in the time of Charles I.) the king should be petitioned to appoint a day of general fasting, that God might avert the dangers with which the nation was threatened. These votes created alarm in the court; and Charles, hastening to the House of Lords, prorogued the parliament.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1673.  
—  
Oct. 27.

Nov. 4.

By this decisive measure, the hopes of the opposition were disappointed, and Shaftesbury became the victim of his own policy. Calculating on the easy, irresolute disposition of the king, he had anticipated victory instead of defeat, and probably expected to retain his high office, while his colleagues should be excluded from the royal counsels. Charles, having granted him a full pardon for all offences against the crown, demanded the great seal, which he gave to Sir Heneage Finch, with the office of

Nov. 9.

<sup>1</sup> Com. Journals, Oct. 20, 27, 30, 31; Nov. 3, 4. James, i. 485. Burnet, ii. 31.

CHAP. lord keeper ;<sup>1</sup> and the disgraced minister, hitherto  
 IV.  
 A.D. 1673. the adviser of the most arbitrary measures, openly  
 — proclaimed himself the adversary of the court and the  
 champion of the liberties of the people. He walked  
 daily in the Exchange, accompanied by some of the  
 young nobility, entered into familiar conversation  
 with the merchants, and feelingly deplored to them  
 the miseries of the nation, the depression of trade,  
 and the danger which threatened religion. In the  
 estimation of his new associates, his political conver-  
 sion had obliterated the guilt of his former trans-  
 gressions ; he was applauded as a persecuted patriot,  
 a martyr to the liberties of his country ; and, doubtful  
 as it was whether he believed or not in revelation,  
 theologians were found to describe him from the  
 pulpit as the saviour of religion, and to foretell that  
 his fame, like that of the woman mentioned in the  
 gospel, should live throughout future generations.<sup>1</sup>  
 He failed, however, in his attempt to procure an  
 address to the king from the common council. Charles  
 had many friends in the capital ; and the leading  
 citizens, on the signification of the royal disapproba-  
 tion, refused their concurrence.<sup>2</sup>

The votes of the House of Commons had spread  
 consternation among the courtiers, and Arlington  
 conjured the king either to prevent the departure of

<sup>1</sup> The reader will recollect that in 1614 it was resolved, that for  
 the future no attorney-general should sit in the House of Commons,  
 because, by his office, he is an assistant of the House of Lords. In  
 consequence, in the years 1620, 1625, 1640, when members of the  
 House of Commons were appointed to the office, new writs were  
 issued by the speaker. On the elevation of Finch to the Chancery,  
 North succeeded as attorney-general, but did not, as others before  
 him, vacate his seat. Though some members complained, he was  
 permitted to remain in the house. All his successors have continued  
 to sit without molestation.

<sup>2</sup> James, i. 488. Parker, 266, 267, 271. Macph. Pap. i. 69.

the Italian princess from Paris, or to insist that James after his marriage should withdraw from public notice, and lead the life of a country gentleman. But Charles replied, that the first was incompatible with his honour, and the second would be an indignity to his brother. The duchess left Paris, James with a small retinue met her at Dover, and Crew, bishop of Oxford, declared the marriage lawful and valid.<sup>1</sup> Here, however, the earl of Berkshire, a Catholic, probably at the request of the king, advised the duke to solicit permission that he might retire to Audley-end, both for his own quiet and the royal convenience. James indignantly refused: his interest, he said, required that he should be on the spot to oppose his enemies; his duty forbade him to desert his brother without the royal command. From Dover, he returned to the palace of St James's, where the duchess, by her youth, and beauty, and innocence, disarmed the malevolence of party, and became a general favourite with the court. Charles, however, partook of the common alarm. He refused her the use of a public chapel, which had previously been stipulated; he ordered the officers of the household to prevent all Catholics, or reputed Catholics, from entering the palace, or coming into the royal presence; he forbade, by an order of council, any popish recusant to walk in the park, or visit at St. James's, and he instructed the judges to enforce with rigour the execution of the penal laws against the Catholics.<sup>2</sup>

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1673.

Nov. 21.

Nov. 26.

Dec. 10.

<sup>1</sup> James, i. 486. Temple, ii. 288. The ceremony was merely the following:—"The bishop asked the duchess and the earl of Peterborough whether the said earl had married the duchess of York as proxy of the duke, which they both affirming, the bishop then declared it was a lawful marriage."—Ibid.

<sup>2</sup> James, i. 487. Kennet, 296. L. Journ. 595. James, i. 499.

CHAP. IV. By these regulations the king hoped to satisfy the  
 A.D. 1674. more moderate of his opponents. When the houses  
 Jan. 7. met after the prorogation, he addressed them with  
 that air of candour, affability, and cheerfulness, which  
 was so natural to him ; and was followed by the lord  
 keeper in a long and eloquent speech, describing the  
 object of the measures lately adopted, imputing to the  
 States insincerity in the negotiation, extolling the  
 king's attachment to the doctrines and worship of the  
 established church, and demanding a supply as equally  
 necessary for the attainment of peace and the prose-  
 cution of the war. But neither the affability of the  
 king, nor the eloquence of the minister, could make  
 any impression on the leaders of the party, who were  
 now supposed to act under the guidance of Shaftes-  
 bury. 1. It was too late to resume the question of  
 the duke's marriage ; they therefore began with the  
 presentation of three addresses, praying the king to  
 Jan. 12. enjoin a public fast, that the whole nation might  
 implore the protection of the Almighty for the pre-  
 servation "of church and state against the under-  
 mining practices of popish recusants ;" to command  
 all papists not householders to remove to the distance  
 of ten miles from the capital during the session of  
 parliament ; to order that the names of all popish  
 householders within the distance of five miles should  
 be enrolled at the sessions, and to direct the militia  
 of London, Westminster, and Middlesex to be ready

Burnet, ii. 30, 37. These orders were executed with such severity,  
 that within the course of two months seven Catholic peers were com-  
 pelled to appeal to the House of Lords for protection ; namely, the  
 marquess of Winchester for himself and his servant ; the earl of  
 Norwich for himself and his two sons ; and the earl of Cardigan, the  
 viscount Montague, and the lords Petre, Arundel, and Belassye, for  
 themselves.—L. Journ. xii. 613, 621, 622, 635, 642.

at an hour's notice, and the militia of the country at a day's notice, to suppress any tumultuous meetings of papists or other discontented persons. It cannot be pretended that there existed any real ground for these precautions and insinuations; but the experience of the civil war had shown how efficacious such addresses were in exciting vague and alarming jealousies in the minds of the people, and in directing their attention to the parliament as the faithful guardian of religion and liberty: and similar proceedings were at present adopted in furtherance of the projects of the party whose great aim was believed to be the exclusion of the duke of York from the throne. To each address Charles returned a gracious and satisfactory answer.<sup>1</sup>

2. They proceeded next to vote the removal from office of all counsellors "popishly affected, or otherwise obnoxious or dangerous." Who, it was asked, advised the alliance with France and the rupture with Holland, the declaration of indulgence, and the suspension of payment to the public creditor, the levy of an army without the advice of parliament, and the placing of a foreigner at the head of that army, the marriage of the duke of York, and the prorogation of last November? Let inquiry be made; let a mark be placed on the authors of such evil counsels; let them be incapacitated from repeating their pernicious advice, and from inflicting new injuries on the nation.<sup>2</sup>

It was a maxim with the court, introduced by Clarendon and followed by his successors, to leave the parliament, in show at least, to the unbiassed exercise

<sup>1</sup> L. Journal, xii. 594, 598. C. Journ. Jan. 7, 12. On the 1st of August, 1673, the duke of York told the French envoy that he was afraid of being excluded from the succession.—Dalrymple, ii. App. 98.

<sup>2</sup> C. Journ. Jan. 12, 13, 14.

CHAP. of its own judgment. Though every species of influ-  
 IV. ence and corruption was employed to secure votes, the  
 A.D. 1674. appearance of a court party was carefully avoided.  
 — The most devoted adherents of the ministers received  
 directions to conceal their real sentiments, to seek  
 popularity, to speak and vote frequently with the op-  
 position, to join in the cry against popery, and in the  
 most violent measures against its professors, that on  
 more important occasions their opinions might appear  
 disinterested, and consequently have greater weight  
 with their colleagues. Hence it generally happened  
 that the motions which the court wished to carry came  
 first from the ranks of the opposition; and that the  
 resistance to the measures of the country party was  
 feeble, fluctuating, and cautious. The question was  
 never met fairly and manfully; but the debate was  
 protracted, difficulties were raised, amendments were  
 suggested, and, as a last resource, some unintelligible  
 and irreconcilable quarrel about privilege was provoked  
 between the two houses.

On the present occasion the court pursued its usual  
 policy. The friends of the ministers did not deny that  
 evil counsels might have been given; but contended  
 that no man could justly be punished before he had  
 been put on his defence. They admitted that grievances  
 existed, but represented the grant of a supply as not  
 less necessary to the welfare of the nation than the  
 redress of grievances. Why might not the two sub-  
 jects accompany each other, and one day be devoted to  
 the consideration of grievances, the next to the con-  
 sideration of the supply? Why should not the clamours  
 against evil counsellors be reduced to specific charges,  
 and the accused be permitted to justify themselves?<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Parl. Hist. iv. 620.



13. But their opponents adhered steadily to their own plan, and proceeded to consider, in the first place, the case of the duke of Lauderdale. It was alleged against him, that, as chief of the administration in Scotland, he had raised an army for the purpose of employing it to establish arbitrary power in England; and that at the council in England, when a magistrate was charged before it with disobedience to the royal declaration, he had said, "Your majesty's edicts are equal with the laws, and ought to be observed in the first place." It was resolved that an address should be presented to the king "to remove Lauderdale from all his employments," and from the royal presence "and councils for ever."<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1674.  
—  
Jan. 13.

Buckingham, aware that he was destined to be the next victim, solicited and obtained permission to address the house. His first speech was confused and unsatisfactory; nor did his second, on the following day, supply the deficiencies of the former. He represented himself as a man who had spent a princely fortune in the service of his country; and reminded his hearers of the patriotism with which he had once braved the resentment of the court. He offered nothing in defence of the conduct of the ministry; but sought by evasion and falsehood to shift the responsibility from himself. Some of their measures he pretended that he had opposed, in conjunction with the earl of Shaftesbury; some he imputed to Lord Clifford, who was no longer alive to rebut the charge;<sup>2</sup> some he openly attributed to his known enemy, the earl of Arlington; and of others he darkly insinuated that the blame lay with the royal brothers, by the enigmatical remark, that a

Jan. 14.

<sup>1</sup> C. Journ. Jan. 13. Parl. Hist. iv. 625, 630.

<sup>2</sup> He died of the stone at Ugbrooke, 17th Oct. 1673.

CHAP. man might hunt the hare with a pack of beagles, but  
 IV. not with a brace of lobsters. His submission obtained  
 A.D. 1674. — for him some indulgence from the house. It was voted,  
 indeed, that, like Lauderdale, he should be removed  
 from the royal presence and councils; but, with respect  
 to office, only from those employments which he held  
 during pleasure: words that left him at liberty to  
 dispose by sale of such as he held by patent.<sup>1</sup> To the  
 address against him, as well as that against Lauderdale,  
 Charles briefly replied, that he would take it into  
 consideration.

Against Arlington was exhibited an impeachment of  
 treason, and of crimes of high misdemeanour, in a great  
 Jan. 15. number of articles, arranged under the three heads of  
 promoting popery, embezzling and wasting the royal  
 treasure, and betraying the trust reposed in him as  
 privy councillor. Of these articles three parts in four  
 had evidently no other foundation than suspicion and  
 report, and the ease with which they were refuted  
 served to throw ridicule on the whole charge. Arling-  
 ton addressed the house with more firmness than had  
 been expected. To the assertions of Buckingham he  
 gave the most pointed contradiction; and reprobated  
 the injustice of imputing to one councillor the blame  
 or merit of measures which had been adopted in con-  
 sequence of the judgment and advice of the whole  
 board. Arlington had secret friends among those who

<sup>1</sup> C. Journ. Jan. 13, 14. Parl. Hist. iv. 630, 649. Burnet, ii. 38. Reresby, 24. At the same time the House of Lords was employed in an inquiry arising out of the complaint of the trustees of the young earl of Shrewsbury, against the duke of Buckingham and the countess dowager of Shrewsbury; and an award was made that "the duke should not converse or cohabit with the countess for the future, and that each should enter into security to the king's majesty in the sum of ten thousand pounds apiece for that purpose."—L. Journ. xii. 628.

appeared openly as his enemies; they acknowledged that there was much force in his arguments; and the motion to inflict on him the same punishment as on Lauderdale was rejected by a majority of forty voices. All that his enemies could obtain, after a debate of five days, was the appointment of a committee to inquire what part of the articles could be so far established as to furnish ground for impeachment; and this committee, whether it was through the difficulty of procuring satisfactory proof, or the intrigues of the leaders in favour of the accused, never presented any report.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1674.

Jan. 20.

Feb. 7.

By the Lords the conduct of Buckingham and Arlington, who had condescended to plead their own cause before the House of Commons, was considered derogatory from the dignity of the peerage; and a standing order was made, that no peer should answer any accusation before the Commons in person, or by counsel, or by letter, under the penalty of being committed to the custody of the black rod, or to the Tower, during the pleasure of the house. In obedience to another order, all the peers in attendance, whether Protestants or Catholics, took the oath of allegiance, which had been framed in the third year of James I., as a renunciation of the temporal claims ascribed to the pope, and of the anti-social doctrines imputed to the Catholics. The duke of York hesitated at first. It had never been proposed to princes standing in the same relation with himself to the throne, and he was unwilling to establish a precedent to bind those who might succeed him. But some of the lords making a distinction between heir-presumptive and heir-appa-

Jan. 20.

Jan. 13.

Jan. 14.

<sup>1</sup> C. Journ. Jan. 15, 20, 21. Feb. 18. Parl. Hist. iv. 649, 657. Burnet, ii. 38.

CHAP. rent, he waived the objection, and took the oath in the  
 IV. same manner as all the other members of the house.<sup>1</sup>  
 A.D. 1674.

— In the meanwhile the Commons betrayed no disposition to grant a supply, and Charles, weary of the war, sought some expedient to disengage himself without disgrace from his connection with France. The allied sovereigns no longer retained that proud superiority which they had won in the first year of hostilities. By sea the English had gained no considerable advantage; by land the tide of success had turned in favour of the States. Spain and Austria had come forward to their aid: Montecuculli, the imperial general, had deceived the vigilance of Turenne, and laid siege to Bonn; the prince of Orange, having reduced Naerden, by a bold and skilful march joined Montecuculli; Bonn surrendered; and the army which maintained the French conquest in the United Provinces, cut off from all communication with the mother country, was compelled to make a precipitate retreat on the ancient frontiers of France. At this moment, the States made to Charles, through the Spanish ambassador, Del Fresno, an offer of acceding to the terms which they had refused at the congress of Cologne.<sup>2</sup> This unexpected step was differently interpreted by their friends and foes: the truth is, that the concession was the price at which the States had purchased the aid of Spain. The queen-regent refused to engage in a war with England; and her ambassador, when he signed the public treaty of alliance, received from the States a secret power of negotiating with the English king on the following basis: that the conquests on each side should be restored; that the honour of the flag should be yielded

1673.  
 August 20.

<sup>1</sup> Lords' Journ. xii. 606, 608, 612. Macph. Pap. i. 71.

<sup>2</sup> Lords' Journ. 616.

to Charles; and that a sum of money, not exceeding eight hundred thousand crowns, should be paid to him as an indemnification for the expenses of the war.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1673.

Whether Louis had obtained information of the secret, is uncertain. During the autumn he refused to the king an advance of money; now he offered, through his ambassador Ruvigni, a large sum towards the equipment of the fleet. But Charles had communicated the proposal of the States to both houses of parliament, and had been advised by them to commence the negotiation. He replied to Ruvigni, that he had gone too far to recede; that necessity prevented him from supporting France any longer as her ally, but that he still hoped to be of service to his good brother as mediator between him and his opponents. Sir William Temple was appointed to negotiate with Del Fresno; in three days the articles were satisfactorily adjusted; and Charles announced to his parliament that he had concluded "a speedy, honourable, and, he trusted, a lasting peace."<sup>2</sup>

1674.  
Feb. 6.

Feb. 9.

Feb. 11.

By this treaty, the king obtained the substance of his demands in the summer of 1672, with the exception of an acknowledgment for the permission to fish in the British seas, the mention of which was carefully avoided by both powers. The States consented that their ships and fleets should lower their flags and topsails to every British man-of-war, on any part of the sea from Cape Finisterre to Van Staten in Norway, as a matter of right, and not merely of com-

<sup>1</sup> Dumont, vii. 242.

<sup>2</sup> Lords' Journ. 925, 928, 932. Dalrymple, ii. 96. Temple, ii. 247, 250. It appears that now the committee for foreign affairs, or the cabinet council, consisted of Finch, lord keeper, Viscount Latymer, lord treasurer, and the earl of Arlington and Sir Henry Coventry, secretaries of state.—Temple, *ibid.*

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1674

pliment; that the English settlers in Surinam should be freely permitted to leave that colony in English ships; that all subjects of dispute between the East India companies of the two nations should be referred to the decision of arbitrators, to sit in London; that whatever questions might not be determined by them in the space of three months should be referred to the decision of the queen-regent of Spain; and that the States should pay to the king of Great Britain the sum of eight hundred thousand crowns by four yearly instalments. Charles had formerly demanded for the prince of Orange the dignity of stadtholder, admiral, and captain-general, both to him and his posterity for ever; but the States prevented the agitation of the question by conferring those offices on him and his heirs a few days previously to the opening of the negotiation.<sup>1</sup>

The reader is already aware, that ever since the fall of Clarendon, the violent opponents of that nobleman feared the resentment of the duke of York, and considered their own safety to be intimately connected with his exclusion from the throne. The duke's subsequent adoption of the Catholic creed had furnished them with an advantage of which they were not slow to avail themselves. They appealed to the religious passions of the people; they magnified the danger which threatened the Protestant church; and they called for the establishment of securities, which, though they equally affected the whole body of Catholics, were in the intention of the framers chiefly

<sup>1</sup> Dumont, vii. 253. There was added a secret article, that neither power should assist the enemies of the other; but this was explained to mean, not that Charles should recall the English troops serving in the French army, but that he should not suffer them to be kept up to their full complement by recruits.—Temple, ii. 250.

directed against the duke's right to the succession. CHAP.  
 Their first step towards his exclusion was the enact-<sup>IV.</sup>  
 ment of the test, which not only stripped him of the A.D. 1674.  
 extensive influence attached to his office of lord high  
 admiral, but held him out to the people as unfit to be  
 trusted with employment under government, and consequently still more unfit to fill the most exalted magistracy in the state. Their next attempt was to expel him from the House of Lords, and from the councils and the presence of his brother: and for this purpose they had devised a more comprehensive test,<sup>1</sup> and moved in the last session, that whoever refused to take it should be disabled from sitting in parliament, and prohibited from approaching within five miles of the court. This bill had been arrested in its progress by the prorogation; it was now introduced a second time under more favourable auspices. Yet so numerous were the questions urged on the attention of the house, so long and tedious the debates, that its patrons were unable to carry it farther than the second reading before the prorogation of parliament. At the same time, in the House of Lords, a different plan of securities had been devised and adopted; to disarm all Catholics, to prevent the princes of the blood from marrying any but Protestants, and to provide that all the younger branches of the royal family, the eldest sons of Catholic peers, and all the children

Feb. 24.

<sup>1</sup> The notion of a more comprehensive test originated from the small number of resignations which had followed the enactment of the last. It had disappointed the expectations of its more ardent advocates.—Marvell, i. 458. Instead of inferring, which was the truth, that they had overrated the real number of Catholics in office, they included in the new test a denial of more of the Catholic doctrines; as if the men, if any such there were, who had not hesitated to abjure a part of their creed for the preservation of their places, would not as readily, through the same motive, abjure the remainder.

CHAP. of other Catholics, if the father were dead, should be  
IV. brought up Protestants. The earl of Carlisle moved  
A.D. 1674. that, to a prince of the blood, the penalty for marrying  
— a Catholic should be the forfeiture of his right to the  
succession. He was warmly supported by Halifax  
and Shaftesbury, and as warmly opposed by the lord  
keeper and the earl of Peterborough; the bishop of  
Winchester, with several of the prelates, came to the  
aid of the latter, maintaining that such a penalty was  
inconsistent with the principles of Christianity and  
the doctrine of the church of England; and after a  
long and animated debate, the amendment was re-  
jected by a triumphant majority.<sup>1</sup>

The duke of York had now but a cheerless prospect  
before him. He was fully aware of the object of his  
enemies, of the talents and influence of some, and of  
the reckless unprincipled character of others. He  
saw that his power and popularity were gone; the  
wavering disposition of his brother forbade him to  
place his reliance on the support of the throne; and  
the victory which he had recently obtained in the  
House of Commons was so trifling, that it could not  
impart confidence, though it might exclude despair.  
The first expedient which suggested itself to his mind,  
was a dissolution of parliament; but the result of  
another election was uncertain; and Charles, who had  
always betrayed an insuperable dislike to the experi-  
ment, would, he said, try the temper of the House of  
Commons once more. If they granted him a supply,  
they should continue to sit; if they refused, he would  
then dissolve them. The duke next resolved to re-  
tard, as much as was in his power, the meeting of

<sup>1</sup> L. Journ. xii. 618, 626, 647, 649. C. Journ. Jan. 21, Feb. 5,  
20. James, i. 489. Macph. 71, 72, 75, 79.



parliament, the only opportunity which his enemies would have of accomplishing their purpose.<sup>1</sup> But for this it was necessary to supply his brother with money; and money could be procured only from the king of France. Fortunately, however, for his object, the views of Louis, in respect to the meeting of parliament, coincided with his own.

That prince, though deserted by his ally, still proved a match for his enemies. If he lost Grave, he had gained several battles; and the relinquishment of his conquests in the Netherlands had been more than balanced by the acquisition of the important province of Franche-comté. Yet he had reason to dread the accession of England to the confederacy against him, and willingly listened to the duke of York, who suggested that he should purchase the neutrality, by relieving the wants, of his English brother. The sum demanded was four hundred thousand pounds; but Louis pleaded the immense charges of the war, and the exhaustion of his treasury; Charles descended to three hundred thousand pistoles; five hundred thousand crowns were at length offered and accepted; and the parliament was prorogued by proclamation from the 10th of November to the 13th of April. The three parties professed themselves satisfied. Charles obtained a temporary relief from his pecuniary embarrassments; Louis was freed from the apprehension of a war with England during the approaching year; and James had gained an additional delay of five months to watch the secret intrigues, and prepare against the intended attack of his opponents.<sup>2</sup>

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1674.

August.

August 23.

Nov. 10.

<sup>1</sup> See Coleman's Letter in Journals of the Commons, ix. 525.

<sup>2</sup> Dalrymple, ii. App. 98, 99. Dalrymple observes that the in-

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1674.

But whom, it may be asked, did those opponents mean to substitute in his place as presumptive heir to the crown? Hitherto they had fixed their eyes on the young duke of Monmouth; nor was it unreasonable in them to hope that the king's partiality for his son would serve to reconcile him to the exclusion of his brother. Neither did Monmouth himself appear indifferent to the splendid prize which solicited his pursuit, or prove inattentive to the suggestions of those who flattered and irritated his ambition. By their advice, he begged of Charles the appointment of commander-in-chief, which had been abolished, at the death of Monk, as an office dangerous to be placed in the hands of a subject, at a time when revolutionary principles were still cherished in the country. James was alarmed, and remonstrated against the measure; but the affection of the king refused to listen to his arguments, and the patent was engrossed, and received the royal signature. The duke of York, however, had his suspicions. He took it up from the table; his jealous eye immediately discovered several erasures; and these, on examination, proved to be obliterations of the word "natural," wherever Monmouth was described as the son of the king. Charles, indignant at the fraud which had been practised upon him, tore the paper into fragments; but his anger quickly subsided; the offence was forgiven, and Monmouth

formation in the letters of Ruvigni tallies well with the beginning of Coleman's correspondence. It does more. It shows the busy, intriguing disposition of Coleman, which was so well known to the duke, that he was not trusted by him. Coleman sought to procure money from Louis through Ferrier and Pomponne, at the very time when this bargain was concluded with Ruvigni; and so ignorant was he of its existence, that he afterwards attributes the prorogation to the advice given by himself and his friends.—Coleman's Letter, Com. Journ. ix. 526.

obtained a second patent, drawn, however, in proper form, and with the admission of the obnoxious epithet. Still his advisers were not satisfied. They instructed him to ask also for the command of the Scottish army, the levy of which they attributed to views hostile to the liberties of England. The king, with his usual facility, granted the request; but when Monmouth insisted that this commission should be drawn for life, and without mention of his illegitimacy, he was disappointed in both points by the vigilance and firmness of Lauderdale.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1674.

A second, and in many respects a more formidable, rival was William, prince of Orange, the next in succession to the crown after the duke of York and his children. William was a Protestant; his heroic exertions in defence of his country had exalted him in the eyes of all who dreaded the ambitious designs of the French monarch; and some of the popular leaders in England had not hesitated to pledge themselves to his service and to advocate his interests, even at a time when he was at war with their sovereign. The correspondence between them passed through the hands of

<sup>1</sup> James, i. 496, 497. The next year the duke of York was more successful. Russell, colonel of the foot-guards, solicited leave to sell his commission, and the king agreed to purchase it for the earl of Mulgrave, who was afterwards duke of Buckingham. But Mulgrave had seduced the mistress of Monmouth, who, in revenge, extorted, by his importunity, from the king a promise of the regiment for himself (1675, Ap. 24). Mulgrave spoke to the duke. He observed to him, that as the regiment of two thousand four hundred men formed the strength of the army, the succession to the crown might one day depend on the fidelity of its commander. James instantly caught the alarm. He applied to the king, to Monmouth, to the minister, but in vain. At last he prevailed on Russell, in consideration of a valuable present, to pretend that he repented of his design; that it would break his heart to leave the service of his sovereign. From that time James opposed, previously he had favoured, the ambition of Monmouth.—Buck. Memoirs, ii. 33—38. Macph. i. 84.

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1674.

Du Moulins, who, on suspicion of treachery, had been dismissed from the office of Lord Arlington, and had obtained in Holland the appointment of private secretary to the prince. His agents in England were Frymans, a Dutchman, and William Howard, the member for Winchelsea, and afterwards Lord Howard of Escrick. The first was screened from detection by his obscurity; but the discovery of certain important documents, furnished to the States by Howard, led to his incarceration in the Tower, where he purchased his pardon by an ingenuous confession. The king then became acquainted, for the first time, with the plan arranged between the prince and his English adherents, guided, as it was believed, by Shaftesbury, during the last winter,—that the Dutch fleet should suddenly appear at the mouth of the river; that they should improve the panic which it would occasion, to raise the people; and that the king should be compelled by clamour and intimidation to separate from his alliance with France. The conclusion of peace prevented the attempt, but did not dissolve the connection. It was proposed, with the aid of money from Holland, to form a party in parliament, which would force Charles to join with the States as an ally in the war; and the prince was not only encouraged to hope for success by exaggerated statements of the national discontent, but advised to be in readiness to take advantage of any revolution which might follow.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The king was aware of the correspondence, but not of the particulars; and his jealousy was augmented by the ambiguous language of the instructions found upon Carstairs, an agent from the prince for the levy of

<sup>1</sup> D'Avaux, i. 8. Burnet, ii. 56. Burnet, however, should be corrected by Temple, ii. 286, 294, 334, 337.

troops. He resolved to watch more narrowly the conduct of Shaftesbury, who already began to practise those arts of exciting the passions of the people, which he afterwards employed to a greater extent, and with a more favourable result. He represented himself as having earned by his zeal for Protestantism the hatred of the papists; under pretence that his life was in danger from their malice, he procured lodgings in the house of Cook, an Anabaptist preacher, and announced to the citizens that he trusted for his safety to their vigilance and fidelity. But the king had no intention that the agitator should gain the ascendancy in the capital. He informed Shaftesbury that he was acquainted with his intrigues; he ordered him to quit London and retire to his house in the country; and he dined in public with the lord mayor on the 29th of October, and accepted, in a gold box, the freedom of the city. On such occasions the king was irresistible. In defiance of the reports circulated against him, he won by his affability and cheerfulness the hearts of the citizens.<sup>1</sup>

During the summer Charles had leisure to decide on the fate of the three ministers who had drawn upon themselves the displeasure of the parliament. He considered Lauderdale as a servant of the crown of Scotland, and resolved to retain him in all his offices, in opposition to the votes of the House of Commons. Buckingham he dismissed without regret; and that nobleman immediately joined Shaftesbury, and proved himself a valuable auxiliary in the ranks of his former enemies. Arlington, by the royal command, accepted from Sir Joseph Williamson, under secretary, the sum of six thousand pounds for the secretaryship of state,

<sup>1</sup> Macph. i. 73. Kennet, 300.

CHAP. and was raised to a more honourable, though less  
IV.  
A.D. 1674. influential office, that of chamberlain of the household.

— He did not, however, disguise to himself the real cause of his removal. He had observed the rapid progress which the new treasurer, lately created earl of Danby, had made in the royal favour ; he saw that, to support his own declining credit, it was necessary to render some signal service to the king ; and with this view he proposed to him the negotiation of a marriage between William, prince of Orange, and Mary, eldest daughter and presumptive heir to the duke of York. As the prince was a Protestant, such marriage, he argued, would tend to allay the religious apprehensions of the people ; and, as it would open to him a fair prospect of succeeding to the throne, it might reasonably be expected, in return, that he should divorce himself from his political connection with the popular leaders, and second the king in his endeavours to mediate a general peace. It was in vain that the duke of York objected ; when he claimed the rights of a parent, he was told that his children were the property of the nation ; and when he urged the indelicacy of making his daughter the wooer, it was replied, that it would be the care of the negotiator to lead the prince by hints and suggestions to make the first proposal. Charles entered warmly into the project, and the earls of Arlington and Ossory proceeded with their families to the Hague, under the pretence of visiting the relatives of their wives, two sisters of the name of Beverwaert, daughters of a natural son of Maurice, prince of Orange. But William had already taken his determination. For Arlington he had contracted an insuperable aversion ; and when that minister complained to him in his uncle's name of his reluctance to accept the king's

Nov. 10.

mediation, and of his intrigues against the royal authority, he replied, that peace must depend on the consent of those allies who had so generously rescued his country from the grasp of the invader, and that his honour forbade him to enter into explanations which might compromise the safety of his friends in England. To the earl of Ossory, whom the prince, on account of his naval reputation, treated with more respect, had been assigned the first mention of the intended marriage; but the moment he attempted to introduce the subject, William interrupted him by the laconic remark, that, in the existing circumstances, he was not in a condition to think of a wife. The fact was, that his English adherents were alarmed. They admonished him to be on his guard against the wiles and sophistry of Arlington, and conjured him to reject the proposal of marriage as an artifice devised by his enemies, to destroy his popularity, by persuading the people that he was joined in league with the king and the duke against their liberties and religion. The advice was religiously obeyed; and the envoys, having paid a short visit to their relations, returned to England. Here Arlington found that the failure of his mission did not contribute to raise him in the estimation of his sovereign, and that Danby had improved the opportunity furnished by his absence, to render himself lord of the ascendant.<sup>1</sup>

As the winter passed, the leaders of the two great parties held numerous consultations, to recruit their forces, and arrange their plans against the approaching

<sup>1</sup> James, i. 500—502. Temple, ii. 287—295, 334. Coleman's Letter, C. Journ. ix. 527. The origin of the prince's aversion to Arlington arose from that minister's attempts in favour of the project to legitimate Monmouth.—Macph. i. 74, 84. When the offer of marriage was made, he knew that the duchess of York was in an advanced state of pregnancy, a circumstance which considerably lessened its value.

CHAP. session of parliament. In the House of Lords the  
 IV.  
 A.D. 1674. adversaries of the minister could present a small but  
 — formidable minority under the duke of Buckingham, the earls of Shaftesbury and Salisbury, and the Lord Wharton. In that of the Commons they formed a numerous party under active and experienced leaders; among whom were Garrōway and Lee, veterans who had long been listened to as oracles in the house; Powle and Lyttleton, skilled in the knowledge of forms and the application of precedents; Lord Cavendish, distinguished by the versatility of his talents and the elegance of his manners, the votary at the same time of ambition and of pleasure, ardent in his pursuits, and implacable in his resentments; Lord Russell, less brilliant and less eloquent than his friend, but more regular in his morals, and more respected by his colleagues; Sir William Coventry, whose experience easily detected the arts and sophistry of the ministers, and whose apparent want of passion gave the semblance of impartiality to his opinions; and Birch, who had been a colonel in the revolutionary army, and was now the roughest, boldest speaker in the house.<sup>1</sup> To these should be added Meres, Sacheverell, Vaughan, and several others, ready and zealous debaters on every question; but the master spirit who guided the motions of the whole body was the earl of Shaftesbury, and to him was occasionally joined the earl of Arlington, who, through his eagerness to humble a successful rival, forgot his obligations to his sovereign, and readily lent his aid to oppose those

<sup>1</sup> Sir Edward Seymour once reflected on Birch's former occupation, that of a common carrier. "It is true," he replied, "I was once a carrier, and it is well for the gentleman that he was not one too. For if he had, he would never have been anything else."—Burnet, ii. 80, note.



counsels, in the origination of which he no longer participated. By these it was determined to insist on the recall of the English troops serving in the French army; to advise an immediate union with the allies for the purpose of breaking the power of Louis XIV.; to impeach the earl of Danby; and to refuse all pecuniary aid as long as he should retain the office of lord treasurer. Some of these were popular measures; all were calculated to embarrass the court, and might, by leading to a change of administration, place Shaftesbury and Arlington once more at the head of the government.<sup>1</sup>

Danby, on the other hand, prepared to meet his opponents with a confident anticipation of victory. He had persuaded himself that their success in the last session was owing to the dexterity with which they employed the cry of "no popery," and marshalled in their favour the religious fears and jealousies of the people. He obtained permission of the king to oppose them with their own weapons, and for this purpose, to employ the whole power of government in putting down every species of sectarianism and dissent, and to rally the Cavaliers and the clergy round the throne, by identifying the cause of the church with that of the court. A council was held by appointment at Lambeth; several of the bishops met the lord keeper, the lord treasurer, Lauderdale, and the two secretaries of state; the king's anxiety for the support and prosperity of the establishment was explained, the aid of the prelates and clergy demanded, and a plan of combined operation arranged. In a few days the first fruits of the consultation appeared. A proclamation

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1674.

1675.  
Jan. 25.

<sup>1</sup> See Burnet, ii. 80—83, and Temple, ii. 309. Temple was employed by the king to expostulate with Arlington.

CHAP. was published, embodying six orders which had  
 IV.  
 A.D. 1675. recently been made in council, that all natives who  
 — had taken orders in the church of Rome should quit  
 the realm in the space of six weeks, under the  
 penalty of death;<sup>1</sup> that every subject of the three  
 kingdoms, who presumed to attend at mass, either  
 in the queen's chapel, or in any chapel belonging to  
 the foreign ambassadors, should for that offence suffer  
 a year's imprisonment, and pay a fine of one hundred  
 marks, of which a third part should be given as a  
 reward to the informer; that all convictions of  
 popish recusants, particularly among the more opu-  
 lent classes, should be brought to a conclusion without  
 delay, and certified into his majesty's Exchequer;  
 that any papist, or reputed papist, who should dare  
 to enter the palaces of Whitehall, or St. James's, or  
 any other place where the court might chance to  
 be, should, if a peer, be committed to the Tower,  
 if under the rank of a peer, to one of the common  
 gaols; and, lastly, that since all licenses for separate  
 places of worship had been recalled, the laws for the  
 suppression of conventicles should be rigorously  
 enforced.<sup>2</sup>

By the popular party, this proclamation was ridic-  
 culed as a weak and unworthy artifice to blind the  
 eyes of the people. Among the Catholics and non-  
 conformists it created considerable alarm. A deputation  
 of ministers waited on the duke of York, reminded  
 him of his frequent declarations in favour of liberty  
 of conscience, and solicited his protection against  
 the intolerant policy of the cabinet. But

<sup>1</sup> In this and all similar proclamations, Mr. John Hudleston was  
 excepted, on account of his services to the king after the battle of  
 Worcester.

<sup>2</sup> Wilkins, Con. iv. 595. Kennet, 301. Burnet, 253.

James had already remonstrated in vain. He had represented to the king that such severity to the dissenters was dangerous, because it might goad that numerous and powerful body to resistance; and with respect to Catholics, it was both ungrateful, on account of their former services to his father, and unnecessary, because, few as they were in number, and incapacitated by tests and disqualifications, they possessed not the power, even if they had the will, of injuring the establishment. But Charles, assured of his brother's submission, cared little for his objections; he even prepared for him a more bitter mortification. In virtue of the royal mandate, the bishop of London conducted the Princess Mary to church, and conferred on her the rite of confirmation, in defiance of the authority of her father.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1675.

At the appointed time, the session was opened with a speech from the throne. The king assured the two houses that his great object in calling them together was to come to a right understanding with his parliament, and to expose to the world the hollow and wicked designs of those who sought to drive him to a dissolution. But these men would find themselves disappointed. He was neither so weak nor so irresolute as to part with his friends in order to oblige his enemies. In the speech of the lord keeper, the chief novelty was an awkward attempt to justify the late intolerant proclamation. The government, he said, was placed in a most delicate and difficult situation, between the church on one side, and the dissenters and Catholics on the other. If the king suspended the execution of the penal laws, he was told that he deserted the cause

April 13.

<sup>1</sup> James, i. 499, 500. Macpherson (i. 75, 81, 84) postpones the confirmation of the princess to the following year.

CHAP. of the church ; if he enforced them, he was reproached  
 IV.  
 A.D. 1675. with the charge of persecution. But it was better to  
 — have some rule than none ; otherwise universal toleration, and endless confusion, the necessary consequence of toleration, must ensue. The king had followed the rule laid down by the legislature ; and, if any man felt aggrieved by it, he was still at liberty to appeal to the wisdom and equity of parliament, the best judge of the real interests of the nation.<sup>1</sup>

Of the plan devised at Lambeth, that part which regarded the suppression of popery was intrusted to the friends of the minister in the House of Commons, where, to such a proposal, no opposition could be  
 April 17. expected. Resolutions were accordingly voted, com-  
 April 21. mittees appointed, and bills introduced. Still nothing was done. That zeal for orthodoxy, which had formerly animated the members, seemed to be extinct, and not one of the bills proceeded any further than the second reading. The fact was, that the popular leaders ceased to urge the suppression of popery, when their opponents would claim the chief merit of the measure.<sup>2</sup> Their efforts were directed to the pursuit of their own objects. 1. They obtained a renewal of the address to remove Lauderdale from office : but  
 April 23. Charles was now furnished with a ready answer,—that the words laid to his charge, if spoken at all, were spoken before the last act of grace, and must therefore be covered by it ; and that the act of the Scottish parliament for the levy of the army necessarily arose

<sup>1</sup> L. Journ. xi. 653, 654.

<sup>2</sup> Com. Journ. Ap. 16, 17, 21, May 27. Marvell, i. 217, 237, 240. "We were confident," says Coleman, "that, the ministers having turned their faces, the parliament would do so to, and still be against them, and be as little for persecution then, as they were for popery before."—Com. Journ. ix. 527.

out of a preceding act in 1663, when Lauderdale was not the royal commissioner.<sup>1</sup> 2. Lord William Russell called the attention of the house to the conduct of the lord treasurer; and seven articles of impeachment were exhibited against him, charging him with improper use of the authority of his office to deceive the king, enrich his own family, and squander the royal treasure. There appears to have been little ground for any of these charges. But Danby did not rely solely on his innocence; he was careful to purchase adherents in the house, not after the manner of his predecessors, by offering presents to the more eminent speakers, but by seeking out silent votes, which might be procured at a lower price, and therefore in greater number. The articles against him were debated separately, and each in its turn was rejected.<sup>2</sup> 3. Besides Danby, the Dutch and Spanish ambassadors had also been lavish of money. Their object was to procure the revocation of the English regiments in the French army; and their efforts were zealously aided by the popular party. To the address for this purpose presented by the house, Charles replied, that the English corps was inconsiderable in point of number, and he would take care that it should not be recruited. More

CHAP.

IV.

A.D. 1675.

April 25.

May 3.

May 4.

<sup>1</sup> Burnet disgraced himself on this occasion. Out of ill humour at the treatment which he had received from Lauderdale, he revealed to his enemies the purport of a confidential conversation with that nobleman, and repeated it, though apparently with reluctance, at the bar of the House of Commons. "The truth is," he says of himself, "I had been above a year in perpetual agitation, and was not calm: or cool enough to reflect on my conduct as I ought to have done." By this treachery he lost the favour of the king, and also of the duke of York, who had previously protected him from the resentment of Lauderdale.—Burnet, ii. 63—65. Marvell, i. 221.

<sup>2</sup> Com. Journ. Ap. 26, 27, 30, May 3. Parl. Hist. iv. 688—695. Burnet, ii. 69. Marvell, i. 225, 227, 426. If we may believe Coleman, two hundred thousand pounds was spent in bribes by the different parties during this session.—Com. Journ. ix. 528.

CHAP. than this he could not do : to recall it would be incon-  
 IV.  
 A.D. 1675. sistent with his honour. This answer provoked a most  
 —  
 May 10. vehement debate in a committee of the whole house. On one side it was maintained that the English amounted to eight thousand men, that they formed the chief force in the army commanded by Turenne, and that to their gallantry were owing most of the advantages which had been gained by that general. On the other, it was contended that they did not exceed two thousand horse and foot; that, on the conclusion of the peace with the States, it was mutually understood that they were not to be recalled; and that a much greater number of British subjects were actually serving in the Dutch army under the prince of Orange. On a division, the tellers were charged with negligence or fraud; instantly the leaders who sat on the lowest benches sprung to the table, and the other members on each side crowded to their support. Lord Cavendish and Sir John Hanmer distinguished themselves by their violence; and epithets of insult, with threats of defiance, were reciprocally exchanged. The tumult had lasted half an hour, when the speaker, without asking permission, took possession of the chair; the mace, after some resistance, was again placed on the  
 May 11. table, the members resumed their seats; and, on the motion of Sir Thomas Lee, a promise was given by  
 May 20. each in his turn, that he would take no notice out of doors of what had happened within. The discussion of the question was again brought forward.  
 June 2. On one occasion the ministers obtained the majority by a single voice; on another they were defeated by the casting vote of the speaker. A new address was ordered; but there is no evidence that it was ever presented.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Com. Journ. May 8, 10, 11, 20, June 2. Parl. Hist. iv. 699—

The more important part of the ministerial project, the panacea for all the evils of the nation, was reserved for the House of Lords, in which the court was assured of an overwhelming majority. This was introduced in the shape of a test to be taken by all members of parliament, by privy councillors, magistrates, and all persons holding office under the crown. The test itself was made up of the several oaths and declarations which, by successive acts of parliament since the restoration, had been imposed upon members of corporations, officers of the army, and ministers of the church. These acts, however, had been passed at a time when the nation had not recovered from that phrensy of loyalty into which it had been thrown by the return of the king: now the minds of men had been allowed leisure to cool; an intention of establishing arbitrary power had, by report, been attributed to the king; and the doctrines of the year forty-one had begun to resume their former influence. That protection and allegiance are correlative, and that the law which secures the rights of the people, sanctions resistance to the invasion of those rights, were principles openly inculcated and maintained; and it was to check their diffusion, and to remove their supporters from parliament and office, that the non-resisting test had been devised. The king interested himself warmly in its success. He attended daily, standing as a spectator at the fireside; but his presence, though it might animate the champions of the court, did not dismay or silence their opponents.<sup>1</sup> The debates occupied seventeen days, often from an early hour till eight in the evening, some-

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1675.

April 15.

April 21  
to  
June 2.

709. Marvell, ii. 232. Cavendish and Newport, in consequence of their behaviour on this occasion, were forbidden the court.—Ibid. 526.

<sup>1</sup> "If not the sun, the fireside was always in their faces."—Marvell, i. 516.

CHAP. times till midnight. It is acknowledged, that on no  
 IV.  
 A.D. 1675. former occasion had such a display of eloquence and  
 — ability been exhibited in that house; never had any  
 question been discussed with so much obstinacy and  
 address. The lords who chiefly distinguished them-  
 selves by their advocacy of the measure, were the lord  
 treasurer, the lord keeper, and the bishops Morley and  
 Ward; and to these were opposed the acknowledged  
 leaders of the popular party, with two Catholic peers,  
 the marquess of Winchester and the Lord Petre.<sup>1</sup> The  
 former argued that the principle of the test had already  
 been recognised in the acts for corporations, the militia,  
 and the church; that the only object of the present  
 bill was to render that principle more generally useful  
 by extending its operation; that it would thus offer a  
 sufficient security both to church and state, and at the  
 same time a security so “moderate,” that it could not  
 be refused by any but those who cherished seditious  
 and anti-monarchical sentiments, and who, on that very  
 account, ought not to be trusted with the office of  
 making or of administering the laws. Their opponents  
 replied, that the question was now altered; that while  
 the test was confined to persons in inferior situations,  
 there remained the high court of parliament to explain  
 its meaning and control its application; but that now  
 it was intended to bind the parliament itself, and to  
 make all ranks of men dependent on the pleasure of  
 the sovereign. Such a test invested both the crown

<sup>1</sup> In Macpherson's Extracts, we are told, that when Shaftesbury applied to the Catholic peers for their support, some replied that they dared not oppose the king. It might provoke him to execute the penal laws against them, perhaps to seek their exclusion from parliament, in which they knew from experience that Shaftesbury's party would concur. “He swore that he and his friends never would, “and wished that his tongue might cleave to the roof of his mouth, “if he ever spoke for so unjust a thing.”—Macph. i. 80.



and the mitre with a divine right, which could not be controlled by any human power, and amounted in effect to a “dissettlement of the whole birthright of —  
 “England.”

CHAP.  
 IV.  
 A.D. 1673.

When it came to be debated in its several parts, the opposition lords objected that the first clause, which pronounced it “unlawful, on any pretence whatsoever, “to take up arms against the king,” was calculated to provoke doubts and questions, which a wise administration would seek to prevent. What, it might be asked, was the distinction between passive obedience and the unlawfulness of resistance in any circumstances whatsoever; where the difference between an absolute government and a limited monarchy, if there were no boundary to submission under either? Against the second, that it “is traitorous to take up arms by “the king’s authority against his person” (an allusion to the language of the parliament during the civil war), they argued, that circumstances might occur, as in the case of Henry VI., in which such taking up of arms might tend to the benefit and safety of the sovereign; and the third, which extended the same doctrine to the employment of force against persons commissioned by the crown, they described as leading to the most oppressive and alarming results. It specified neither the object of the commission, nor the qualification of the commissioner; but made it treason to oppose with force the unlawful aggression not only of sheriffs and magistrates, but even of naval and military officers; for all these were armed with commissions from the king, and might pretend to act in “pursuance of such “commission.”

The great struggle, however, remained. The oath was at first conceived in the following words:—“I do

CHAP. "swear that I will not endeavour the alteration of the  
IV.  
A.D. 1675. "government either in church or state." The practice  
— of multiplying oaths was represented as impious, by holding out temptations to perjury, and as useless, because oaths bind only men of honourable and virtuous minds, from whom sedition or rebellion is not to be apprehended. But to this oath in particular it was objected, that if it were made a necessary qualification for a seat in parliament, it would operate to the disherison both of the people and the peerage; of the people, by trenching on their right of intrusting to men of their own choice the power of imposing the public taxes; and of the peerage, by depriving the peers, who should refuse to take it, of the right to which they were born, of sitting in that house, and taking a part in the discussion of all subjects debated within its walls. The latter part of this objection was urged with so much vehemence, that the ministers deemed it prudent to yield. The lord treasurer proposed a resolution, which, at the suggestion of the duke of York, was changed into a standing order of the house, that "no oath "should ever be imposed, by bill or otherwise, the "refusal of which should deprive any peer of his place "or vote in parliament, or of liberty of debate therein."<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> L. Journ. xii. 673. Macph. i. 81. In lieu of the oath proposed by the bill, and all other tests to be taken by members of parliament, the following was moved as an amendment by the marquess of Winchester:—"I swear that I will never by threats, injunctions, promises, advantages, or invitations, by or from any person whatsoever, or through the hope or prospect of any gift, place, office, or benefit whatsoever, give my vote otherwise than according to my opinion and conscience, as I shall be truly and really persuaded upon the debate of any business in parliament." Such an oath would probably have been as unpalatable to the opponents as to the adherents of the minister. It was, however, seconded and supported; and the odium of rejecting it was left to the lord keeper, who contended, that the hope of reward was not incompatible with

When the house proceeded to consider the form of the proposed oath, the bishops were exposed to the profane jests and irreverent sarcasms of the duke of Buckingham, and called upon to answer several searching and vexatious inquiries by the dissenting peers. What, it was asked, was this episcopal government, to which the subject had now to swear allegiance? From whom did the prelates profess to derive their powers? They replied, that the priesthood, and the powers of the priesthood, came to them from Christ; the license to exercise those powers from the civil magistrate. "But," exclaimed the Lord Wharton, "excommunication is one of those powers; do you derive from the sovereign the license to excommunicate the sovereign?" This, it was answered, was to suppose an extreme case which had never arrived, and probably never would arrive. Others observed, that the oath provided only for "the government," or discipline of the church; why were its doctrines omitted? The government of the church of Rome was episcopal; no Catholic would object to take the oath, even if at the same time he should meditate the subversion of one church and the establishment of the other. This objection alarmed the lord treasurer, and he offered to add the words "the Protestant religion." "But what," asked the earl of Shaftesbury, "is the Protestant religion? Where are its boundaries? How are they to be ascertained?" The bishop of Winchester replied, that the Protestant religion was comprehended in the thirty-nine articles, the liturgy, the catechism, the canons, and the homilies. His opponent again inquired

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1675.

integrity of conduct, but sometimes necessary to stimulate the indolent and the indifferent.—Parl. Hist. iv. App. lxii.

CHAP. whether everything contained in these five books  
 IV.  
 A.D. 1675. were part and parcel of the Protestant religion? If  
 — so, then it must be contended that their authors were infallible, and had laid down nothing which ought to be rejected or reformed. If not, then the objection recurred: the precise limits of the Protestant religion were unknown, and no man could conscientiously bind himself by oath never to alter a system, with the real extent of which he was unacquainted. To escape from the difficulty, the words “now established by law in the church of England” were added.

May 3. From the government of the church, the debate proceeded to the government in the state. Here the opponents of the measure renewed the struggle with equal obstinacy. Were the civil institutions of the country so perfect as to admit of no improvement? Could no combination of circumstances ever occur to make some alteration expedient? Let the house give its sanction to this part of the oath, and the chief privilege of the peerage was gone for ever. They might assemble and vote supplies; but to legislate on any subject connected with the government of the country would be a violation of the test. They must abandon their duty as a part of the legislature, or perform it under the guilt of perjury.

At length, after a variety of amendments and adjournments, divisions and protests, the declaration and oath were passed in the committee, in the following improved form:—“I, A. B., do declare “that it is not lawful, on any pretence whatsoever, “to take up arms against the king; and I do abhor “the traitorous position of taking arms by his authority against his person, or against those that are

“commissioned by him according to law, in time of  
 “rebellion and war, and acting in pursuance of such  
 “commission. I, A. B., do swear that I will not  
 “endeavour any alteration of the Protestant reli-  
 “gion now established by law in the church of  
 “England, nor will I endeavour any alteration in the  
 “government in church or state, as it is by law estab-  
 “lished.” There only remained to determine the  
 penalty of a refusal to take the test, which, in defiance  
 of all the efforts of the opposition, was fixed at a fine  
 of five hundred pounds, and incapacity to hold office  
 or commission under the crown. But, as this incapa-  
 city did not affect the right of sitting in either house,  
 the members of both were made subject to a repe-  
 titition of the fine in every succeeding parliament.<sup>1</sup>

To retard the progress of the bill, had been the  
 great object of the country party in the House of  
 Lords; to throw it out, was to be the achievement  
 of their associates in that of the Commons. But  
 even there much had lately happened to shake  
 their confidence in their own power; the fate of the  
 impeachment of Danby, and the rejection of a bill  
 to prevent members from accepting places under  
 government, had convinced them that the ministers  
 could command the votes of many secret, but faithful,  
 adherents. To relieve them from their apprehensions  
 an event occurred which, if it were not, as is probable,  
 originally contrived, was at least, most dexterously

<sup>1</sup> For this important debate, see the Lords' Journals, xii. 665, 669, 671, 673, 674, 677, 682; Parl. Hist. iv. 7, 14, 721; App. xviii. xlvii.; Burnet, ii. 71, 74; Marvell, i. 510, 518; North, 62. The test was originally devised by Clarendon; but his son, who on the death of the exile had succeeded to the title, constantly opposed it. His name is in all the protests entered on the journals; and the king was so displeased with his conduct, that he deprived him of his place of chamberlain to the queen.—Marvell, i. 227.

CHAP. improved, to suspend the course of ordinary business  
 IV. in both houses, and to provoke a dissolution, or at  
 A.D. 1675. — least a prorogation of parliament. At all times an  
 appeal by writ of error lay from the decisions in the  
 courts of law to the House of Lords, as the supreme  
 judicature in the nation ; and, during the reign of  
 James I., similar proceedings had been introduced  
 relative to judgments in Chancery. It happened  
 that at this period the defendants in three of  
 these appeals to the justice of the Lords possessed  
 seats in the House of Commons ; and when notice  
 to appear was served on Sir John Fagg, one of the  
 three, the house voted such a notice a breach of privi-  
 May 5. lege. The Lords insisted on their claim. Theirs was  
 the only court to decide on writs of error or appeal ;  
 they sat only at the same time with the House of  
 Commons ; and, therefore, if they could not hear  
 causes in which the members of that house were  
 parties, a denial of justice must follow. The Com-  
 mons disputed the inference—it might be a suspension,  
 but not a denial of justice—the appeal might be  
 heard when the parties were no longer entitled to the  
 privilege of parliament. Nothing could be weaker  
 than such reasoning ; but they compensated for its  
 May 12. weakness by the vigour of their conduct. They com-  
 May 15. mitted to the Tower Shirley and Stoughton, two of  
 the appellants ; resolved that to prosecute in the House  
 of Lords any cause against a member of their house  
 May 28. was a breach of privilege ; declared that no appeal lay  
 June 1. from the courts of equity to any other tribunal ; and  
 voted that four barristers, who by order of the Lords  
 had pleaded before them in one of the appeals, should  
 be taken into custody. This last insult set the higher  
 house in a flame, and the opponents of the test, whose

real aim was to foment the quarrel, were the foremost to defend the rights of the peerage. The captive barristers were rescued by the usher of the black rod from the grasp of the sergeant-at-arms, who suddenly absconded, that he might escape the punishment with which the House of Commons had determined to visit his pusillanimity or negligence. Two days afterwards, the speaker, as he passed through Westminster Hall, arrested Pemberton, one of the barristers, and took his prisoner with him to his chamber; <sup>1</sup> the new sergeant-at-arms brought the other three out of the court of King's Bench, and all four were conveyed to the Tower. The House of Lords was not slow to undertake their protection. A message was sent to the lieutenant to set them at liberty, and when he demurred, four writs of habeas corpus were forwarded by the lord-keeper, commanding him to produce his prisoners before the king in his high court of parliament. The lieutenant was perplexed. He consulted the House of Commons, which forbade him to obey the writs; and, in this choice of evils, he preferred, as the less dangerous, to incur the displeasure of the Lords.<sup>2</sup>

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1675.

June 2.

June 4.

June 7.

June 8.

During the altercation, Charles had addressed both

June 5.

<sup>1</sup> Burnet (but to Burnet alone little credit is due) tells us, that Seymour the speaker was "the most immoral and impious man of the age, the unjustest and blackest man that lived in his time." Of his pride, an instance is related by Lord Dorchester, that when his carriage broke down near Charing Cross, he took possession of the first gentleman's carriage that came by, and turned out the owner, telling him it was more proper that he, than the speaker of the House of Commons, should walk in the street.—Burnet, ii. 70, note.

<sup>2</sup> L. Journ. 679, 680, 691, 694, 698, 700, 706, 710, 713, 716, 718, 720, 723, 725, 727. Com. Journ. May 5, 15, 28, June 1, 4, 8. Marvell, i. 517. Burnet, ii. 75. Parl. Hist. iv. 721. St. Trials, vi. 1121.

CHAP. houses in the tone, and with the dignity, of a master.

IV.

A.D. 1675.

—

June 9.

Oct. 13.

Oct. 13.

Oct. 19.

They were, he told them, the dupes of men enemies to him and to the church of England ; the authors of the quarrel sought not the preservation of privilege, but the dissolution of parliament ; let the two houses confer coolly and dispassionately together ; they would easily discover the means of reconciliation, or, if they did not, he would judge impartially between them, for he could not sit a silent spectator of a dispute which threatened to spread itself through the nation, for a mere question of privilege. But his advice was disregarded ; the irritation of the parties was nourished by repeated acts of mutual defiance ; and the king, to suspend the prosecution of the quarrel, prorogued the parliament.<sup>1</sup>

Though Charles in his speech made no allusion to his own wants, yet his promise, to meet them again in a short time, led to a suspicion that the government was reduced to the lowest state of pecuniary distress ; and the leaders of the country party resolved to persist in their plan of opposing a supply, with the hope of provoking a dissolution either of the ministry or of the parliament. The first would offer to their ambition the offices held by their opponents, the latter would be succeeded by a general election, in which they promised to themselves a decided superiority. The houses accordingly met, and the king solicited the aid of his people to pay off the anticipations on the revenue, amounting to eight hundred thousand pounds, and to put the navy in a condition to maintain the dignity of the British flag.<sup>2</sup> In the committee on the royal speech,

the ministers obtained at first the majority by the cast-

<sup>1</sup> Com. Journals, June 5, 9. L. Journ. 725, 729.

<sup>2</sup> The reader is aware that it was the custom to "anticipate," that is, to mortgage, certain branches of the revenue for the payment of the capital and interest of loans of money.



ing vote of the chairman. But on a second division they were defeated by a small majority, and the house refused to entertain the question of supply on account of anticipations. This was a severe disappointment; yet Danby did not despond; a long session would afford him the opportunity of appealing to the ambition and cupidity of the members; and it was possible that several might oppose the court now, with the sole view of obtaining a higher price for their future services. The house proceeded with the public business. It was voted that four hundred thousand pounds per annum should be taken from the customs, and applied to the maintenance of the navy; that a sum of three hundred thousand pounds should be raised and placed in the chamber of London, and be appropriated to the building of twenty ships of war; that papists should be disabled from sitting in either house of parliament; that a bill should be introduced to recall the English forces serving in the French army; and that a remedy should be devised to prevent bribery in elections. In the divisions which these questions produced, the balance inclined alternately in favour of the opposite parties; and the majorities were so trifling, that it was impossible to foresee which would ultimately obtain the superiority.<sup>1</sup> In the House of Lords, Shirley hastened to revive the question of his appeal. Each party sought to cast on the other the odium of the measure; but the subsequent proceedings show that the appellant acted under the advice, or by the instigation of Shaftesbury and his friends. In the debate, which was continued by adjournment for several days, that nobleman displayed extraordinary eloquence and

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1675.

Oct. 23.

<sup>1</sup> Com. Journals, Oct. 19. Parl. Hist. iv. 751—757. Marvell, i. 252—268.

- CHAP. warmth, and obtained, in defiance of the ministers and  
 IV. the prelates, the appointment of a day for the hearing  
 A.D. 1675. of the appeal. It might be that, as he pretended, he  
 Nov. 4. sought to establish beyond dispute the claim of the  
 peerage ; but he had moreover a private and more  
 interested motive. He was the author of a pamphlet  
 recently published under the title of " A Letter from  
 " a Person of Quality to a Friend in the Country,"  
 Nov. 9. purporting to detail the debate in the last session on  
 the question of the non-resisting test. This tract the  
 house voted " a lying, scandalous, and seditious libel ;"  
 it was ordered to be burnt by the hand of the common  
 hangman, and a committee was appointed to discover  
 the author, printer, and publisher. Under such cir-  
 cumstances, the renewal of the quarrel between the  
 houses offered him the best shelter from prosecution.  
 In the Commons, attempts were made to revive the  
 violent votes of the last session against the claim of  
 the peers ; but they were constantly defeated by the  
 court party, who on this subject commanded a large  
 Nov. 19. majority, and procured a vote for a conference, " to pre-  
 " serve a good understanding between the two houses."  
 In that meeting they suggested that, according to the  
 royal advice, all subjects of national interest should  
 take precedence of the question of judicature ; but  
 Shaftesbury opposed the expedient under different  
 pretexts, and a resolution was carried to hear the  
 appeal on the following morning. The resentment of  
 the Commons could no longer be restrained ; in one  
 house the obnoxious votes were revived ;<sup>1</sup> in the other,  
 Nov. 20. Lord Mohun moved an address for the dissolution of  
 the parliament. Thus a new subject of contention

<sup>1</sup> Marvell, i. 270, 271. Com. Journ. Nov. 18, 19. L. Journals, xiii. 29. Somers' Tracts, viii. 43.

was raised, which called forth the whole strength of the two parties. The popular leaders supported the motion, on the ground that frequent parliaments were required by the ancient constitution of the kingdom ; that the existing House of Commons, chosen in 1661, did not in fact represent the sense of the nation in 1675 ; and that the pretensions which it set forth, the violence which it displayed, the superiority which it assumed, had led to a state of things in which the parliament, instead of proving a national benefit, had become a useless incumbrance ; but that with a new house, the real representatives of the people, no cause of dissension would exist ; the restoration of harmony would enable parliament to provide for every interest, to grant supplies to the crown, to establish securities for the church, to extend indulgence to dissenters, and to secure to the Catholics the possession of their property and hereditary honours. On the other hand, the minister and his adherents contended that a dissolution was both unnecessary and dangerous. As former dissensions between the houses had been healed, so the present was not without its remedy. Whatever might be the faults of the House of Commons, the civil and religious principles of its members had been proved. A new election might introduce new men, hostile both to the church and the throne ; anti-monarchical doctrines might regain the ascendancy ; and the miseries of the year forty-one might be renewed. Hitherto the duke of York, however he might disapprove, had deemed it his duty to abstain from all open opposition to the measures of government ; on this occasion he gave his powerful aid to Lord Mohun ; and his example drew after it the support of his adherents and of the Catholic peers. The minister was

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1675.

---

CHAP. alarmed; his adversaries outnumbered his followers  
 IV. in the house; and it was only through the aid of  
 A.D. 1675. proxies that he was able to obtain the small majority  
 — of two votes. The consequence was, an immediate  
 Nov. 22. prorogation; not for a short space, after the usual  
 manner, but for the unprecedented duration of fifteen  
 months.<sup>1</sup>

During this session an adventurer made his appearance on the public stage, the prototype of the celebrated Titus Oates. He was a foreigner, the son of Beauchateau, an actress in Paris, and had passed, with little credit for truth or integrity, through the several situations of usher in a school, servant to a bishop, inmate in a monastery, and companion to an itinerant missionary. A forgery, which he committed at Montdidier, in Picardy, compelled him to flee from the pursuit of justice; and he arrived in London under a feigned name, without money and without friends. But his ingenuity did not desert him. He called himself Hyppolite du Chastelet de Luzancy; he professed an anxious desire to conform to the church of England; and in the pulpit at the Savoy he read his abjuration, and delivered a discourse stating the grounds of his conversion. Instantly the French Jesuit (so he was now styled) became an object of interest to the zealous and the charitable; contributions flowed to him from numerous quarters; and his only anxiety was to secure the means of support after the first excitement which he had caused should have died away. Three months after his conversion, he gave information to some of the popular leaders that, about

July 1.  
 Oct. 4.

<sup>1</sup> L. Journ. xiii. 33. According to the list preserved in Oldmixon, the contents were forty-one temporal peers and seven proxies; the non-contents, twenty-one temporal peers, thirteen bishops, and sixteen proxies.—Oldmix. 594.

a month before, Father St. Germain, who, for greater effect, was described as confessor to the duchess of York, had surprised him in his lodgings, and, holding a poniard to his breast, had compelled him, with the threat of instant death, to sign a recantation and a promise to return to his native country. Neither the improbability of the tale, nor the time that had been suffered to elapse, seems to have awakened suspicion. Lord Holles communicated the important intelligence to the king in the House of Lords; Lord Russell introduced it to the notice of the House of Commons; and the parliament, the court, the city, the country, resounded with cries of astonishment at the insolence of the papists. The king published a proclamation for the arrest of St. Germain, wherever he might be found; the Lords brought in a bill for the encouragement of monks and friars in foreign parts to leave their convents and embrace the reformed faith; and the Commons ordered the lord chief justice to issue his warrant for the apprehension of all Catholic priests, recommended Luzancy to the protection and bounty of the king, and passed a bill for the exclusion of papists from the two houses of parliament, and from the court. The convert was examined before the privy council and a committee of the house. He persisted in his former tale; he added, that he had learned from some French merchants, that in a short time Protestant blood would flow through the streets of London, and from St. Germain that the king was at heart a Catholic, that the declaration of indulgence had been framed for the purpose of introducing popery, and that there was an infinite number of priests and Jesuits in London, who did great service to God. But the minds of men began to cool. His additional in-

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1675.

Nov. 8.

Nov. 10.

Nov. 12.

Nov. 15.

CHAP. formation, which was merely a repetition of the idle  
IV.  
A.D. 1675. reports circulated in the coffee-houses, did not serve to  
— raise his credit for veracity ; and when he was told to produce his witnesses, the absence of some, and the utter worthlessness of the others, shook the faith of his supporters. About the same time, Du Maresque, a French clergyman of the reformed church, published a history of Luzancy's adventures in France ; and soon afterwards a pamphlet appeared, detailing the particulars of his life in the metropolis, and refuting his charge against St. Germain ; and, though Du Maresque was severely censured by the bishop of London, and the distributor of the pamphlet threatened by the privy council, the prosecution of the inquiry was at first suspended, and, for obvious reasons, never afterwards resumed.<sup>1</sup>

I shall conclude this chapter with a few notices respecting the transactions in the two kingdoms of Scotland and Ireland. 1. In Scotland the chief attention of the government was devoted to the difficult task of maintaining the episcopal authority, in opposition to the religious feelings of the people. That Charles disapproved of the severities which had driven the western Covenanters into rebellion, cannot be doubted ; and it was observed that, in proportion as the influence of Clarendon declined, more lenient measures were

<sup>1</sup> Com. Journ. Nov. 8. L. Journ. xiii. 21. Parl. Hist. iv. 780. Marvell, i. 265, 266. Reresby, 29—31. Wood, Ath. Oxon. iv. par. ii. col. 350, 351. Compton, the new bishop of London, and the "great patron of converts from popery" (Burnet, ii. 88), ordained Luzancy about Christmas, and sent him to Oxford, where, on January 27th, he was admitted master of arts, at the recommendation of Ormond, the chancellor. While he remained in Oxford, a transaction of a swindling description brought his name before a court of justice ; soon afterwards the nation was thrown into a ferment by the pretended discoveries of Titus Oates ; and Luzancy, "by favour of the bishop of London," was admitted "ad pres. regis," vicar of Dover-court, in Essex, 18th Dec. 1678.—Wood, *ibid*.

recommended to the Scottish council. The punishment for the refusal of the declaration was restricted to the imprisonment of the offender; the regular troops, which had been so actively employed in the execution of the penal laws, were disbanded; Archbishop Sharp received an order to attend to the spiritual concerns of his diocese; and Rothes was deprived of his high office of royal commissioner, though, to console his wounded feelings, he obtained in return the chancellorship for life. The earl of Tweeddale succeeded him as head of the government; but Lauderdale, by his office of secretary of state, possessed superior influence with the sovereign. Both of these noblemen were Presbyterians by principle; but they disregarded the nice distinctions of the theologians, and persuaded themselves that by mutual concession the two parties might be brought to coalesce. Their object, therefore, was to maintain the episcopal establishment, but at the same time to offer to its adversaries such terms as might induce them to desist from all active opposition. To the Covenanters in the west it was proposed, that the government should abstain from prosecution for past offences, provided they would bind themselves to keep the peace, under the penalty of forfeiting one year's rent of their respective estates. But here a theological question arose. What, it was asked, did the council understand by keeping the peace? "To perform the duties of righteousness commanded by the law of God?" This was an obligation incumbent on all Christians. Not to violate the laws, which had been made in opposition to the covenant? Such an engagement was unlawful and anti-christian. That the latter was the real meaning could not be doubted: if many submitted, a greater

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1667.

March 12.

August 10.

Oct. 10.

CHAP. number refused to subscribe the bonds; and Tweedale,  
IV.  
A.D. 1667. after a short trial, abandoned a measure which seemed  
— more likely to produce disturbance than tranquillity.<sup>1</sup>

1668.  
July 11.

About this time happened an event which revived the angry passions of the two parties. Among the men who had fought for the covenant at Rullion Green, was "a youth of much zeal and piety," named James Mitchell. After the defeat he brooded over the sufferings of his brethren, till he had wound up his mind to the highest pitch of enthusiasm, and believed that he felt a call from Heaven to avenge the blood of the martyrs on the apostate and persecuting prelate, Archbishop Sharp. It was a little after mid-day; the archbishop's carriage drove to the door, and Mitchell took his station with a loaded pistol in his hand. Sharp came from the house, followed by Honeyman, bishop of Orkney. The first had already seated himself, when the assassin discharged his pistol; but at the very moment Honeyman raised his arm to enter the carriage, and received the ball in his wrist. To the cry that a man was killed, a voice replied, "It is only a bishop." Mitchell crossed the street, walked quietly away, changed his coat, and mixed again with the crowd. The council offered a tempting reward for the apprehension of the assassin, but six years elapsed before he was discovered.<sup>2</sup>

This daring outrage did not, however, provoke

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow, 277, 278. Kirkton, 266, 272. Burnet, i. 414, 420. Lamont, 252.

<sup>2</sup> Wodrow, 292. Kirkton, 278. Burnet, i. 481. It was urged, in defence of Mitchell, that he acted like Phineas, by divine impulse. Annand, dean of Edinburgh, replied that could not be, otherwise he would have succeeded in the attempt. To evade this argument, it was remarked, that "Israel failed against the city of Ai, because there was an Achan in the camp, and, alas! there are many Achans in the camp of our Israel."—Kirkton, 366, note.



Tweedale to recede from his purpose. He still hoped to win by conciliation, where he despaired of prevailing by severity. He made to the ejected ministers an offer, called "the indulgence," that they might enter on their former churches, if these were vacant, or on any other at the nomination of the patron, enjoy the manse and glebe without stipulation, and in addition receive the annual stipend, provided they would accept collation from the bishop, and attend the presbyteries and synods. The moderation of the proposal alarmed the more zealous, or more fanatic of the Covenanters; they pronounced it a snare for the consciences of the unwary; besides the consent of the patron, a call from the parish was necessary for the lawful exercise of the ministry; and, moreover, to accept any ecclesiastical office at the invitation of the civil power was a backsliding towards Erastianism. In defiance of this reasoning, three-and-forty ministers accepted the offer of the government, but they soon discovered that, at the same time, they had forfeited the confidence of the people. They no longer preached with the fervid eloquence of men suffering persecution. Their exhortations to the practice of virtue and godliness appeared dull and lifeless, in comparison with the fierce invectives which they formerly poured forth against apostates and oppressors. It was inferred that the Spirit of God had abandoned them; that they had become as "dumb dogs that could not bark;" and their churches were deserted for the ministry of those whose fanatical language harmonized better with the excited feelings of their hearers.<sup>1</sup>

Tweedale hitherto had acted by the advice, and been supported by the influence of Lauderdale. At

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow, 304. Kirkton, 288. Burnet, i. 488.

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1668.  
June 7.

CHAP. length that nobleman came himself to Scotland, and  
IV.  
A.D. 1668. held a parliament with the title of royal commis-  
— sioner. 1. Its first act was to enable the king to  
appoint commissioners, authorized to treat with certain  
commissioners from England, respecting a union of the  
two kingdoms; a wise and beneficial measure, which  
Charles had much at heart, but which he was never  
able to accomplish. In England, it was opposed  
through distrust of the royal motives; in Scotland  
through fear that it would be accompanied with the  
loss of national independence. 2. It had been dis-  
covered, that the indulgence so lately granted was a  
violation of the laws for the establishment of episco-  
pacy; and to secure it from disturbance, and its  
authors from prosecution, the act of allegiance was  
converted into an act of unqualified supremacy,  
declaring the external government of the church an  
inherent right of the crown, and giving the force of  
law to all acts, orders, and constitutions respecting  
that government, or ecclesiastical meetings, or the  
matters to be proposed and determined in such  
meetings, provided those acts, orders, and constitu-  
tions were recorded and published by the lords of  
the privy council. 3. When the regular army was  
disbanded, it had been deemed prudent to raise the  
militia of horse and foot, voted in the parliament of  
1663; and the men had been embodied and armed in  
all but the western counties, where it would have  
been madness to put weapons into the hands of enthu-  
siasts, ready, at the first call of their leaders, to break  
into rebellion. It was now not only declared that the  
right to levy and command the army resided in the  
crown, but moreover enacted, that the forces so levied  
should march into any part of the king's dominions in

pursuance of orders transmitted to them from the privy council. These two acts excited surprise both in Scotland and England. By the first every vestige of the independence of the church was swept away; by the second, the king was placed at the head of a standing army of twenty thousand men, bound to execute his orders, and to march into any part of his dominions. It might, indeed, be doubted whether these words could be so construed as to extend to England, where the Scottish parliament could claim no authority; but the leaders of the opposition in England chose to interpret them in that sense, and to make them on that account one ground of their address for the removal of Lauderdale from the councils and the presence of the sovereign.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1668.

Though the recent act of supremacy shocked the religious feelings of every true son of the kirk, the government persisted in its former plan of conciliation. Burnet, who had opposed the indulgence, because it gave jurisdiction without collation from the bishop, was compelled by threats to resign the archiepiscopal see of Glasgow: Leighton, a prelate of more moderate principles, succeeded in his place; and several ministers were again admitted by "indulgence" into vacant churches. Still the obstinacy of the majority refused every proposal; the conventicles grew more numerous; and the regular curates were exposed to so many insults and injuries from the zeal of their opponents, that those who obeyed were said to suffer as much as those who transgressed the law. The council determined to combine severity with indulgence; and while they observed the terms which had been granted to the more moderate, condemned to

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow, 309; App. No. 35. Kirkton, 301, 303. Lamont, 267. Burnet, i. 492, 494, 495.

CHAP. imprisonment the ministers who had preached at  
 IV.  
 A.D. 1668. illegal assemblies, and exacted fines from the persons  
 — who had afforded the opportunity of committing the  
 offence. But field conventicles became a special  
 object of alarm. From the stubborn and enthusiastic  
 character of the men who frequented them, they were  
 considered as nurseries of sedition and treason; and,  
 1670.  
 July 28. in the next session of parliament, Lauderdale asked  
 for some legal provision to abate so dangerous a prac-  
 tice. It was enacted that every unauthorized meeting  
 for religious worship, even in a private house, should  
 be deemed a field conventicle, if any of the hearers  
 stood in the open air; and that every minister who  
 preached or prayed on any such occasion, during the  
 three following years, should incur the forfeiture of  
 his property and the punishment of death. The  
 Covenanters exclaimed loudly against the cruelty of  
 the enactment; though such complaint came with less  
 grace from men who had formerly demanded and en-  
 forced laws of still greater inhumanity against the  
 professors of the Catholic faith. The sequel, how-  
 ever, showed that the measure was not only inhuman,  
 it was also impolitic. It did not put down the field  
 conventicles, but it changed them into conventicles of  
 armed men.<sup>1</sup>

August 9. Before the terror excited by this act had subsided,  
 the commissioner, with the aid of Leighton, the  
 successor of Burnet, made an attempt to restore  
 tranquillity by a "comprehension" of the dissenting  
 ministers. The sole condition required was that they  
 should attend presbyteries as they were established  
 before the year 1638; and to make this the less  
 objectionable, it was offered that the bishops should

<sup>1</sup> Kirkton, 301, 305. Wodrow, 329; App. p. 130. Burnet,  
 i. 590. Salmon, Examin. 586.

waive their claim of a negative voice, and that all who pleased should be at liberty to protest against it. But many saw, or thought that they saw, even in this proposal, a conspiracy to undermine the rights of the kirk. In a few years, a new race of ministers would succeed, less aware of the arts of their enemies, and less habituated to contest the authority of the bishops; those prelates would gradually resume their claims, and the presidents would ultimately become the masters of their respective presbyteries. It was therefore replied, that such assemblies could bear no resemblance to those which existed before the year 1638. They had no power of the keys, no ordination, no jurisdiction. The bishop would be bishop still, though he should abstain from the exercise of his negative voice. To assent to such terms would be an apostasy from the principles of the kirk,—“an homologation of episcopacy.”<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1670

The religious dissensions continued, and the ministers and their hearers were occasionally imprisoned and fined for their violations of the law. In 1672, Lauderdale returned to Scotland with the title of duke, and accompanied by the countess of Dysart, whom he had recently married. She had long been reputed his mistress,<sup>2</sup> and has been described as a proud, rapacious, and despotic woman, possessing unlimited dominion over the mind of her husband, and making him the obsequious minister of her passions. It was intended that a second indulgence should be granted in Scotland, to correspond with the celebrated declaration

1672.  
April.

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow, 335; App. p. 132, 133. Kirkton, 296. Burnet, i. 476, 503, 513.

<sup>2</sup> In a suppressed passage in Burnet, that writer says:—“I was in great doubt whether it was fit for me to see Lauderdale’s mistress. Sir Robert Murray put an end to that; for he assured me there was nothing in that commerce between them besides a vast fondness” (i. 518).

CHAP. which had been issued in England. But Lauderdale  
 IV. previously held a short session of parliament, in which,  
 A.D. 1672. — to prevent the succession of ministers in the kirk,  
 severe punishments were enacted against the ordain-  
 ers and the ordained, and the duration of the act  
 against field conventicles was prolonged for three addi-  
 tional years. At last he determined to publish the  
 instrument which for months had been expected, by  
 many with hope, by more with distrust. It named  
 about eighty ejected ministers, ordered them to repair  
 to certain churches, and gave them liberty to exer-  
 cise all the duties of their office within the limits  
 of their respective parishes, but with a severe in-  
 junction to abstain from all religious exercises in  
 1673. any other district. The consequence was a schism  
 in the body, which was not easily closed. About  
 one-fourth of the ministers named in the indul-  
 gence refused to obey, and were confined by order  
 of council in particular places; the rest accepted  
 the churches which had been allotted to them, having  
 previously given their testimony against the Erastian-  
 ism of the measure. Its framers had reason to be  
 satisfied. The more opulent of the Covenanters at-  
 tended the service of the indulged ministers, and the  
 number of conventicles was diminished.<sup>1</sup>

During this protracted struggle between the govern-  
 ment and its religious opponents, scarcely a murmur of  
 disapprobation had been heard in the Scottish parlia-  
 ment. It seemed as if Charles, at the restoration, had

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow, 351. Kirkton, 315, 326, 334. Burnet gives himself  
 out as the deviser of this plan (i. 520). Lauderdale had sixteen  
 thousand pounds allowed him for his outfit, as chief governor, with  
 a salary of fifty pounds per day while the parliament sat; and ten  
 or fifteen pounds per day during the rest of the year.—Wodrow,  
 App. p. 148.

ascended a despotic throne, and the supreme council was of no other use than to record the edicts of the sovereign. The consequence was, that the officers of government extended and abused their authority; every department was filled with the relatives and dependants of the commissioner; and these made it their chief object to enrich themselves at the expense of the country. But that spirit of resistance, which had so obstinately and successfully warred with the advocates of the court in the parliament of England, aroused, at length, a similar spirit in that of Scotland, and a plan of opposition, unknown to Lauderdale, was carefully arranged among the old Cavaliers and his political enemies. When he opened the next session, he demanded, with his usual confidence, a plentiful grant of money to aid the king in his war against the States. The young duke of Hamilton rose; but, instead of expressing an obsequious assent, he called the attention of the house to the grievances of the nation; the coin had been adulterated under Hatton, the master of the Mint, and Lauderdale's brother; by new regulations in the customs, the price of salt, of brandy, and of tobacco, had been raised; monopolies in all these articles were enjoyed by the friends of the minister, and the administration of justice was polluted by personal interests and animosities. Other speakers followed, and all were careful to echo the sentiments of Hamilton. The commissioner was amazed and alarmed. He endeavoured to intimidate; he adjourned the session for a week; he abolished the monopolies; but he could not dissolve the combination, or satisfy the demands of his adversaries. Hamilton and Tweedale repaired to London to lay their grievances before the monarch. Kincardine was despatched to oppose them;

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1673.

Nov. 12.

CHAP. and Charles, while he laboured to appease the discon-  
 IV.  
 A.D. 1673. tent of one party, religiously observed his promise not  
 — to desert the other. But all his efforts to conciliate  
 May 12. were fruitless : another prorogation took place ; and,  
 May 19. before it expired, the parliament was dissolved.<sup>1</sup>

In the enumeration of grievances, the principal, the persecution of the Covenanters, had never been mentioned. Since the last act of supremacy, religious subjects were avoided, as forbidden ground on which it was dangerous to tread. Lauderdale, however, took it into consideration, and published an act of grace, pardoning every offence against any of the conventicle acts committed before the 4th of March, 1674. If by this concession he sought to conciliate the minds of the Covenanters, he was disappointed ; for they attributed his lenity to weakness, and looked on pardon for the past as an encouragement to new transgressions. From that day, the cause of these religionists made constant progress. In the north, indeed, they were but few, and in the west they might attend without impediment the service of the indulged ministers ; but from the English borders to the river Tay the conventicles continued to multiply. They were held in the vacant churches, in private houses, in the open air ; on every Sabbath, crowds assembled, for the purpose of worship, around a lofty pole, fixed in a glen, on a mountain, or in the midst of a morass ; and the minds of the people were occupied during the week with conversation respecting the gifts and doctrine of the

1674.  
 March 24.

<sup>1</sup> Burnet, ii. 19—33, 36. Wodrow, 364, 369. Kirkton, 339—342. If the reader compare the character of Lauderdale, drawn by Burnet in the dedication of his four conferences, published at this time, with the character of the same nobleman, drawn by him in the History of his Own Times, he will form no very favourable opinion of the veracity of that writer.



preachers, the dangers which they had run, the persecutions which they had suffered, and the place and time appointed for the next conventicle. A spirit of the most ardent and obstinate fanaticism animated the great mass of the population; and hostility to episcopacy was coupled with hostility to that government by which episcopacy was maintained.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
IV.  
A.D. 1674.

2. The history of Ireland during the same period furnishes but little that can interest the general reader. The English act of parliament prohibiting the importation of Irish cattle had reduced the agricultural classes in Ireland to the lowest distress; and Ormond, the lord-lieutenant, who was himself a principal sufferer, employed all his power and ingenuity to discover and open new sources of industry and new channels of commerce. A free trade was permitted between Ireland and all foreign countries, whether at peace or war with the king of Great Britain; the introduction of Scottish woollens was prohibited, as a measure of retaliation against the Scots, who, after the example of the English parliament, had forbidden the importation of Irish cattle into Scotland; and, to encourage the manufacture of woollen and linen cloths, five hundred Walloon families, from the neighbourhood of Canterbury, and an equal number from Flanders, were induced to settle in Ireland.<sup>2</sup> But after the fall of Clarendon, it was not the intention of those who succeeded in the administration to leave his friend Ormond

1667.

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow, 366. Kirkton, 343. "At these great meetings many a soul was converted to Jesus Christ; but far more turned from the bishops to profess themselves Presbyterians. The paroch churches of the curates came to be like pest-houses; few went to any of them, and none to some; so the doors were kept lockt." —Ibid.

<sup>2</sup> Carte, ii. 342, 344.

CHAP. at the head of the Irish government. His conduct  
 IV.  
 A.D. 1668. was scrutinized and censured; charges of oppression  
 —  
 April 24. of individuals, and mismanagement of the revenue,  
 were brought against him; and the duke hastened to  
 London to defend his character against the intrigues  
 of his enemies. For almost a year his fate hung in  
 suspense. The good nature of Charles shrunk from  
 the idea of unkindness towards an old and faithful  
 servant; his love of ease could not resist the obstinate  
 and repeated importunities of Buckingham and his  
 1669. colleagues. At length a promise was wrung from the  
 Feb. 14. reluctant monarch; and, after a protracted struggle,  
 he announced to Ormond his removal, but in language  
 the most flattering and affectionate which he could  
 September devise. Lord Robartes, a man of rigid notions and  
 repulsive manners, was appointed to the vacant office,  
 which he only held long enough to earn the dislike of  
 the Irish, and to disappoint the expectations of the  
 cabinet. After seven months, he was recalled, to  
 1670. make place for Lord Berkeley of Stratton, who had  
 May. distinguished himself by his hostility to Clarendon, and  
 would not, it was supposed, be unwilling to discover  
 grounds of complaint or impeachment against Ormond.<sup>1</sup>

Eight years had now elapsed since the Act of Settlement, five since the Act of Explanation, was passed; still these measures had been but imperfectly executed, on account of the conflicting nature of the claims, and the deficiency of the fund for reprisals. Not only the thousands whom the law debarred from all relief, but many of those whom it took under pro-

<sup>1</sup> Carte, ii. 375, 379, 413. Pepys, iv. 101, 191, 246. "Ormond had none that took his part but his R. H. (the duke of York), who thought it very scandalous that one, who had always been so loyal, should be prosecuted and run down by men, who had been most of them downright rebels, or little better."—James, i. 435.

tection, loudly complained of injustice ; and, after the arrival of the new chief governor, six peers, and forty-five gentleman, ventured to subscribe a petition to the king, explaining their wrongs, and earnestly imploring redress. Charles compassionated the sufferings of men, most of whom had devoted themselves to his service during the time of his exile ; and the ministers were ready to accede to any measure which would throw discredit on their predecessors in office. Though Ormond came forward to oppose the prayer of the petitioners, though Finch, the attorney-general, pronounced against their claim, a committee was appointed to review the settlement of Ireland ; and, on a representation that their powers were defective, they afterwards obtained authority to send for persons, papers, and records, and to require information from all officers under the crown. The commissioners were Prince Rupert, the duke of Buckingham, the earls of Lauderdale and Anglesey, the lords Holles and Ashley, Secretary Trevor, and Sir Thomas Chicheley. They proceeded slowly ; more than a year was employed in the examination of papers and witnesses, in comparing the arguments of the petitioners with the contrary claims of the soldiers, adventurers, and purchasers of lands in Connaught, and in hearing the complaints brought against the duke of Ormond, and his defence of his conduct. The duration of the commission, and its renewal with more extensive powers, raised the hopes of the natives ; but their opponents sought the powerful aid of the English House of Commons, which had lately compelled the king to rescind the declaration of indulgence, and had passed several resolutions expressive of their hatred to popery and its professors. The cause was warmly taken up

CHAP.

IV.

A.D. 1670.

Nov. 28.

1671.  
Feb. 1.

Feb. 4.

August 1.

1673.  
Jan. 17.

March 25.

CHAP. by the popular leaders ; and an address was presented  
 IV.  
 A.D. 1673. to the king, demanding the revocation of the commis-  
 — sion, the maintenance of the Act of Settlement in  
 Ireland, the banishment of the Catholic priests from  
 that kingdom, the expulsion of all Catholic inhabit-  
 ants out of Irish corporations, and the punishment of  
 Colonel Richard Talbot, who had acted as agent for  
 the natives before the commission. Charles briefly  
 replied, that on all these particulars it would be his  
 care that no man should have reason to complain ;  
 March 26. and, in the course of a few days, the commission was  
 dissolved, and the prospect of relief for ever closed  
 to the great body of the petitioners. The king, in-  
 deed, still cherished the hope of mitigating their suffer-  
 ings. He appointed a committee of the council to  
 reconsider the subject ; but no other benefit resulted  
 from their deliberation, than the trifling addition of  
 two thousand pounds per annum to a fund which had  
 already been provided for the purpose of furnishing  
 pensions to the twenty nominees in the Act of Ex-  
 planation.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Carte, ii. 427, 429, 438. C. Journ. Mar. 25, 26.

## CHAPTER V.

CONGRESS AT NIMEGUEN—SECRET TREATY WITH LOUIS XIV.—DEBATES ON THE LEGALITY OF THE PARLIAMENT—PENSION FROM FRANCE—INTRIGUES AND CONQUESTS OF LOUIS—OPPOSITION TO THE KING IN PARLIAMENT—PEACE BETWEEN FRANCE AND THE STATES—GENERAL PEACE—PLOT FORGED BY TITUS OATES—THE TEST ACT—ACCUSATION OF THE QUEEN—TRIALS AND EXECUTIONS—PERFIDY OF MONTAGUE—IMPEACHMENT OF DANBY—PROROGATION.

ON the conclusion of peace with the States in 1674, Charles had offered his mediation to the different powers at war. He proposed that the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle should be taken for the basis of a general pacification; but the confederates would submit to nothing short of the treaty of the Pyrenees, that France might be again confined within its ancient boundaries; and Louis, proud of his superiority, refused to accept of any other alternative than to retain his conquests, or to exchange them for an equivalent. With pretensions so contradictory both parties awaited the issue of the campaign, in the hope that some fortunate occurrence might give additional weight to their demands. A whole year (so numerous were the difficulties raised, so opposite the interests to be consulted) passed away in the arrangement of the preliminaries; the place of meeting, the powers to be admitted, the titles and rank which they were to assume, became subjects of endless discussion; and when at last the congress was opened at Nimeguen,

CHAP.  
V.  
A.D. 1674.

1675.  
July.

CHAP. V. the place proposed by the king of England, it soon  
 A.D. 1675. appeared that none of the parties (with the exception perhaps of the States-General) sought to bring it to a conclusion. It was the object of Louis to break the confederacy, to negotiate successively with his different opponents, and to obtain, by separate treaties, what he foresaw would be refused, as long as the confederates remained united. The emperor and the queen-regent of Spain, persuaded that England and Holland would never allow the Netherlands to pass into the possession of France, placed their hopes on the prosecution of the war. They were encouraged by the counsels and influence of the prince of Orange; and all three, instead of attending to the congress at Nimeguen, bent their efforts to draw the king of England, as an ally, into the war. They represented to him that he held the destinies of Europe in his hands, and that, instead of the office of mediator, he might take upon himself to dictate the conditions of peace. He had only to join his forces with those of the confederates; Louis would instantly recede from his lofty pretensions; Flanders would be saved; and a balance of power would be established. Did he allege a want of money? They would grant him a more ample subsidy than he had received from France as an ally. Did he wish to recover Dunkirk? They would undertake to reduce, and to place it in his hands. But it was in vain that they appealed to his poverty or to his ambition. Experience had taught him a lesson which he could not readily forget. He knew that to engage in war was to become a suppliant to the bounty, and a dependant on the pleasure, of parliament.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Temple, ii. 265, 284, 305, 319, 325, 333, 339, 363. Dalrymple, ii. 118.

Ruvigny, the French minister in London, was not blind to this intrigue. When Charles first withdrew from the alliance with Louis, Ruvigny, in the bitterness of his disappointment, charged the king with desertion and ingratitude; but he soon received instructions to abstain from irritating language, to keep the English monarch to his purpose of mediation, and even to offer to him, should such an inducement appear necessary, as the price of his neutrality, the same amount of subsidy which he had previously received for his alliance during the war.<sup>1</sup> For eighteen months Charles resisted the temptation; and it was not till the House of Commons had returned an unqualified refusal to his request of money, that, despairing of aid from his own subjects, he consented to throw himself into the arms of a foreign prince. In a private conversation between him and Ruvigny it was agreed that the king of France should pay a yearly pension to the king of England; that the two sovereigns should bind themselves to enter into no engagements with other powers unless by mutual consent; and that each should lend effectual aid to the other in the event of rebellion within their respective kingdoms. The only persons to whom Charles communicated this treaty were his brother, and the duke of Lauderdale, and the earl of Danby. James made no remark—he had been previously acquainted with the royal purpose—and Lauderdale, according to custom, applauded the wisdom of his sovereign; but Danby, who had deeply engaged himself to the prince of Orange, demurred: he asked time for consideration; his consent, he observed, might endanger his life; he wished the king would consult the privy council. But Charles

CHAP.  
V.  
A.D. 1675.

1676.

Feb. 7.

<sup>1</sup> Danby, Letters, 2, 5.

CHAP. V.  
A.D. 1676. cut the Gordian knot with the same facility as he had previously done on a similar occasion. He dispensed with the services and the signatures of his counsellors; he put the treaty into writing with his own hand, and signed, sealed, and delivered it to Ruvigny, who, on his part, engaged to return to him within twenty days a copy of the same treaty signed and sealed by the king of France.<sup>1</sup> By this secret proceeding both princes obtained their objects; Charles the money which had been refused by parliament, Louis security that Charles, for some time at least, would not make common cause with his enemies. But the English king, if he possessed the spirit of a man, must have keenly felt the degradation. He was become the yearly pensioner of another monarch; he was no longer the arbiter of his own conduct; he had bound himself to consult, with respect to foreign powers, the master whose money he received. Perhaps he might console himself with the notion, that it was less disgraceful to depend on a powerful monarch, from whose alliance he could disengage himself at pleasure, than on the party among his own subjects, which constantly opposed him in parliament: perhaps he felt a malicious pleasure in defeating the machinations of his adversaries, whom he knew to be, in pecuniary transactions, not more immaculate than himself; for it is a fact, that several among those who claimed the praise of patriotism for their opposition to the court, were accustomed to sell their services for money. It seemed as if the votes of the members of parliament were exposed for sale to all the powers of Europe. Some received bribes from

<sup>1</sup> Dalrymple, ii. 99, 102. The exact amount of the pension is not mentioned; but as Charles in a short time, "*bientôt après*," received four hundred thousand crowns, it was probably about one hundred thousand pounds per annum.—Id. 118.



the lord treasurer on account of the king ; some from the Dutch, Spanish, and imperial ambassadors in favour of the confederates ; some even from Louis at the very time when they loudly declaimed against Louis as the great enemy of their religion and liberties ; for that prince, notwithstanding the recent treaty, did not implicitly rely on the faith of Charles ; he sought in addition to secure the goodwill of those who, by their influence in parliament, might have it in their power to withdraw the king from his promise of neutrality. Ruvigny was instructed to seek adherents among them, to offer to them presents on condition that they should refuse supplies to Charles, and to co-operate with them in their attempts to ruin Danby, whom *they* considered as their political enemy, and whom Louis knew to be the staunch friend of the prince of Orange. His efforts were successful, and, though we have not the means of tracing the progress of the intrigue, we know that he was made acquainted with the counsels and projects of the party. But Ruvigny was recalled ; Courtin succeeded him, and the accounts of Courtin will reveal the names of the patriots who sold themselves to France, and of the price at which their services were valued.<sup>1</sup>

During the long prorogation, and with the aid of his foreign pension, the necessitous monarch enjoyed a seasonable relief from the cares and agitation in which he had lived for several years. Age and satiety had blunted his appetite for pleasure, and the enjoyment of ease was become the chief object of his wishes. He retired to Windsor, where he spent his time in the superintendence of improvements, the amusement of fishing, and the company and conversation of his friends.

<sup>1</sup> Brisbane in Danby's Letters, 309, 312, 314, 324. Dalrymple, ii. 110, 111, 129.

CHAP. V.  
A.D. 1676. His neutrality in the great contest which divided the powers of the continent, whatever might be its real motive, found a sufficient justification in the numerous benefits which it conferred on the country. While almost every other nation in Europe complained of the privations and charges of war, England enjoyed the blessings of peace. She was free from the pressure of additional taxation, and knew nothing of those evils which necessarily accompany the operations of armies. Her mariners monopolized the carrying trade of Europe; new channels of commerce were daily opened by the enterprise of her merchants; and their increasing prosperity gave a fresh stimulus to the industry of her inhabitants.<sup>1</sup> It was, however, the care of the popular leaders to keep alive, as far as they were able, the spirit of discontent. Political clubs were established; pamphlets, renewing the old charges against the government, were published; the ears of men were perpetually assailed with complaints of the growth of popery, and of the progress of arbitrary power; their eyes were directed to the theatre of war on the continent, as the great arena on which the fate of their liberty and religion was to be decided; and the preservation of these was described as depending on the humiliation of France, though France was aided in the contest by the Protestant state of Sweden, and opposed by the two great Catholic powers, Austria and Spain.

The members of the council were not slow to oppose these arts of their adversaries. They had re-

<sup>1</sup> "The king," says Brisbane in a letter to the earl of Danby, hath "succeeded in the improvement of trade and navigation beyond the hopes of those who talked of it seventeen years ago . . . and now the trade of England is at such a height, that it is as hard to think it can continue so, as it was hard to believe once it would ever rise to it."—25th June, 1677. Danby's Letters, 315.

course to the press in vindication of their conduct ; they warned the people in the king's name against the author and retailers of false and disloyal reports ; and they resolved to put down the coffee-houses, as seminaries of sedition, and the constant resort of agents employed to spread among the company libels against the sovereign and the government. Though the owners of these establishments had taken out licenses in conformity with the law, it was discovered that the statute made no mention of the time during which the license should remain in force ; and from this omission a conclusion was drawn, that it must be considered revocable at pleasure. The judges, who did not agree, would give no opinion ; but the question was argued before the council, and the attorney-general received instructions to prepare a proclamation, ordering all coffee-houses to be shut up ; "because in such houses, "and by the meeting of disaffected persons in them, "divers false, malicious, and scandalous reports were "devised and spread abroad, to the defamation of his "majesty's government, and the disturbance of the "quiet and peace of the realm." The remedy, however, was productive of more mischief than the evil which it sought to abate. It gave a real foundation to charges which before rested merely on conjecture. It was with reason described as an unjust and cruel proceeding towards the occupiers of the houses ; as a violation of the right of Englishmen to meet and discuss political subjects ; and as an unanswerable proof of the arbitrary projects secretly cherished by the court. Its authors, repenting of their precipitancy, had the prudence to retrace their steps ; and on the presentation of a petition to that effect, a general license was granted to re-open the coffee-houses, but

CHAP.  
V.  
A.D. 1676

CHAP. with this condition, that the keepers of such establish-  
 V.  
 A.D. 1676 ments should prevent in them the reading and publica-  
 — tion of libels against the king and his government.<sup>1</sup>

May 31. Another subject of complaint was furnished by the alleged depredations of the French cruisers on the English commerce. In the course of seven months fifty-three sail had been captured and carried into the French ports under the pretence that the ships or their cargo were Dutch property, which it had been fraudulently attempted to cover with the English flag. Charles, though he looked on this as an unavoidable evil during a maritime war, ordered the most energetic remonstrances to be made at the French court; and Louis, whose interest it was to avoid a quarrel with England, gave orders that justice should be done between the captors and the claimants. Some ships were restored, many were condemned. The sufferers complained; their complaints were echoed by the writers of the popular party; and it was insinuated that the members of government derived advantage from the losses of the merchant. These charges directed the attention of the council to the conduct of Sir Ellis Leighton, the secretary to the embassy in Paris, to whose care the interests of the petitioners had been intrusted. He was once the confidant of Buckingham, and is described as "the most corrupt man of the age." A warrant was signed for his committal to the Tower; but he escaped from the officers, and the charges against him were never submitted to judicial investigation.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Kennet, 307. North, 138. Ralph, 297.

<sup>2</sup> State Tracts, i. Marvell, 325. Kennet, 309. North, 487. Gazette, 1124, 1141, 1150. Correspondence of Clarendon and Rochester, i. 2. I shall for brevity refer to this collection by the title of Clarendon Correspondence.

Preparatory to the opening of the next session, CHAP.  
 Shaftesbury and his friends arranged a new plan of <sup>V.</sup> A.D. 1676.  
 opposition. It was discovered that what they had  
 so fruitlessly laboured to effect by their own efforts,  
 had been unwittingly accomplished for them by the  
 ignorance or imprudence of the court. The king, it  
 was maintained, by the long prorogation, had in fact  
 dissolved the parliament. If that assembly did not  
 sit, its existence could be continued only by adjourn-  
 ment or prorogation : now the late parliament had  
 not been adjourned, but prorogued, and that for fifteen  
 months : but such a prorogation was contrary to law,  
 because it was incompatible with two statutes of  
 Edward III., which ordained that a parliament should  
 be held "once a year, or oftener, if need be ;" whence  
 they inferred that, as a prorogation contrary to law  
 was of no effect, the parliament had in fact ceased to  
 exist ; it had been suffered to die a natural death.  
 This novel and extraordinary opinion they laboured,  
 by all the artifices in their power, to impress on the  
 minds of the people : it was made the subject of dis-  
 course in every company ; it was discussed in public  
 and private, in clubs and in drawing-rooms ; and men  
 looked forward with intense interest to the debate  
 which it was expected to provoke, at the opening of  
 the approaching session.

On the appointed day, the 15th of February, multi-  
 tudes of people were observed at an early hour hasten-  
 ing to the parliament house ; and in a short time  
 Westminster Hall, the painted chamber, the Court of  
 Requests, the lobbies and avenues, were crowded with  
 strangers. These men, if we may believe one party,  
 had been led there by curiosity to witness the result ;  
 but, according to the other, had been brought there

1677.  
 Feb. 15.

CHAP. from Southwark and Wapping, to intimidate the  
 V. adherents of the court.<sup>1</sup> Charles addressed the two  
 A.D. 1677. — houses in a speech which elicited the applause even of  
 his adversaries. If, he said, any additional securities  
 were wanted for the church, for liberty or property,  
 he came prepared on his part to assent to every rea-  
 sonable request; and therefore he called on *them* also  
 to do their duty by avoiding the causes of dissension  
 between the houses, by making provision for the in-  
 crease of the navy, by continuing the additional excise,  
 and by granting a moderate supply towards the ex-  
 tinction of the public debt. Thus they would pro-  
 mote the peace, the safety, and the prosperity of the  
 kingdom; and, if any of these ends were disappointed,  
 he called on God and man to witness that he at least  
 was free from the blame.<sup>2</sup>

In both houses the first question introduced was the  
 effect of the long prorogation. In the Commons the  
 popular leaders proceeded with caution. Aware how  
 unpalatable their new doctrine must be to the major-  
 ity of the members, they contented themselves with  
 suggesting an address for a dissolution, as the most  
 eligible means of setting at rest the doubts which had  
 arisen respecting the legality of their existence as an  
 estate of parliament; but the house, after a long con-  
 versation, read a bill the first time according to cus-  
 tom, and postponed the consideration of the question  
 to the following day.<sup>3</sup> In the Lords the opponents  
 of the court assumed a bolder tone. They promised  
 themselves the support of the duke of York, of the

<sup>1</sup> North, 66. L. Journ. xiii. 44. James adds that many of  
 them were old officers from the army of the commonwealth.—  
 Macpher. i. 84.

<sup>2</sup> L. Journ. xiii. 36.

<sup>3</sup> Parl. Hist. iv. 825, 834. Marvell, i. 278.

Catholic peers, and of all who, at the conclusion of the last session, had voted in favour of a dissolution. Buckingham rose, and in a speech of considerable ingenuity and eloquence contended that the parliament had ceased to exist. As soon as he sat down, Lord Frescheville moved that he should be called to the bar for the insult which he had offered to the house. The earl of Salisbury answered Frescheville with warmth and asperity, and was answered in his turn by Lord Arundell of Trerice. Shaftesbury and Wharton supported the motion of Buckingham; and Finch, who had lately been raised to the higher dignity of chancellor, opposed it in a long and laboured harangue. His assertion that the qualification, "if need be," referred to both parts of the act of Edward III., savoured of special pleading; but he had certainly the advantage over his opponents, when he contended that by the triennial act of the 16th of Charles I., the vacations of parliament had been extended to three years; and that, if that act had been repealed, another of similar import had been substituted for it, and was at that very moment the law of the land. The debate continued five hours; but as soon as the proceedings in the House of Commons were known, the ministerial lords called for the question; the motion of Buckingham was negatived; and he, with Salisbury, Shaftesbury, and Wharton, were ordered to retract their opinion, to acknowledge that their conduct was "ill-advised," and to beg pardon of the king and the house. On their refusal, all four were committed to the Tower, to remain there till they should be discharged by the order of those whom they had offended. This decision had a considerable influence on the debate of the following day in the

CHAP.  
V.  
A.D. 1677.

Feb. 16.

Feb. 17.

CHAP. V. House of Commons, where the popular party found themselves in a minority of one hundred and forty-two to one hundred and ninety-three.<sup>1</sup>  
 A.D. 1677.

The arbitrary imprisonment of the four peers spread dismay through the ranks of the opposition, while it freed the lord treasurer from the most formidable of his opponents in the upper house. He knew that it was their object to remove him from office, and to force on the king a new administration formed out of their own party; and he therefore made it his policy to defeat their intrigues, by seeking to retain the favour of the sovereign, and to acquire that of the people. For the first he had only to relieve the royal indigence by competent supplies of money: with a view to the second he had all along displayed an ardent zeal for the suppression of popery, and now obtained permission to bring forward a plan for the security of the established church. His adversaries, on the contrary, resolved to embarrass all his measures by the obstinacy of their opposition, to cast doubts and ridicule on his zeal against popery, and to urge the popular cry for a war with France, at the same time refusing the necessary supplies, as long as they would have to pass through the hands of a minister who possessed not the confidence of parliament. These remarks will enable the reader to understand the manœuvres of the two parties during this session.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Parl. Hist. iv. 814, 824. Hatsell, ii. App. 5. Life of James, i. 504, 557. North, 65. Macpherson, 84. Burnet, ii. 105, 109. Marvell, i. 280, 530, 532. Buckingham slipped out of the house, but surrendered himself the next day.

<sup>2</sup> Charles, in a conversation with Temple, acknowledged that among his opponents there were many that meant honestly, but said that "the heats and distempers of late had been raised by some factious leaders, who thought more of themselves than of anything else, and had a mind to engage him in a war, and then leave him



1. The securities for the church, which had been devised in a meeting with the bishops at Lambeth, were embodied in two bills, of which the first applied to the succession of a Catholic prince, and proposed to enact that on the demise of a king regnant the bishops should tender a declaration against transubstantiation to the new sovereign, and at the end of fourteen days should certify into Chancery whether he had subscribed it or not. If he had not,—1. They were empowered, on every vacancy of a bishopric, to name three persons, of whom, unless the king should select one within thirty days, the first on the list should take possession of course: 2. The two archbishops were authorized to present to all benefices in the gift of the crown lying within their respective provinces: 3. The children of the king, from the age of seven to fourteen, were to be placed under the guardianship of the two primates, and of the bishops of London, Durham, and Winchester, and after that age to be attended only by persons approved by the major part of the same prelates. The other bill, under the title of an act for the more effectual conviction and prosecution of popish recusants, provided that all Catholics who should enrol themselves as recusants should pay a yearly fine of the twentieth part of their incomes, to form a fund for the support of poor converts to the Protestant faith; and should, on that condition, be exempt from all other penalties except the incapacity of executing any office civil or military, of being guardians or executors, or of entering the court without license; that laymen, the perverters of Protestants, should have the option of abjuring the realm; that

CHAP.  
V.  
A.D. 1677.  
—  
Feb. 24.

“in it, unless they might have their terms in removing and filling  
“of places.”—Temple, ii. 411.

CHAP. V. clergyman, convicted of having received orders in the church of Rome, might at his majesty's pleasure be imprisoned for life, instead of suffering the punishment of treason; and that the children of Catholic parents deceased should be educated in the reformed faith.<sup>1</sup>

March 15. When these bills were transmitted to the lower house, they met with an indignant reception. The first, by admitting the possibility of a Catholic successor, tended to subvert the projects of those who sought the exclusion of the duke of York. They suddenly became supporters of the rights of the crown. The bill, they maintained, despoiled the sovereign of his ecclesiastical supremacy, and vested it in the bishops; their objections were echoed by

March 27. the friends of the duke; and the house, having honoured the bill with two readings, allowed it to sleep unnoticed during the remainder of the session. The second was treated with less ceremony. Fortunately for the Catholics, it had alarmed the prejudices of the zealots, who could not be persuaded that by mitigating the severity, they might insure the execution, of the penal laws. They insisted that the

April 4. Catholic clergyman should continue to be subject to the penalty of death, and the Catholic layman to the forfeiture of two-thirds of his property: these were barriers to restrain the diffusion of popery erected by the wisdom of their ancestors, and to remove them would be to concur in the toleration of a false and idolatrous worship. "Is there a man in this house,"

<sup>1</sup> L. Journ. xiii. 48, et seq. Macpherson, 83. Marvell, i. 313, 554, 569. Against the first of these bills James and twelve other peers entered their protests, and Lord Stafford his against the second.—Journ. 75, 92.

exclaimed a voice, "that dares to open his mouth in support of such a measure?" A pause ensued; the advocates of the bill were silent; it was accordingly rejected; and as an additional stigma, the cause of rejection, contrary to all parliamentary precedent, was entered on the journals, that the title of the bill meant one thing, and the body another. At the same time they passed and sent to the House of Lords a bill devised by themselves, "to prevent the growth of popery," enacting that the refusal to subscribe the test against transubstantiation should be taken for a conviction of recusancy. But the Lords resented the manner in which they had been treated; and though the Commons sent two messages to call their attention to the bill, declined to give it so much as a single reading.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
V.  
A.D. 1677.

April 7.

April 13.

May 26.

2. When the king received in January a portion of his annual pension from France, the whole sum was immediately devoted to the purchase of votes in the House of Commons. The consequence was that, on questions of finance, the minister commanded a majority of about thirty voices. The additional excise, which Charles had mentioned in his speech, was voted to continue for three years, and the sum of six hundred thousand pounds was granted towards the support of the navy. The French ministers received the intelligence with some uneasiness; for they were aware of Danby's engagements to the prince of Orange, and feared that, with so large a sum of money at his disposal, he might induce the king to join the allies.

<sup>1</sup> C. Journ. March 27, April 4. L. Journ. xiii. 114, 126. Parl. Hist. iv. 853, 861. Marvell, i. 285, 314. Both houses, however, concurred in one point respecting religion, which was the abolition of the writ *de hæretico comburendo*.—L. Journ. 120.

CHAP. V. But they were undeceived by Ruvigny ; and the event  
A.D. 1677. justified his predictions. Before the grant of the additional excise passed the house, the whole amount was appropriated to particular purposes ; the receivers were instructed to pay the money to certain officers ; and these were ordered to render an account of its disposal to parliament. No portion of it was suffered to pass through the hands of the treasurer.<sup>1</sup>

Feb. 22. 3. In February, the king of France, at the head of a numerous army, burst into the Spanish Netherlands, confounded his enemies by the rapidity and complexity of his movements, sat down suddenly before Valenciennes, and in a few days carried that fortress by assault. Every eye was now turned towards Flanders.

March 7. The novelty of a winter campaign, the success of its commencement, and its probable consequences, created a general alarm ; Solinas and Fonseca, the Spanish agents, spared neither pains nor expense to arouse the passions of the people, and to acquire friends in the parliament ;<sup>2</sup> and an address was voted by the Com-

<sup>1</sup> Dalrymple, ii. 110. C. Journ. Feb. 21, March 2, 9, 11. Marvell, i. 282, 286, 294, 296, 310, 315. Danby's Letters, 309. The Commons had made the officers accountable to their house for the money ; the Lords added an amendment that they should be accountable also to the House of Lords. This the Commons refused to admit, and the Lords, after several conferences, yielded, but at the same time presented an address to the king, stating that they had done so, not meaning to give up their right, but waiving it for the moment, that the public service might not be injured by the loss of the bill.—L. Journ. xiii. 118, 119. Marvell, i. 318, 322. According to Burnet (ii. 109), the clause was introduced by the country party for the express purpose of provoking a dispute between the houses.

<sup>2</sup> The king was alarmed at the activity of these men. They informed some members of the House of Commons that he had said, "only a set of rogues could have voted such an address as that of the 16th of March." This caused much anger in the house, and Charles seized the opportunity to arrest them, and send them out of the kingdom.—Temple, ii. 401. Marvell, i. 304. Macph. i. 83.

mons, praying the king to take such measures as might be necessary to preserve the Spanish Netherlands from the rapacious grasp of the French monarch. Under the influence of Danby, the Lords proposed the addition to the address of a promise of support from the parliament; but the lower house rejected the promise as superfluous, and Charles marked his sense of the rejection by this laconic reply, that he held on that subject the same opinion as the two houses. The French army continued its victorious career. Cambray surrendered; the prince of Orange was defeated at Cassel, and the city of St. Omer opened its gates to the conquerors. The cry for war now resounded from all parts of the kingdom; a second address was voted; and to this, after a long debate, and a division in which the minister obtained a majority of nine voices, was appended the promise of support, which had been formerly negatived. The king answered that he expected something more specific, a grant of at least six hundred thousand pounds to enable him to take part in the war with any prospect of success; but the demand was eluded, under the pretence that many of the members had left town on account of the Easter holidays, and Charles having passed the money bills, adjourned the parliament for the space of five weeks.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
V.  
A.D. 1677.  
—  
March 13.  
AS March 15.  
March 17.  
April 1.  
April 2.  
April 16.

During the recess the imperial ambassador received the sum of ten thousand, the Spanish ambassador that of twelve thousand pounds, to purchase votes in the lower house; and at the same time Courtin, the French envoy, negotiated with the enemies of the lord treasurer to oppose any grant of money to the king. The effect of all these intrigues appeared at the next meet-

<sup>1</sup> C. Journ. March 6, 15, 17, 29, April 13, 16. Marvell, i. 297, 299, 304, 316, 321, 571—596.

CHAP. ing. Charles, adverting to the assertion of his op-  
 V.  
 A.D. 1677. ponents, that he sought to obtain a supply for purposes  
 — of his own, solemnly pledged his word that "they  
 May 23. "should never repent any trust which they might  
 May 25. "repose in him for the safety of his kingdom."<sup>1</sup> This  
 speech provoked a second address, of which the first  
 part accorded with the policy of the French court, by  
 the positive refusal of a supply before the declaration  
 of war; and the second gratified the wishes of the  
 allies, by praying the king to enter into treaties with  
 the United States, and other powers, for the preser-  
 vation of the Netherlands. Charles felt, or affected to  
 May 28. feel, this address as an insult. On the first part he  
 made no comment; in relation to the second, he  
 charged the house with an invasion of his prerogative;  
 they had presumed to dictate to him when, how, and  
 with whom he was to make war; if he were to submit  
 to such an encroachment, he should soon become a mere  
 cipher in the government; and on that account he  
 commanded both houses to adjourn to the month of  
 July. When the Commons returned to their own  
 house, several members rose to contend, that for a com-  
 pulsory adjournment a special commission under the  
 great seal was necessary; but the speaker exclaimed,  
 "By the king's command this house is adjourned till  
 "July 16th." He immediately quitted the chair, and  
 the members separated.<sup>2</sup>

In this parliamentary contest Charles had certainly

<sup>1</sup> This pledge has been pronounced "one of the most dishonour-  
 "able and scandalous acts that ever proceeded from a throne," be-  
 cause he was then negotiating for money with the French ambassa-  
 dor. Now Charles made this speech on May 23, but there is no  
 proof of the existence of such negotiation till after he had been pro-  
 voked to adjourn the parliament.

<sup>2</sup> Dalrymple, ii. 111. Macph. i. 83. Com. Journ. May 25, 28.  
 Marvell, i. 336, 599—638.

the advantage over his adversaries. He had professed himself ready to concur with the general wish of the nation: *they* by their obstinacy had prevented that concurrence, and thus provoked many to suspect the purity of their patriotism.<sup>1</sup> If we consider the avowed enmity of Danby to the interests of France, we shall see little reason to doubt that the king, if he had received a supply, would have taken this year the same decisive measures which he took the next. It is indeed true that he made to Courtin assurances of his attachment to France, and communications of interesting intelligence; but this might be merely an artifice to procure the quarterly remittance of his pension; and so it was interpreted by the French ministers, who, instead of relying on the royal professions, instructed their envoy to England to keep the king dependent on France for money, by obstructing, through the leaders in parliament, every proposed grant or supply from his own subjects.<sup>2</sup>

The adjournment, however, though it relieved, did not remove their apprehensions. Courtin urged a dis-

<sup>1</sup> "To speak my thoughts concerning that address, I think it hard to believe that the fear of the greatness of France could be the leading motive to it."—Brisbane in Danby's Letters, 315. At that time the pointing out the particular alliances to be made was thought by many an encroachment on the prerogative; at the present no man denies that the Commons may offer their advice on any such subject.

<sup>2</sup> One of Courtin's accounts, dated May 5 of this year, is preserved, stating the distribution of something more than three thousand pounds.—Dalrymple, ii. 314. It is remarkable that of this sum three hundred guineas were given to Coleman, who laboured to bring about a dissolution, and five hundred guineas to Dr. Carey, a dependant on Shaftesbury, who was under prosecution by the House of Lords. A pamphlet, voted to be seditious, and supposed to have been written by Shaftesbury, was traced to Dr. Carey. He refused to give up the author, and was adjudged to pay a fine of one thousand pounds, and to be imprisoned till it was paid.—Marvell, i. 286, 288, 546.

CHAP. solution or a prorogation till April, 1678. Charles de-  
 V.  
 A.D. 1677. manded an augmentation of his yearly pension to the  
 — amount of two hundred thousand pounds. A long  
 negotiation followed. The envoy, though he had been  
 instructed to consent, if he found it necessary, perpetu-  
 ally pleaded the poverty of the French treasury; and  
 June 11. the king, though Montague, his ambassador in Paris,  
 July 26. assured him of success, at length condescended to accept  
 the smaller sum of two millions of livres, between one  
 hundred and fifty and one hundred and sixty thousand  
 Sept. 4. pounds. Montague remonstrated: Charles repented  
 of his facility, revoked his word, declared to Barillon,  
 the successor of Courtin, that he had not been aware  
 of the difference in the value of the two sums, and  
 when that minister objected, conducted him to the  
 door, saying, "I am ashamed of the blunder; you  
 "must go and settle the matter with the lord trea-  
 surer." In conclusion he obtained his demand, with  
 October. this addition, that the augmented pension should be  
 reckoned from the commencement of the current year.<sup>1</sup>

In July the adjournment of parliament had been prolonged to December, and a promise was given to Courtin that, on the payment of the French pension, it should be again adjourned till April. The four lords in the Tower had consoled themselves with the knowledge that they must be discharged at the close of the session. To their disappointment the session by these

<sup>1</sup> Courtin had received his authority for two hundred thousand pounds on the 11th of June; and it is probable that Montague discovered it; for on that very day he wrote to the king that, if he had authority to ask, he would engage to procure an augmentation of the pension to that amount. This letter is important, as it shows how early and how anxiously this ardent patriot laboured to indulge the king in his pecuniary dealings with the French monarch.—Compare Danby's Letters, 1—37, with the despatches in Dalrymple, ii. 111—116.



adjournments was continued. The prospect of a long and indefinite confinement humbled the spirit of Buckingham, Salisbury, and Wharton, who having, in a petition to the king, revoked their opinion, and stated their repentance, obtained their liberty; but the obstinacy of Shaftesbury disdained to submit; he appealed for protection to the law, was brought by writ of *habeas corpus* before the court of King's Bench, and with the aid of four barristers pleaded his own cause. The judges replied that they could not admit him to bail, because he had been sent to the Tower, not for safe custody, but in execution of judgment; neither could they grant him a discharge, because, that judgment having been pronounced by the House of Lords, the case came not within the jurisdiction of the court, pending the session. Seven months later, when the parliament met, the other three lords having previously asked pardon, resumed their seats; but Shaftesbury had sinned more deeply; to the original offence he had added that of appealing from the judgment of his peers to an inferior tribunal, the court of King's Bench, and on that account he was compelled not only to make the same submission with his companions, but also to crave on his knees forgiveness for this breach of the privilege of the house. "My lords," he said, "I go not about to justify myself, but cast myself at your lordships' feet, acknowledge my error, and humbly beg your pardon." More than this could not be required. The house was satisfied; and the king ordered the repentant sinner to be discharged from the Tower. No man can doubt that the punishment thus inflicted on the four lords originated in a wish to humble the leaders of an opposite and formidable party. Danby had then a majority at his nod, and

CHAP.  
V.  
A.D. 1677.

June 27.

June 29.

1678.  
Feb. 4.

Feb. 7.

Feb. 25.

Feb. 27.

CHAP. V. could expound the law of parliament as he pleased ;  
 A.D. 1678. but in the course of two years Shaftesbury rose to the  
 — high pre-eminence before possessed by his adversary ;  
 and one of his first cares was to procure a vote pro-  
 nouncing all these proceedings irregular, and ordering  
 every trace of them to be expunged from the journals  
 of the house.<sup>1</sup>

The reader is aware that in the year 1674 the prince  
 of Orange had very unceremoniously refused the hand  
 of the Princess Mary. Succeeding events had taught  
 him to lament his imprudence. All the flattering pre-  
 dictions of his advisers were falsified ; and he dis-  
 covered that he had given offence to the only prince  
 who could enable him either to conclude an honour-  
 able peace, or to continue the war with any prospect  
 of success. Convinced that it was his interest to seek  
 a reconciliation, he began in the first place by culti-  
 vating the friendship of the favourite minister, the  
 lord treasurer ; in the next he condescended to solicit  
 that union, which he had previously rejected ; and,  
 May 31. alarmed at the coldness with which the proposal was  
 received, requested permission to come to England,  
 that he might apologize for his past conduct, and  
 explain his views for the future. Charles, partly  
 through a feeling of resentment, partly through jeal-  
 ousy of his connection with the popular leaders, af-  
 fected to hesitate ; and when he gave his consent,  
 June 11. made it an express condition that William should  
 Oct. 9. leave England before the meeting of parliament. At

<sup>1</sup> Marvell, i. 348, 355, 359. St. Trials, vi. 1269. North, 71, 73. Harl. MSS. 2202. Correspondence of Clarendon and Rochester, i. 6, 7. Bulstrode, 272. He acknowledged that "the bringing of the *habeas corpus* was a high violation of their lordships' privileges, and a great aggravation of his former offence."—See Hatsell, ii. App. 395—415.

the close of the campaign he joined his two uncles at Newmarket: the lord treasurer, and Temple, who was returned from the embassy, were devoted to his interest; and their united efforts extorted from the easy monarch his consent to the immediate solemnization of the marriage, though he had previously arranged with James that it should only follow the acquiescence of the prince in their views with respect to the peace of the continent. The duke was surprised and mortified; but, deeming it his duty to submit to the will of the sovereign, he accompanied his brother to the council chamber. Charles announced to the lords that he had concluded a marriage between his nephew the prince of Orange and his niece the Princess Mary, for the purpose of uniting the different branches of his family, and of proving to his people the interest which he took in the security of their religion. "And I," added the duke, "as father of the bride, have given my consent,—a consent which will prove the falsehood of the charges so often made against me, that I meditate changes in the church and state. The only change which I seek, is to secure men from molestation in civil concerns on account of their opinion on religious matters."<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
V.  
A.D. 1678.  
—  
Oct. 24.

This marriage gave universal satisfaction; and during the festivities with which it was celebrated at court, close and frequent consultations were held respecting the conditions which ought to form the basis of a general peace. But on these occasions the uncle and the nephew met with secret feelings of jealousy and resentment, the prince attributing the preponderance of France to the apathy of the king, the king to the

<sup>1</sup> Danby, Letters, 130—150, 285. Temple, ii. 419, 421. James, i. 508—510. Dalrymple, ii. 126.

CHAP. V. obstinacy of the prince ; the one insisting with vehemence that Franche-comté should be restored to Spain ; and the other as warmly contending that such a demand would oppose an insuperable obstacle to the attainment of peace. At length William yielded ; the interests of his ally were sacrificed to the acquisition of a sufficient barrier between France and the United Provinces ; and both parties agreed to propose the following project of a treaty to the powers at war : that Holland and France should mutually restore the conquests which they had made ; that the territory of France should remain *in statu quo* ; that the duchy of Lorrain should be restored to the duke, the rightful sovereign ; and that Louis should keep possession of the places and countries which he had won from Spain, with the exception of Ath, Charleroi, Oudenarde, Courtrai, Tournai, Condé, and Valenciennes, which towns should be restored, to form a chain of fortresses separating the new acquisitions of France from the ancient boundary of the republic. Charles acknowledged that the ambition of Louis ought to be satisfied with these terms ; he even undertook to propose them to the acceptance of that monarch, and to require an immediate and positive answer ; but no arts of the prince could draw from his uncle an engagement to join his forces with those of the confederates in the event of a refusal.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> James, i. 510. Danby, 152—156. Temple, ii. 422. Temple, indeed, affirms that the king pledged himself to make war in case of a refusal on the part of Louis (p. 426). It is, however, evident from the letter of Danby to the prince, of Dec. 4, that up to that day no such pledge had been given (p. 162). It may be, that Temple writing from memory has occasionally confounded dates and circumstances. Danby writing at the time, and to the prince, respecting a negotiation in which they were both engaged, could not be in error.

The king felt the awkwardness of the new character which he had assumed. Hitherto he pretended to no other office than that of mediator, now he took upon himself to arbitrate between the contending powers. He was bound by secret treaty to Louis; he received from him a yearly pension; he had been in the habit of making to him protestations of gratitude and friendship; and yet he was about to dictate conditions of peace which would arrest that monarch in his career of victory, and tear from him a valuable portion of his conquests. Having selected Lord Feversham<sup>1</sup> for the mission, he gave him instructions to deliver his message in the least offensive manner; to state that the restoration of the seven towns was a condition from which nothing could induce the prince of Orange to recede; that it was considered necessary for the preservation of Flanders, to which Louis himself had given up all pretensions; that the people of England were so deeply interested in the fate of that country, that the king could "never live at ease with "them," if he were to suffer it to be annexed to France either by war or treaty; that, as the parliament had already compelled him to withdraw from his alliance with Louis, so it was to be feared that they might at last force him into a war against that monarch; and that, should the project of peace be accepted, the acquiescence of the French king in that point "would remove all accidents that might obstruct "the existing friendship between the two crowns."

CHAP.  
V.  
A.D. 1678.

Nov. 10.

<sup>1</sup> Louis Duras, marquis de Blanquefort, and nephew to the great Turenne, was a French Protestant, naturalized in England, and appointed captain of his guard by the duke of York. He was created Baron Duras (19th January, 1673); and on the death of his father-in-law, the earl of Feversham, succeeded to that title in 1677.

CHAP.  
V.  
A.D. 1678.

Nov. 23.

Feversham proceeded to Paris; and, as he had nothing more in command than "to desire the most Christian king's judgment on the proposal," it was expected that he would not be detained above two days; but a fortnight passed without any tidings of his return, and the prince of Orange was compelled by despatches from the continent to hasten back to the theatre of war.<sup>1</sup>

Nov. 30.

In the French cabinet Colbert argued warmly in favour of the project; Louvois, who spoke the sentiments of his sovereign, contended for the prosecution of the war. After several delays Feversham received this answer, that Louis had read the proposal with surprise; that to call on him to surrender the seven fortresses was as unreasonable as to amputate a man's feet, and then bid him walk; but that, in proof of his moderation, he would consent to a truce for all the towns, whether they belonged to Spain or Holland, which were situated between the Meuse and the sea, according to the demarcation of 1668.<sup>2</sup> The envoy returned; and the next post brought advice that in defiance of the season the French army had taken the field, and had invested Guislain, which was expected to fall in a few days. Such conduct irritated the pride of Charles; he ordered the adjournment of parliament to be shortened from April the 4th to January

<sup>1</sup> The instructions for Lord Feversham have been published by Lord John Russell, in his *Life of William Lord Russell*, ii. 218—224. They show how incorrect Temple is in his statement of the terms to be proposed by Feversham to Louis.

<sup>2</sup> Danby, i. 161. By the treaty of April 5, 1668, an imaginary line was drawn from Ostend through Ghent, Rupplemond, and Mechlin to Argenteau, and it was agreed in the event of a refusal to make peace on the part of Spain, that England and Holland should make conquests on the north, and France on the south, of that line.—See Dumont, vii. 89.

the 15th;<sup>1</sup> and compelled Montague, the ambassador, who had obtained leave of absence, to return in all haste to Paris. He was instructed to express the surprise of the king, that the epithet "unreasonable" should be applied to an arrangement which was necessary for the preservation of Flanders; his apprehension that the rejection of the project would compel him to adopt measures which it was his most anxious wish to avoid; his persuasion that the sacrifice demanded of Louis was trifling in comparison with the risk which he himself must encounter from the discontent of his subjects; and his intention of meeting his parliament before the French army could have time to extend its conquests in Flanders.<sup>2</sup> On the same day Charles sent directions to Hyde, the ambassador at the Hague, to propose to the States a new treaty after the model of the triple alliance, by which the two powers should be bound to each other, not only to defend themselves against all aggressors, but also to declare war, England against France, the States against Spain, if either France or Spain should reject the proposed treaty of peace. The prince of Orange received this intelligence with feelings of astonishment and triumph. He had

CHAP.  
V.  
A.D. 1678.

Dec. 3.  
Dec. 4.

Dec. 11.

<sup>1</sup> That this was the real cause, is plain from the instructions to Hyde and Montague.—Danby, 161, 327. Life of Lord Russell, ii. App. 225. The shortening of the adjournment could not have proceeded, as Dalrymple asserts (p. 128), from resentment on account of the stoppage of the French pension; for the first took place on Dec. 3, the latter on Dec. 17. Neither is Dalrymple more correct in his account of the manner of adjournment. The king announced by proclamation that the attendance of distant members on the 3rd of December would be unnecessary, as the house would meet only to adjourn to the 4th of April; on account, however, of the change of circumstances, when they did meet, they adjourned at the king's request only to the 15th of Jan.—Journals, Dec. 3, 1667.

<sup>2</sup> See Life of William Lord Russell, ii. App. 224—227. Montague's message was taken by Louis and Louvois as conveying a threat of hostilities to follow.—Danby, 41, 42.

CHAP. not expected such a demonstration of vigour from the  
 V.  
 A.D. 1678. indolence of his uncle : his influence soon obtained the  
 — consent of the States-General ; and in a few days the  
 Dec. 31. new treaty was concluded, with the full but unavowed  
 sanction of the Spanish government at Brussels.<sup>1</sup>

Anxious as Louis had always been to prevent the union of Charles with his enemies, yet he did not suffer the apparent hostility of the English king to withdraw him from his purpose.

1. A long time must necessarily elapse before the British troops could take the field. They were not yet levied, nor had any vote of credit been passed for their support. But a fleet might soon be formed of the ships in actual service ; and therefore, as a measure of precaution, he despatched secret orders for the evacuation of Sicily, and the immediate return to France both of his army in that island, and of his naval force in the Mediterranean.<sup>2</sup> At the same time he sought to damp the military ardour of his English brother, first, by suspending, though with many apologies and expressions of personal esteem, the payment of the yearly pension, of which fifty thousand pounds  
 Dec. 17. was actually due ; and then by proposing a general truce for twelve months, during which expedients might  
 Dec. 19. be devised to satisfy every interest. He assured Montague that no consideration would ever induce him to part with Condé, Valenciennes, and Tournai ; and left

<sup>1</sup> Danby's Letters, 161, 162, 166, 326. Dumont, vii. 341. C. Journ. May 2, 1678. In the treaty both powers agreed to compel jointly France and Spain to consent ; but in article ix. the States assert that they have sufficient assurance of the consent of Spain (*satis certi sunt*), so that the treaty was in reality directed against France alone. Yet this important point was concealed in the abstract of the treaty entered on the journals.

<sup>2</sup> J'envoyai le maréchal de la Feuillade avec ordre de ramener les troupes, et je lui ordonnai de s'y préparer avec tant de secret et de diligence, que l'union de l'Angleterre avec mes ennemis ne rendit pas leur retour impossible.—Œuvres de Louis, iv. 143.



it to his minister to add that, if Charles could prevail on the prince to consent to the cession of those places, their full value should be paid to the English king in bars of gold concealed within bales of silk, and any sum which the lord-treasurer might name as the reward of his services should be remitted to him in the shape of diamonds and pearls. As another inducement, a hint was thrown out of a marriage between the dauphin and Mademoiselle d'Orleans, the niece of Charles, with the remark, that the interests of that young lady ought to be as dear to her uncle as those of his nephew William. Montague (if he had not already tasted of the bounty of the French king, he had at least received a promise of remuneration) was careful, in the letter which conveyed these proposals, to paint them in the most inviting colours.<sup>1</sup> But the king proved himself superior to temptation. On the one hand he was kept steady to his purpose by the representations of Danby, who ardently wished to provoke a war with France, on the other by the duke of York, who warmly espoused the quarrel of his son-in-law, and flattered his own ambition with the hope of reaping an ample harvest of military glory. At the duke's suggestion instructions were sent for the return of the English troops serving in the pay of France; a strong squadron sailed to the Mediterranean to reinforce the fleet under Sir John Narborough; commissions were issued for the completion of the old and the raising of new regiments, and possession of the port of Ostend was demanded from the Spanish government as a *depôt* for the use of the English army in Flanders.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Dalrymple, ii. 128. Danby, 40, 45, 48, 61.

<sup>2</sup> Danby, 58, 171, 174, 176, 190. Dalrymple, ii. 145.

CHAP. 2. But besides the sovereign there existed another  
 V.  
 A.D. 1678. power, with which Louis did not think it beneath his  
 —  
 Nov 3. dignity to negotiate. The marriage of the Princess  
 Mary had convinced the popular leaders that the prince  
 of Orange had abandoned their party. Some of them  
 without delay sought the ear of the French ambas-  
 sador; a new plan of opposition was devised; and at  
 his suggestion it was resolved to attribute the recall of  
 the English troops from the French service (a measure  
 which they themselves had repeatedly recommended  
 in parliament) to an intention on the part of the king  
 of rendering himself absolute with the aid of a stand-  
 ing army. With these men Barillon was ordered to  
 continue his connection; but several, and those the  
 most influential, stood aloof; and to them the younger  
 Ruvigny was despatched from Paris, as a more accept-  
 able instrument, on account of his relationship to  
 Lady Vaughan, and his intimate acquaintance with the  
 family of Russell.<sup>1</sup> On his arrival he waited on the  
 king and the lord-treasurer, to acquaint them that an  
 equivalent might perhaps be accepted for Condé and  
 Valenciennes, but never, in any circumstances, for  
 Tournai. In a private audience with Charles, he made  
 to him the most liberal offers of pecuniary assistance,  
 and begged him to be on his guard against the per-  
 nicious counsels of Danby, who sacrificed the interests  
 of his sovereign to his own desire of popularity. To  
 Danby himself he repeated assurances of the high

<sup>1</sup> Ruvigny was instructed to apply first to the king, and then, if he failed of success, to Lord Russell. He came about the middle of January, returned to Paris on the 8th of February, and came back before the end of the month. Whether he explained himself to Holles and Russell in his first visit is uncertain. The interviews mentioned in the text are detailed in a memoir of Barillon of the 4th of March.

esteem in which he was held by the French monarch, and expressed a hope that the minister would employ the influence which he so deservedly possessed both with the king and the prince, to extinguish rather than foment animosities and resentments. Finding, however, that his arguments and eloquence made no impression, he sought and obtained several interviews with Lord Holles and Lord Russell. The latter he found open and communicative; the former was cautious and reserved, but a most bitter enemy of the court. Both seemed to apprehend that there might exist a secret and collusive understanding between the two monarchs; that the present appearance of dissension was assumed merely as a feint to furnish Charles with the pretext of demanding a supply; and that the articles of peace were already settled, and would be made public as soon as the money bill should be passed. But when this cause of jealousy was removed, *they* agreed to append to the supply conditions which should render it unacceptable to the king; to bring forward charges against the lord-treasurer and his friends; to harass the duke of York and the Catholics with the proposal of new disqualifications; and to employ every means in their power to provoke the king to adjourn or prorogue the parliament; and Ruvigny, on the part of his sovereign, promised, that, if by their opposition Charles were compelled to renew his connection with France, Louis should employ all his influence to procure a dissolution of parliament and the ruin of the lord-treasurer, two objects equally desired, as equally conducive to their interests, both by the popular party and the French monarch. There is no reason to suppose that Holles and Russell were betrayed into this dangerous and illegal intrigue by

CHAP. V. pecuniary considerations. It was with them the effect  
 A.D. 1678. of party zeal and political resentment; and when Russell was asked by Ruvigny to point out the persons among whom he should distribute the large sum which he had brought with him from France, that nobleman indignantly replied, that he should be sorry to have communication with men who were to be bought with money. His friends, however, were less scrupulous, and it will subsequently appear that several of them accepted valuable presents from the French monarch.<sup>1</sup>

3. From England Louis turned his attention to the Hague. In the United Provinces there was scarcely a man who did not wish for a separate peace. Even those who opposed it in the States were not restrained by principles of honour, but by the ascendancy possessed by William, who still refused to hear of any proposal by which his allies should be abandoned to the resentment of their enemy. But, since his marriage into the royal family of England, his influence had been on the wane; and his countrymen began to suspect the object of his connection with a monarch, whom of all men they considered as their most bitter enemy. To strengthen this impression, the French ambassador was plentifully supplied with money, and his agents were instructed to throw out insinuations against the patriotism of the prince, to attribute his obstinacy in opposing a separate peace to his love of military command, and his frequent intercourse with the English court to a joint design of establishing a system of arbitrary power, both in England and in the Netherlands. The advocates of peace multiplied rapidly; their numbers encouraged them to speak in a bolder tone, and the prince saw that without some

<sup>1</sup> Dalrymple, ii. 129—136. Danby, Letters, 50, 53, 56, 59.

very important change in affairs, he should be no longer able to control the general wish of his countrymen.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
V.  
A.D. 1678.

When the parliament met, Charles informed the two houses that he had made an alliance defensive and offensive with the States for the protection of Flanders; that having failed in his efforts to procure peace by fair means, he would endeavour to procure it by force; that for this purpose it would be necessary to put ninety sail of ships in commission, and to raise thirty or forty thousand men, and that he therefore expected from his faithful subjects a prompt and plentiful supply, which they were at liberty to appropriate to particular purposes in the most rigorous manner that could be devised. The popular leaders dared not directly oppose this demand;—for they had been the most clamorous among the advocates of war<sup>2</sup>—but to the address of thanks for the royal speech they artfully appended two very popular but unpalatable requests, that the king would never consent, and would bind his allies never to consent, to any peace which did not confine France within the limits formerly settled by the treaty of the Pyrenees; and that he would make it a condition of the confederacy, that all commercial intercourse with France should be prohibited, and all articles of French growth or manufacture should be destroyed wherever, either by land or by sea, they might be found. Charles

Jan. 28

Jan. 31.

<sup>1</sup> Danby's Letters, 206, 254, 329, 351. Temple, ii. 427.

<sup>2</sup> Ils disent qu'ils n'ont jamais prétendu s'opposer ouvertement à donner de l'argent au Roi; que ce seroit le moyen de s'attirer la haine du peuple, et le reproche de tout ce qui pourroit arriver dans la suite.—Dalrym. 134. James, in a letter of Feb. 5, observes to the prince, that "those who seemed to be most zealous for a war with France last session, are those who obstruct most the giving a supply."—Ibid. 147.

CHAP. commented on this address with great severity of  
 A.D. 1678. language. He had complied with their request of  
 —  
 Feb. 4. the 20th of May by making an alliance with Hol-  
 land; but they seemed to have forgotten their  
 promise of supplying him with money to accomplish  
 the object of such alliance, and had again invaded his  
 prerogative by prescribing to him the conditions to be  
 inserted in treaties; but they should know that he  
 held the reins of government in his hand, and would  
 continue to hold them for the safety of his people and  
 himself. In addition they presumed to interfere  
 with the commercial regulations of foreign and in-  
 dependent governments, which must be provoked  
 by such interference; and to dictate the terms of a  
 future peace, as if they possessed a knowledge of  
 the future contingencies of war; and this too at a  
 time when not a ship, a regiment, a single penny had  
 been voted to enable him to support the language  
 which they wished him to assume. In the debate  
 which followed, the country party maintained that  
 they dared not grant money for the support of an  
 alliance, the conditions of which had not been  
 Feb. 5. communicated to the house; but the minister ob-  
 tained a majority of forty-two voices, and a supply  
 was voted in general terms for the maintenance of  
 a fleet of ninety sail, and an army of thirty thousand  
 men.<sup>1</sup>

The extraordinary conduct of the House of Com-  
 mons induced the king to reflect seriously, before he  
 suffered himself to be irrevocably drawn into the war.  
 The French troops were already in motion: it was  
 plain that his opponents, if they could not prevent,

<sup>1</sup> C. Journ. Jan. 28, 31, Feb. 4, 5. Parl. Hist. iv. 896, 915—  
 925.

would at least retard the supply, till it should be too late for him to influence the events of the campaign : the States not only talked of a separate peace, they refused to furnish their quota of ships to the combined fleet, and Villa Hermosa declared that a pacification on any conditions was better to Spain than the continuance of the war.<sup>1</sup> Charles began to hesitate ; new expedients suggested themselves to his mind ; and he resolved to make another effort to procure a peace. As France had expressed a willingness to restore Condé and Valenciennes, the single town of Tournai constituted the principal subject of dispute ; and the king persuaded himself that Louis might be brought to accept, William to yield, Charlemont in its place. With this proposal, he despatched Ruvigny to Paris, Godolphin to Holland ; but with the intimation that the suggestion proceeded from himself, that he still intended to abide by the determination of his nephew, and that he should consider the investment by the French of any Spanish town before he received an answer as a declaration of war against England. The reply of Louis was probably evasive, that of the prince of Orange, who had been privately instructed by Danby, a direct refusal.<sup>2</sup>

CHAP.

V.

A.D. 1678.

Feb. 8.

While the projects of Charles were paralyzed by

<sup>1</sup> See the instructions to Godolphin, Danby's Letters, 346.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. ; also p. 197, 204. Dalrymple, ii. 147, 148. Clarend. Corresp. i. 5. On Feb. 8th, Danby wrote to the prince that "there was no cause to fear any alteration in the king ; but that, if his highness did not approve the having such conditions offered to France, he might be confident he should hear no more of them." —Dalrymple, ii. 156. It is probable that this letter was written by the king's order ; for the next day Danby writes a second letter, which he desires may be burnt, exhorting the prince to refuse the proposal, and instructing him to return two answers, one private for the minister himself, and another fit to be shown to the king. Danby, 197—199. In this second letter he says, that in parlia-

CHAP. doubts and jealousies, Louis displayed a spirit of enter-  
 A.D. 1678. prise which astonished, and ultimately subdued his  
 — enemies. About the end of January he proceeded  
 Jan. 29. from Paris to Metz, and every eye was directed to the  
 armies on the Rhine: in a few days Namur, and then  
 Mons, were invested, and the prince of Orange and the  
 Spanish generals hastened to the protection of these  
 Feb. 14. fortresses: next Louvois approached Ipres, and its  
 numerous garrison was confined within its walls: at  
 last the Marshal D'Humières with a large division  
 Feb. 19. sat down before the important city of Ghent, the real  
 Feb. 22. object of all these movements; in three days the king  
 Feb. 27. arrived in the camp; the trenches were opened, and  
 March 15. the inhabitants capitulated. Soon afterwards Ipres  
 fell, and Louis, satisfied with these conquests, engaged  
 to undertake no military operations during two  
 months. He had opened a road into Holland; he  
 had placed himself in a situation to insult at any  
 hour Brussels, the seat of the Spanish government,  
 and he paused to ascertain what impression this  
 change of circumstances might make on the confederates.<sup>1</sup>

In England the reduction of Ghent provoked a general cry for war. The House of Commons hastened to pass a bill, imposing a poll-tax as part of the supply; but the popular leaders were careful to incumber it with provisos thought to trench on the lawful authority of the crown, and to take from its value by the

ment "all doubt whether his majesty will go freely into war, and *not without cause*:" words whence some writers have not hesitated to infer that Danby thought the king insincere in his present professions. To me, however, it appears from the whole context of his despatches that he does not charge him with insincerity, but fears that the offers and persuasion of the French envoy may induce him to have recourse again to negotiation. See also p. 363.

<sup>1</sup> Louis, iv. 123—162.



introduction of a clause, which prohibited the importation of French commodities, and consequently lopped off one of the most productive branches of revenue. It was expected that Charles would resent this artifice;<sup>1</sup> but, guided by the counsels of his brother and the lord-treasurer, he silently accepted the bill, despatched three thousand men to Ostend, and issued levy-money to twenty colonels, each of whom bound himself to raise a regiment of one thousand men in the space of six weeks. His adversaries in parliament were surprised at his vigour, but did not relax from their efforts to embarrass his proceedings. Lord Russell inveighed with warmth against popery and a standing army; Sir Gilbert Gerard hinted a suspicion that, if the new regiments were raised, they would be employed, not against the enemy, but the liberties of the country; a committee was appointed to inquire into the dangers with which the established church was threatened by the growth of popery; and an address was voted, praying the king to declare war without a moment's delay, to dismiss the French envoys, and to recall his own commissioners from the congress at Nimeguen. The object of the supply, and the tone of this address, provoked Ruvigny and Barillon to expostulate with their friends, the former with the lords Russell and Holles, the latter with Buckingham and Shaftesbury. They all returned the same answer, that they had violated no pledge; that to oppose the grant of money would have been dangerous, but they had clogged it with conditions most offensive to the king;

CHAP.  
V.  
A.D. 1678.

March 20.

March 14.

March 15.

<sup>1</sup> Charles adverted to this artifice in the next session, and declared that, if such innovation were continued of "tacking together" matters of a different nature in the same bill, "that bill should certainly be lost, let the importance of it be never so great."—C. Journ. May 23, 1678.

CHAP. and that in moving the address, they had sought to  
 A.D. 1678. <sup>V.</sup> draw from him the disclosure of his real intentions, an  
 — object not more beneficial to themselves than to the  
 French monarch; for, were he once with the aid of  
 an army to secure the persons of his political oppo-  
 nents, he would be able to obtain from a servile  
 parliament whatever aid he might demand for the  
 prosecution of the war. Lord Russell carried up the  
 address to the House of Lords for their concurrence;  
 but they contended that it would be folly to plunge  
 the nation into hostilities without some previous  
 knowledge of the intentions of the allies. A con-  
 ference followed; neither house was convinced by the  
 March 22. other; and the Lords in conclusion returned a direct  
 refusal.<sup>1</sup>

The fact was, that the success of Louis had subdued  
 March 17. the obstinacy of the confederates. The emperor, the  
 queen of Spain, the prince of Orange, acquainted the  
 king by their ambassadors that they no longer objected  
 to the cession of Tournai, and in addition of Valen-  
 ciennes, if France would restore the other five towns,  
 and with them her recent conquests.<sup>2</sup> Charles re-  
 ceived the information with joy: of the acquiescence  
 of Louis he entertained not a doubt, and instantly de-  
 vised a plan of providing for his own interests, while  
 March 25. he seemed to consult only those of the allies. Calling  
 for Danby, he compelled him to write to the ambas-  
 sador at Paris the celebrated letter, which at a subse-

<sup>1</sup> C. Journ. Feb. 18, March 8, 15, 22. L. Journ. xiii. 186, 192, 196. Parl. Hist. iv. 940—956. Barillon, 134, 137.

<sup>2</sup> M. le duc de Villa Hermosa a répondu qu'il acceptera les conditions. . . . Pour nous, nous ferons de même, et ainsy voilà la paix faite, si la France continue à la vouloir sur ce pied; de quoi je doute fort.—The prince to Danby, March 17, p. 214. See also Danby's Letters (ibid. 210); and Hyde's from the Hague, ibid. 329.

quent period led to the disgrace and ruin of that minister. By it Montague was told that in the official despatch he would find instructions to do nothing more than sound the disposition of Louis in respect to these terms; because it was necessary to keep secret the real object of the king. He was, however, to make the proposal, and to pledge the word of his sovereign for the consent of Spain and the States. If it were rejected, he was to add nothing more; but if accepted, to demand for Charles, as the reward for his good service, a pension of six hundred thousand livres during the three following years. A postscript was added in the hand of the king: "This letter is writ by my order, C. R."<sup>1</sup> By Louis the offer was refused without hesitation: it came, he said, too late; his recent successes entitled him to greater advantages; he might, indeed, restore Guislain and Ghent, but he would retain Ipres; and he had given instructions to his envoys at Nimeguen to make an almost similar proposal to the confederates, by which, however, he should not hold himself bound unless it was accepted by a

CHAP.  
V.  
A.D. 1678.

April 1.

<sup>1</sup> Danby, 70—76. The facts that the bill for the poll-tax received the royal assent on the 20th, and that the king proposed terms of peace to Louis on the 25th, have induced most writers to charge him with deceit, with pretending hostility to France till the money was voted, and then seeking a peace, that he might put the money in his pocket. But attention to dates and events will not justify the inference. It was not before the 14th of March that the bill passed the Lords, when it was known that a strong inclination to make peace existed in the Dutch and Spanish councils. On the 15th the two houses informed the king that they had provided money, and wished him to declare war without delay. He waited four days before he returned an answer, expecting probably certain intelligence from the continent. It did not, however, arrive, and on the 19th he promised to pass the bill, which he did the next day. The prince of Orange wrote his answer, stating that all parties would accept the conditions formerly proposed, on the 17th, which would reach London between the 20th and 25th, and on the receipt of this answer, the king ordered the proposals to be sent to Montague.

CHAP. certain day. Charles was disappointed and offended ;  
 A.D. 1673. his warlike spirit revived, and he suggested to the  
 — foreign ministers at his court the conclusion of a  
 quadripartite alliance, which he would follow up with  
 a declaration of war. The Spanish ambassador and  
 the imperial envoy assented with joy, but the Dutch  
 hesitated ; he had neither powers nor instructions, and  
 dared not act without them.<sup>1</sup> That he might have  
 April 15. time to consult the States, the parliament, which had  
 met after the Easter recess, was adjourned for a fort-  
 night, and in that interval Van Beuningen received  
 the necessary powers, but without any instructions  
 for his guidance. It was before suspected, it now  
 became manifest, that the States would enter into no  
 engagement which might throw obstacles in the way  
 April 29. of a separate peace. Before a few days were passed,  
 they voted a resolution to accept the terms offered by  
 France.

On the meeting of parliament, the lord chancellor,  
 by order of the king, explained to the two houses the  
 past course and the present state of these negotiations,  
 and in conclusion solicited their advice, with a promise  
 that it should be faithfully followed. But the popular  
 leaders had not forgotten their engagement to the  
 French ambassador.<sup>2</sup> They induced the house to  
 listen to a long and tedious report from the committee  
 for religion, which had discovered that a dozen Catholic  
 priests resided in the counties of Hereford and Mon-  
 mouth, and that the laws which gave two third-parts  
 of the estates of Catholic recusants to the crown

<sup>1</sup> Dalrymple, ii. 155. C. Journ. Ap. 29. The next day Danby complains to the prince—"I do from my soul believe that our parliament and your States contribute more to the service of the French king than the best army he has could do" (p. 219).

<sup>2</sup> See p. 325.

were often evaded by means of secret trusts and conveyances. This was sufficient; the alarming intelligence awakened the fears of the godly and the credulous; and a resolution was passed, that the house could not, consistently with its duty, lay any additional charge on the people, till the kingdom was "secured, and the dangers were prevented, which might arise from the prevalence and the countenance given to the popish party."<sup>1</sup> When the king heard of this vote, so unfounded in fact, and so insulting to his government, he burst into expressions of astonishment and indignation; he saw that the object of its authors was to fortify themselves with the passions of the people, and to connect the refusal of supplies with demands for the security of religion; and he openly charged with deception those among his counsellors who had urged him to enter into war on the ground that he would meet with the co-operation of parliament. There remained, he said, but one resource for himself. The confederates were willing to accept the terms offered by France; they should have his assistance; and he would demand money for concurring in the accomplishment of a pacification, which would equally be accomplished without his concurrence.

With this view he wrote a conciliatory letter to Louis, and ordered the lord-treasurer to commence a negotiation with the French ambassador. The subsequent proceedings in parliament served to confirm him in his determination. The Commons voted an address for the removal of the duke of Lauderdale from the

CHAP.  
V.  
A.D. 1678.

May 1.

<sup>1</sup> The evidence on which this vote was founded occupies five folio pages in the printed journals, under the date of April 29, and deserves attention, as it shows what trifles may serve to raise the fiercest ebullitions of religious animosity under the management of bold and artful leaders.—Journals, April 29.

CHAP. V. council, pronounced the alliances lately concluded by  
 A.D. 1678. the king inconsistent with the good and safety of the  
 — kingdom : advised him to comply with their previous  
 addresses, and prayed him to banish from his presence  
 the counsellors who had induced him to reject their  
 May 11. first advice. Charles on the other hand informed them  
 that without a prompt supply a portion of the fleet  
 must be laid up, and a considerable reduction be made  
 in the army. After some debate they refused to con-  
 May 13. sider the subject ; and the king, sending for them to  
 the House of Lords, prorogued the parliament, but  
 only for the short space of ten days.<sup>1</sup>

Louis, in the meantime, aware of the impression  
 which his victories and his emissaries had made on the  
 public mind in Holland, despatched a letter of the  
 May 6. most pacific tendency to the States, and awaited their  
 reply in his camp at Wetteren, on the right bank of  
 the Scheldt. They immediately consulted the English,  
 Spanish, and imperial ambassadors, who, by the secret  
 May 11. advice of the prince, returned for answer, that they  
 ought to abide by their engagements, and refuse to  
 negotiate unless it were in company with their allies.  
 But Louis had already won a separate peace by the  
 capture of Ghent.<sup>2</sup> The desire to remove the French  
 army to a distance from the frontier, aided by the

<sup>1</sup> Temple, ii. 434. Louis, iv. 163. Dalrymple, ii. 172. C. Journ. April 29, May 4, 7, 8, 10, 11, 13. The parties were so equally balanced, that the fate of every question seemed doubtful. The vote for an address against Lauderdale was carried by a majority of forty-five. On the next day the address itself was rejected by a majority of six, and on the following it was inserted as an amendment in another address by a majority of eight.

<sup>2</sup> Sa prise a forcé mes ennemis à la paix, les mettant hors d'état de soutenir la guerre.—Louis, iv. 146. Some of his council thought it beneath the king to solicit peace : mais, he adds with great complacency, le bien public, se joignant à la gloire de me vaincre moi même, l'importa.—Ibid. 163.

distribution of French gold, bore down all opposition; and the prince himself, warned of the unpopularity of his resistance, and driven to despair by the recent conduct of the English parliament, gave a tardy and reluctant assent. Van Beverning proceeded to the French camp, and an armistice was concluded to allow time for the discussion of the articles of peace.<sup>1</sup>

That he might not be disappointed of his object by the interference of England, Louis commissioned Barillon to make a new offer to Charles. Danby no longer advised hostilities—he was deterred by the visible reluctance of the confederates and the violence of his political enemies—the duke of York sacrificed his ambition of military glory to his fear that a war would enable the popular party to make new inroads on what he deemed the legitimate authority of the crown;<sup>2</sup> and Charles readily subscribed a secret treaty, by which it was stipulated, that, unless the States signified their formal acceptance of the terms offered at Nimeguen within the space of two months, the English king should withdraw his forces from the continent with the exception of three thousand men, to form the garrison of Ostend, and should receive from Louis in return the sum of six million livres (four hundred and fifty thousand pounds) by four quarterly instalments. Barillon, however, was not forgetful of his engagement with the popular leaders, and therefore made the first payment depend on two important conditions, the prorogation of parliament for

<sup>1</sup> Ibid. 165, 166. Temple, ii. 437. Clar. Corresp. i. 17. Danby's Letters, 254, 338, 341, 358. "The prince said to me alone, that finding the distractions and divisions increase every day in parliament, was that which did most of all discourage him from struggling any longer against the inclinations of this whole country to the peace."—Godolphin to Danby, May 14. Ibid. p. 361.

<sup>2</sup> See his letters to the prince, Dalrymple, ii. 172—175.

CHAP. four months, preparatory to a dissolution, and the  
 V.  
 A.D. 1678. reduction of the English army to the small force of  
 — six thousand men.<sup>1</sup>

May 23. The moment the parliament met, the altercation  
 May 27. between the king and the Commons was revived. The  
 latter proposed in an address to the throne that war  
 May 28. should be declared, or the army be disbanded, without  
 delay. Charles replied that in one case he might be  
 left to fight without allies, and in the other his allies  
 May 30. might be compelled to fight without him. *They* re-  
 solved that all the forces levied during the last seven  
 months "ought to be paid off and disbanded *forth-*  
 June 4. *with,*" and voted the sum of two hundred thousand  
 pounds for that purpose, on the condition that the dis-  
 banding should be effected in the short space of three  
 June 7. weeks. *He* begged to learn whether it was their  
 intention that the English garrisons in the towns of  
 Flanders should be withdrawn before they could be  
 June 13. relieved by Spanish troops; and his opponents,  
 ashamed of their precipitancy, extended the three  
 weeks to sixty days for the regiments serving beyond  
 June 15. the sea, but passed a resolution that after three days  
 no additional motion for a supply should be made  
 June 16. during the session. The king then called them before  
 him, reminded them of the public debt, which had  
 been contracted some years before, and of the antici-  
 pations on the actual revenue, occasioned by his pre-  
 parations for war, and condescended to request, that if  
 they meant him to pursue hostilities with the petty  
 state of Algiers, or to take that part in continental  
 politics which became the dignity of the crown, or to  
 lead the remaining portion of his life in ease and  
 quiet, they would add to his annual income the sum of

<sup>1</sup> Dalrymple, ii. 159—168.



three hundred thousand pounds. But this appeal to their feelings was useless : the house passed contemptuously to the order of the day.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
V.  
A.D. 1678.  
—

In the meanwhile the negotiation between Louis and the States was transferred from the French camp to the congress at Nimeguen. Every question respecting the personal interests of the two parties was speedily and amicably arranged ; a day for the signature of the treaty was appointed ; and an armistice for six weeks allowed time for the Spanish government to signify its acceptance of the terms previously offered by Louis. It chanced, however, that a question put by Doria, the Spanish ambassador, drew from the French commissioners an avowal that, though it was the intention of their master to restore the six towns to Spain, he would continue to hold them as securities for his ally, the king of Sweden, till the emperor should have restored the conquests which he had made from that prince. This declaration put an end to the treaty. The States forbade their commissioners to sign without new instructions ; Charles expressed his conviction that Louis sought only to divide, and by dividing to oppress, the confederates ; and the council unanimously adopted the advice of the duke of York, to enter immediately into the war. The period for disbanding the army was in consequence prolonged ;<sup>2</sup>

June 19.

June 21.

<sup>1</sup> C. Journ. May 27, 28, June 4, 7, 13, 15, 18. Parl. Hist. iv. 977, 983, 986, 994. On the last day a test was proposed for the discovery of such members in that house as had received bribes or any other consideration for their votes, either from the English government, or foreign powers. The popular leaders spoke warmly in its favour, but before the last division took place, about one hundred members slipped out of the house, and the motion was lost by a majority of fourteen.—C. Journ. June 18. Parl. Hist. iv. 1000.

<sup>2</sup> This prolongation revived a question of privilege between the houses. In the bill granting two hundred thousand pounds for the disbanding of the army, the Lords introduced an amendment pro-

CHAP. V. four thousand men, led by the earl of Ossory, joined  
 A.D. 1678. the English regiments in Flanders; another corps of  
 — equal force held itself in readiness to embark under  
 June 27. the command of the duke; and Temple hastened to  
 July 16. the Hague, where, in defiance of French influence, he  
 concluded a treaty stipulating that, unless France  
 should recede from its new pretensions in favour of  
 Sweden within fourteen days, the two powers should  
 unite their forces to compel the acceptance of the  
 proposals formerly made by the king of England, or  
 such other conditions as the success of the confederates  
 might entitle them to demand.<sup>1</sup>

longing the time from three weeks to the end of July, even for the  
 forces in England. The Commons acknowledged the propriety of  
 the delay, but denied the right of the Lords to make any alterations  
 in a money bill, and therefore, rejecting the amendment, substituted  
 a proviso to the same purpose. The Lords rejected the proviso in  
 return; and the Commons passed a resolution that "all aids in  
 "parliament are the sole gift of the Commons; that all bills for that  
 "purpose ought to begin with the Commons; and that it is the un-  
 "doubted and sole right of the Commons to direct, limit, and ap-  
 "point in such bills the ends, considerations, conditions, and quali-  
 "fications of such grants, which ought not to be altered by the  
 "House of Lords."—C. Journ. July 3. This doctrine was, how-  
 ever, denied by the Lords. It was, they replied, founded solely on  
 the act of Henry IV. entitled "Indemnity des Seigneurs et Com-  
 "munes," which took, indeed, from the Lords their former right of  
 originating such bills, but left all other legislative rights as full and  
 free to one house as to the other. The Commons might keep it a  
*resata questio* as long as they pleased; but the Lords would never  
 surrender the exercise of their hereditary privileges. Charles feared  
 that he should lose the bill, and with it the sum of two hundred  
 thousand pounds, no trifling consideration to the indigent monarch;  
 but the Lords left the bill at the conference, and refused to take any  
 further notice of it; and the Commons yielded so far as to intro-  
 duce a new bill, of which the rejected amendment formed a part.  
 In this state it passed both houses.

<sup>1</sup> Temple, ii. 438—443. Jenkins, ii. 389. Dumont, vii. 348.  
 Clarend. Corresp. i—21. Dalrymple, ii. 181—188. Danby, 226,  
 228, 253, 291. It appears to me that the king was sincere in these  
 proceedings, as he must have foreseen, what accordingly happened,  
 that he would forfeit of course the six millions of livres which had  
 been promised to him by Louis.

Though Louis was disconcerted by this display of spirit, so unexpected on the part of the English king, he did not despair of subduing the obstinacy of the States. With this view his commissioners at Nimeguen employed for thirteen days every art which diplomatic finesse could devise. They declared that the resolution of their master was irrevocably taken ; they suggested forms of compromise, the substitution of an equivalent in favour of Sweden, the discussion of the subject at Ghent or St. Quintin in the presence of Louis : but on the fourteenth, when every man looked forward to the renewal of hostilities, they announced their willingness to yield, on condition that the peace were signed before midnight. Van Haren, one of the Dutch commissioners, hesitated, because he had understood that not only the peace with the States, but also that with Spain, was to be signed at the same time ; his scruples, however, were removed by the authority of his colleague Van Beverning, and both in conjunction with Odyck, the third commissioner, subscribed the same evening two treaties, one of peace, and another of commerce, between France and the United Provinces, without any particular stipulation in favour of Spain. The intelligence excited surprise at the Hague ; but it was believed that Beverning acted in pursuance of private instructions from the city of Amsterdam ; and peace was so welcome to almost every class among his countrymen that he had little to fear from the resentment of those who sought a continuance of the war.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Temple, ii. 444—455. Jenkins, ii. 418—420. Dumont, vii. 350. It was proposed that Charles should guarantee the places in question to Sweden. He was even induced to order Temple to go from the Hague to Nimeguen for that purpose. Thus the French party at the Hague was freed from the presence of a man whose

CHAP. V. To this event, so unexpected by the other powers  
 A.D. 1678. of Europe, succeeded another which excited equal  
 — surprise. On the fourth day after the conclusion of  
 peace, the prince of Orange fought the fierce and sanguinary battle of St. Denis. Of the few fortresses which still remained in the possession of the Spaniards, Mons was the first in strength and importance ; but on the east of Mons lay the hostile garrison of Binche, on the west that of St. Guislain ; the country to the south was in the hands of the enemy ; and early in the spring a strong corps, passing the river Haine, had formed an intrenched camp to the north, and intercepted the communication with Brussels. The blockade had already produced a scarcity within the walls ; and in the councils of the confederates it was resolved to make the relief of Mons their first object after the termination of the armistice. With this view the prince, anticipating nothing less than the signature of the treaty, ordered his forces to assemble on the 30th of  
 August 4. July, and on the 4th of August led them against the enemy, who were commanded by the duke of Luxembourg. In the valley in front of their camp the French held two fortified positions, the abbey of St. Denis, and the ruins of a fortress called Casteau : the first after an obstinate struggle was carried by the prince of Orange, the second by the duke of Villa Hermosa ; but the enemy recovered the latter towards the evening, pursued the Spaniards into the plain, and would have cut off the retreat of the Dutch from St.

influence they feared, and with the aid of De Crosse, the Swedish agent, who brought the order, circulated a report that a secret understanding still existed between Charles and Louis. This, it was believed, led to the clandestine mission of Boreel from the city of Amsterdam to Van Beverning.—Temple, ii. 445—449. Dalrymple, ii. 178. Danby, 256, 289.

Denis, had they not been kept at bay by the desperate resistance of the English auxiliaries under the earl of Ossory. During the night the two armies resumed their former positions.<sup>1</sup>

By many this action, in which the lives of five thousand men were sacrificed, has been deemed a foul blot on the character of William.<sup>2</sup> That he was ignorant of the conclusion of peace no man could believe. The proceedings of Nimeguen, which were already known in London,<sup>3</sup> could not be unknown in the neighbourhood of Brussels; and his haste to commence the battle, though a British force of eight thousand men was on its march to his assistance, proved his anxiety to anticipate the arrival, if it had not already taken place, of contrary orders from the States.

But even ignorance in his circumstances could not form a valid excuse; to justify the renewal of hostilities, he ought to have *known* that the French had suffered the term of fourteen days to elapse without accepting the conditions of peace. It is not, however, difficult to discover the motives by which he was actuated. On the one hand, it was of the first importance to Holland that Mons should not fall into the possession of the French, and yet, though the garrison was reduced to extremity by famine, no provision had been made for its relief in the treaty; on the other, a victory obtained over the blockading army would probably prevent the ratification of the peace, and give to William himself the undisputed ascendancy over his political opponents.<sup>4</sup> The attempt was

<sup>1</sup> For this battle see the memoirs of Lord Castlehaven, who held a command in the Spanish army, App. 52—56.

<sup>2</sup> See Louis, iv. 171, 172; James, i. 511.

<sup>3</sup> See the duke of York's letter of Aug. 4, in Dalrymple, ii. 189, and Danby's of Aug. 5, Letters, 293.

<sup>4</sup> Louis, iv. 167. Dalrymple, ii. 189, 190. Danby's Letters, 232.

CHAP. therefore made; and, though he gained no victory,  
 V. the fortress at least was saved. The next morning  
 A.D. 1678. the duke of Luxembourg announced to him the con-  
 August 5. clusion of peace; the armies, after several conferences,  
 August 9. separated, that of the allies retiring towards Nivelles,  
 that of France towards Ath, and the communica-  
 tion between Mons and the capital was once more  
 restored.<sup>1</sup>

In England the duration of the session and the  
 expectation of peace had drawn from parliament  
 several grants of money for the purpose of dis-  
 charging the extraordinary expenses incurred by the  
 preparations for war. A prorogation followed: Charles  
 July 15. found himself at the head of a numerous army, with  
 eight hundred thousand pounds at his command; and  
 he resolved to keep his word to the prince of Orange,  
 and to teach his brother of France the value of his  
 friendship. Fresh bodies of troops were successively  
 sent to Flanders; the Spaniards received assurances of  
 the king's readiness to procure for them the conditions  
 formerly offered at Nimeguen; and the States were  
 summoned, in pursuance of their late treaty, to unite  
 with England for the purpose of compelling the  
 French king to stand to his promise.<sup>2</sup> But it was

"If God bless the prince in this one enterprise of Mons, he will be  
 "greater here than ever his ancestors were."—Temple, in Danby's  
 Letters, 254.

<sup>1</sup> Dumont, vii. 364.

<sup>2</sup> Temple professes himself ignorant why Charles acted with so  
 much vigour on this occasion; but says that he was advised after-  
 wards that the king's object was to please the parliament on account  
 of the discovery which was then made of the "plot." That, how-  
 ever, is impossible. For Hyde was despatched to Holland on the  
 12th of August (Danby, 232. Dalrymple, ii. 190), and it is cer-  
 tain that the first intimation of the plot was given to the king on the  
 following day. From the letters of Danby and the duke of York, it  
 appears that the king could not learn the articles of the treaty signed  
 by the Dutch, but knew that worse terms had been offered to the

too late to kindle again the dying embers of war. CHAP. V. A.D. 1678.  
 His interference, indeed, encouraged the Spaniards to demand more favourable conditions; and it gave so much confidence to the anti-Gallican party in the States, that the prince still cherished a hope of recovering the ascendancy; but Louis knew how to yield when it was for his interest. He had already ratified the peace on his part; his ambassadors were instructed to assume a tone of unusual moderation; they receded from several of their demands; and every subject of dispute with the Spanish ambassadors was referred to the decision of the Dutch. This policy succeeded, and the confederacy was broken. Before the expiration of the six weeks, the Spanish ambassadors reluctantly submitted to the terms dictated by their powerful enemy; in a few months the emperor and the empire followed their example; and an end was put to the war, which had raged for six years from the shores of the Baltic to those of the Mediterranean.<sup>1</sup>  
 That the result, so glorious to Louis, so alarming to the other princes of Europe, was in a great measure owing to the indecisive, vacillating, and contradictory conduct of the English cabinet, cannot be denied. But the blame must not be laid exclusively on the king; it ought to be shared with him by the leaders of the country party. If his poverty, his love of ease, his fear of the opposition in parliament, taught him to shrink from the cares and embarrassments consequent on a declaration of war, *their* desire of popularity, combined with party spirit, perhaps with more mercenary

August 6.

Sept. 1.

Sept. 7.

1679.  
Jan. 26.

Spaniards than before; that he believed Louis did not intend to make a general peace; and that the account of the battle of St. Denis, sent by the prince, taught him to expect a second battle, and a continuation of the war.—Danby's Letters, 232, 233, 256, 296.

<sup>1</sup> Dumont, vii. 352, 363, 376.

CHAP. motives, led them to act in opposition to their profes-  
 A.D. 1679. sions, to urge the king to take part in the quarrel, and  
 — at the same time to prevent him from following their  
 advice by refusing the necessary supplies. In truth  
 the jealousy of the two parties was so deeply rooted,  
 their strength in the House of Commons so nearly  
 balanced, that the powers of government became  
 paralyzed, and the crown of England lost its legitimate  
 influence in the councils of Europe.

From continental politics the reader must now  
 divert his attention to one of the most extraordinary  
 occurrences in our domestic history, the imposture  
 generally known by the appellation of Oates's plot ; an  
 imposture which, brought forward in a time of popular  
 discontent, and supported by the arts and declama-  
 tions of a numerous party, goaded the passions of  
 men to a state of madness, and seemed for a while to  
 extinguish the native good sense and humanity of the  
 English character.

Its author and hero was Titus Oates, *alias* Ambrose,  
 the son of a ribbon-weaver, who, exchanging the loom  
 for the bible, distinguished himself as an Anabaptist  
 minister during the government of Cromwell, and  
 became an orthodox clergyman on the restoration of  
 the ancient dynasty. Titus was sent to Cambridge,  
 took orders, and officiated as curate in several parishes,  
 and as chaplain on board a man-of-war ; but all these  
 situations he successively forfeited in consequence of  
 his misconduct, of reports attributing to him unnatural  
 propensities, and of the odium incurred by two mali-  
 cious prosecutions, in each of which his testimony  
 upon oath was disproved to the satisfaction of the jury.  
 Houseless and penniless, Oates applied for relief to  
 the compassion of Dr. Tonge, rector of St. Michael's



in Wood-street, a man in whom weakness and credulity were combined with a disposition singularly mischievous and astute. Tonge had proclaimed himself an alarmist; his imagination was haunted with visions of plots and conspiracies; and he deemed it a duty to warn his countrymen by quarterly publications against the pernicious designs of the Jesuits.<sup>1</sup> In Oates he found an apt instrument for his purpose; and as the example of Luzancy held out a powerful invitation to informers against the Catholics, it was arranged between them that the indigent clergyman should feign himself a convert to the Catholic faith, and under that cover should seek to worm himself into the more secret councils of his instructors. He was reconciled by a priest of the name of Berry,<sup>2</sup> who obtained for the neophyte a place in the college under the administration of the English Jesuits at Valladolid in Spain. But the habits of Oates accorded not with the discipline of a college, and after a trial of five months, he was disgracefully expelled. By the advice of Tonge he made a second application; his tears and promises subdued the reluctance of the "provincial;" and the repentant sinner was received into the college at St. Omer. But Oates was still unable to govern his unruly disposition: again he suffered his real character to pierce the flimsy cover which his hypocrisy had thrown over it; and his petition to be admitted into the novitiate was answered by a peremptory order for his

CHAP.  
V.  
A.D. 1679.

1677.  
June.

Oct. 30.

Dec. 10.

<sup>1</sup> "As all a man of my rank could do, I resolved to oppose yearly "and quarterly, if possible, some small treatises in print to alarm "and awaken his majesty and these houses."—Tonge's information to the House of Commons, in L'Estrange, Brief History, ii. 53.

<sup>2</sup> Berry, *alias* Hutchinson, was first a clergyman of the Established Church, then a Jesuit, next a secular priest, afterwards a Protestant and curate of Berking, and last of all, a second time a Catholic. It was generally understood that he was deranged.

CHAP. V. expulsion. From St. Omer he repaired a second time  
 A.D. 1678. to his patron ; but the information which he had been  
 —  
 June 23. able to glean from the reports current among his  
 fellow-students was scanty and uncertain ; and the  
 only thing of seeming importance which he could  
 communicate was the bare fact that several Jesuits  
 had, in the month of April, held a private meeting  
 in London. On this foundation, however, frail and  
 slender as it was, the two projectors contrived to build  
 a huge superstructure of malice and fiction. The  
 meeting was in reality the usual triennial congregation  
 of the order : *they* represented it as an extraordinary  
 consult for a particular purpose : it was composed of  
 the provincial and the thirty-nine eldest members :  
*they* introduced into it almost every Jesuit with whose  
 name Oates was acquainted : it had been held with  
 much secrecy, but imprudently enough, in the duke  
 of York's palace at St. James's ;<sup>1</sup> *they* fixed it at an  
 inn in the Strand, the former inmates of which were  
 no longer to be discovered : it had for its object the  
 nomination of the treasurer, and the arrangement of  
 the internal concerns of the society : *they* described  
 it as a consultation on the most eligible means of  
 assassinating the king, and of subverting by force the  
 Protestant religion. In support of this fable they  
 subsequently invented an immense mass of confir-  
 matory evidence, detailing the conveyance of trea-  
 sonable letters, the subscription of moneys, the distri-  
 bution of offices, and the preparation of a military  
 force ; and when the narrative (so it was afterwards  
 termed) had assumed the proper shape, it was  
 written in Greek characters by Oates, then copied  
 in English characters by Tonge, and lastly commu-

August 1.

<sup>1</sup> Reresby, 195.

nicated under a promise of secrecy to one Kirkby, CHAP. V. who, having been occasionally employed in the royal A.D. 1678. laboratory, was personally known to the king.<sup>1</sup>

On the 13th of August, at the moment when August 13. Charles was preparing to walk in the park, Kirkby stepped forward, and in an undertone begged him not to separate from the company, because his life was in danger. The alarming intelligence made no sensible alteration in the royal manner; but it led to a private interview in the evening, when Tonge attended with a copy of "the narrative," divided into forty-three articles, and was immediately referred by the king to August 14. the lord-treasurer; to whose inquiries the informer replied that the original narrative had been thrust under the door of his chamber; that he knew not the author, but was possessed of a clue, which might lead to the discovery; and that he would endeavour to learn the residence of Pickering and honest William, who had undertaken to assassinate the king, or would point out their persons when they were walking, according to their custom, in the park. The coldness with which the discovery was received goaded the projectors to new exertions; additional articles were sent August 17. in; the days when the assassins might be apprehended at Windsor were named; and excuses, to account for August 20. their non-appearance, were successively framed. By this time Charles had become incredulous; he laughed August 23. at the simplicity of Danby; and when that minister

<sup>1</sup> L'Estrange, Brief History, ii. 81, 91, 101, 102. The Shamm'r Shamm'd, p. 8. Preface to Tonge's Royal Martyr. Castlemaine's Apology, 57, 63. "Vindication of the English Catholiks from the pretended conspiracy against the life & government of his sacred majesty, discovering the cheife lyes and contradictions contained in the narrative of Titus Oates, M.DC.LXXX." with an Appendix of twenty attestations or affidavits; and Florus Anglo-Bavaricus, Leodii, 1685, p. 93, 200.

CHAP. solicited permission to lay the narrative before the  
 V.  
 A.D. 1678. privy council, hastily exclaimed, "No, not even before  
 — "my brother! It would only create alarm, and may  
 "perhaps put the design of murdering me into the  
 "head of some individual who otherwise would never  
 "have entertained such a thought."<sup>1</sup>

Danby had insisted on the inspection of some of the numerous papers mentioned in the information. After repeated evasions, he was told that a packet, containing treasonable letters, would on a certain day arrive at the post-office, addressed to Bedingfield, the confessor to the duke of York. To intercept it, the lord-treasurer hastened to Windsor, but found the letters already in possession of the king; for Bedingfield had previously received them, and, under the persuasion that they were forgeries, had delivered them to the duke. A rigorous examination took place. One was evidently written by the same person who had penned the information presented to the king by Tonge: the similarity of the other four, though in a feigned hand, plainly showed that they must have been the work of one individual. In addition, they all presented the same absence of punctuation, the same peculiarities of spelling and language, and the same ignorance of the real names of the supposed writers and their friends, though they purported to come from five different persons of good education, writing some from London, and others from St. Omer. It was impossible to doubt of the imposture, or of the office in which the letters had been forged.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Brief Hist. 104. Echard, 947. Vindication, 20. Kirkby's "Compleat and True Narrative," with Danby's impartial state of his case, and his plea in the Journals of the House of Lords, xiii. 538.

<sup>2</sup> See the Letters in L'Estrange (Observator, ii. 150, 151, 152,

Soon after the transmission of these letters, Oates and Tonge, under the pretence of concealment and security, repaired to the lodgings of Kirkby at Vauxhall. That dupe repeatedly attended at court, and presented himself before the king; but Charles, who had already formed his opinion of the plot, invariably passed him by without notice. It was not, however, the intention of the projectors to suffer the discovery to be buried in silence. Distrusting the intention of the council, Oates made affidavit to the truth, first of the original narrative of forty-three, and then to the improved edition of eighty-one articles, in the presence of Sir Edmondbury Godfrey. That magistrate, surprised to discover in the list of conspirators the name of his friend Coleman, revealed the secret to him, and Coleman immediately communicated it to the duke of York.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.

V.

A.D. 1678.

Sept. 2.

Sept. 6.

Sept. 27.

James had already persuaded himself that this pre-

153, and Brief Hist. ii. 7); also James (Memoirs), i. 517—519. The fraud was so manifest, that the crown lawyers thought it proper to suppress the letters at the trials which followed. On October 16th, the letters, together with the other documents, were laid before Sir William Jones, the attorney-general, with an order for him to make “a state of the evidence.” His remark on the letters is singular. “If they can be so proved as to be believed to be the hands of the several persons by whom they are said to be written, they do fully make out the guilt of the writers, and do much confirm all the rest that hath been deposed by Mr. Otes . . . but against the truth of the said letters there are many objections, some from the prisoners, others from the letters themselves, and the way of their coming to light: the particulars thereof, as they are many, and some resulting from the inspection of the letters themselves, so I doubt not but the same are fully remembered by your majesty.”—Brief Hist. ii. 5, 6. Yet the man who came to this lame and impotent conclusion, not only did not allow the prisoners the benefit of such objections, but repeatedly asserted to the court that, whoever doubted of the existence of the plot, must be an enemy to the king, and the religion of his country!

<sup>1</sup> Kirkby's “Compleat and True Narrative,” Sept. 2, 5, 7, 8, 9, 27.

CHAP. tended plot, if not originally devised, would subse-  
 V.  
 A.D. 1678. quently be employed for the purpose of excluding him  
 — from the succession; and on that account had repeatedly conjured his brother to bring the informer before the council, and to institute a strict inquiry into the truth or falsehood of his testimony. Hitherto Charles, through his love of ease, and apprehension of the consequences, had refused his consent; and (which seemed more surprising) Danby himself concurred in praising the resolution of the sovereign. But the duke entertained no doubt that the real object of the treasurer was to suppress all knowledge of the plot till the meeting of parliament, and then to call for an inquiry into its existence, that he might divert the attention of the two houses from the impeachment which was still hanging over his head. The affidavits of Oates confirmed his suspicions: he renewed his arguments and entreaties, and Charles with much reluctance ordered Tonge to produce the former before the privy council.

At the appointed hour Oates appeared in a clerical gown and a new suit of clothes procured for the occasion. The assurance with which he delivered his narrative imposed on many of his hearers. He stated—  
 Sept. 28. 1. That the order of the Jesuits had undertaken to re-establish the Catholic religion in the British dominions by rebellion and bloodshed; 2. That their plan of operation comprised Ireland, where some of them were employed in organizing an insurrection and massacre; Scotland, where others, under the disguise of Cameronian ministers, opposed the establishment of episcopacy; Holland, where a third party sought to raise the adherents of France against the prince of Orange; and England, where a fourth was plotting the assassination

of the king, and not of the king only, but also of his brother, if the duke should prove unwilling to join in the attempt: 3. That they were in no want of pecuniary resources; for they had one hundred thousand pounds in bank, were in the yearly receipt of sixty thousand pounds in rents, and had obtained from Leshee (La Chaise), the confessor to the French king, a donation of ten thousand pounds, and from De Corduba, the provincial of New Castile, the promise of an equal sum towards the accomplishment of this holy undertaking: 4. That in March last a man named honest William, and Pickering, a lay brother, were repeatedly commissioned to shoot the king at Windsor; and that, the failure being attributed to negligence, the first had received a severe reprimand, the second twenty lashes on the bare back: 5. That on the 24th of April a grand consult of Jesuits from all parts met at the White Horse tavern in the Strand to determine on the most eligible method of taking the king's life; that three sets of assassins were provided, the two persons already mentioned, two Benedictine monks, Coniers and Anderton, and four Irishmen of unknown names, procured and instructed by Fogarty; and that in addition, the reward of ten thousand pounds, and subsequently of fifteen thousand pounds, had been offered to Wakeman, the queen's physician, if he would poison the king. Of Wakeman's answer he was indeed ignorant; but had heard that he gave his assent, and had frequently seen him since that period in the company of Jesuits: 6. That he had arrived at the knowledge of the conspiracy by the following contrivance. His feigned conversion had so far won for him the confidence of the superiors of the order, that they sent him in the first place with letters to the

CHAP.  
V.  
A.D. 1678.

CHAP. Jesuits at Valladolid, which letters he had the curio-  
 A.D. 1678. sity to open and peruse at Burgos. From Valladolid  
 — he proceeded on a similar mission to Madrid, returned  
 thence through Valladolid to England, was sent back  
 to St. Omer, accompanied the fathers from St. Omer  
 to the grand consult, went with them again to St.  
 Omer, and returned with new instructions to England :  
 on all which occasions, so great was the trust reposed  
 in his faith and honesty, that the contents of the papers  
 which he carried were communicated to him by his  
 employers : 7. That since his return he had learned  
 that the Jesuits were the projectors of the fire of  
 London in 1666, and had spent seven hundred fire-  
 balls in nourishing the conflagration ; but, to indemnify  
 themselves, had carried off one thousand carats of dia-  
 monds, and made a clear profit of fourteen thousand  
 pounds ; that this success had encouraged them to set  
 fire to Southwark in 1676, by which they had gained  
 two thousand pounds above their expenses, and that  
 they had now under consideration a plan for the burn-  
 ing of Westminster, Wapping, and the ships in the  
 river : 8. That the pope by a very recent bull had  
 already appointed certain individuals, whom he named,  
 to all the bishoprics and dignities in the church of  
 England, under the persuasion that by the murder of  
 the king the Catholic religion would rise to its former  
 ascendancy : and lastly, that he had already made oath  
 to the truth of this information “in the whole and  
 “every particular thereof” before Sir Edmondbury  
 Godfrey.<sup>1</sup>

While Oates was reading this long and alarming  
 narrative, the members of the council gazed in aston-

<sup>1</sup> True Narrative of the Horrid Plot and Conspiracy, &c. Lon-  
 don, 1679. L. Journ. xiii. 313. State Trials, vi. 1434.



ishment on each other. The facts which it detailed appeared so incredible, the means by which they had come to the knowledge of the informer were so devoid of probability, and the character which he gave of himself exhibited such traits of baseness and dishonesty, that his hearers were bewildered and amazed. The duke of York hesitated not to pronounce it a most impudent imposture; but others contended that no man in his senses would come forward with a tale so startling and portentous, unless he could support it by proof; that, although it were embellished by fiction, it might have a foundation in reality; and that it was the duty of the royal advisers, in a matter of such concernment, to sift out the truth from the falsehood with which it had been mixed and confounded. Oates was asked to produce documentary evidence in confirmation of his testimony. He had been trusted with a multitude of treasonable letters at different times: his only object was to detect and defeat the conspiracy: undoubtedly then he must have secured some of these papers as evidence against the traitors. He confessed, however, that he stood there without a single document; but promised to produce evidence in abundance if he might be furnished with warrants and officers to arrest the persons, and seize the papers of the individuals whom he accused. To this proposal the council gave its assent.

The next morning the inquiry was resumed in presence of the king. To the objections urged against the authenticity of the Windsor letters, Oates ingeniously replied, that such was the practice of the Jesuits; they wrote in feigned hands, and with orthographical errors. Their accomplices were acquainted with the artifice, and it supplied the writers with a

CHAP.  
V.  
A.D. 1678  
—

Sept. 29

CHAP. V. pretence of forgery, if the letters were intercepted or  
 A.D. 1678. discovered. Charles desired that he might be told to  
 — describe Don Juan, to whom, according to his narrative, he had been introduced at Madrid; and Oates without hesitation replied, that he was a tall, spare, and swarthy man. The king turned to his brother, and smiled; for both knew from personal acquaintance that Don Juan was low of stature and fair of complexion. "And where," said Charles, "did you see "La Chaise pay down the ten thousand pounds?" He replied with equal readiness, in the house of the Jesuits close to the Louvre. "Man," exclaimed the monarch, provoked at his effrontery, "the Jesuits have "no house within a mile of the Louvre!"<sup>1</sup>

The credit of the informer was now gone, unless he could support it by the discoveries to be made from the papers which he had seized. Much was expected from those of Harcourt, the provincial of the Jesuits. They consisted of a cipher, of an immense collection of letters, of books of account, and of the acts of the very congregation which Oates had denounced; but among them no trace of the plot could be discovered; not so much as a passage to which the ingenuity of the lawyers could give the semblance of an allusion to the treason in question. Fortunately for the in-

<sup>1</sup> James (Memoirs), i. 520. Macpher. i. 87. "The king told "me that he took it to be some artifice, and that he did not believe "one word of the whole story."—Reresby, 67. Where the compiler of the Memoirs of James refers to the writings of that monarch, I shall, as I have done above, add the word (Memoirs), because such passages are of higher authority than the other parts of that work.

<sup>2</sup> Florus Anglo-Bavaricus, p. 100. Two of the letters were, however, selected, and are to be found in the Journals of the House of Commons (Nov. 2). In one occurs the word "design," in the other "patents." It was explained (and the explanation is confirmed by the context), that the first referred to the design of holding the congregation, the other to the patents of appointment to offices in the order.

former, it was otherwise with the papers of Coleman, the son of a clergyman in Suffolk, who had embraced the Catholic faith, and was appointed secretary to the duchess of York. The man was vain of his abilities, expensive in his habits, and solicitous to acquire the reputation of a person of consequence. To extricate himself from his pecuniary embarrassments, he sought to procure money from Louis XIV., in 1675, by offering his services in favour of the Catholic religion to Father La Chaise, the confessor of that monarch; and in 1667, by another offer to Father St. Germain to prevent a rupture between the two crowns, which he represented as a natural consequence of the marriage of the Princess Mary. In both these attempts he failed; but he was more successful with the bankers, whose money had been shut up in the exchequer, from whom he drew three thousand five hundred pounds under pretence of procuring for them some parliamentary security; with three successive ambassadors from France, whom he supplied at a stipulated price with daily information of the proceedings in parliament; and in particular during the last session with Barillon, from whom he procured two thousand five hundred pounds for the purpose of strengthening the French interest in the two houses. Though James frequently reprimanded him for his busy intriguing disposition, he persisted in his course; his table was frequented by many of the Whig members while the parliament was sitting; and "the fanatics" at a distance received from him weekly "news-letters," reflecting so severely on the ambition of Louis, and the measures of the English government, that Charles ordered the duke to dismiss him from the service of the duchess. Luzancy had for-

CHAP.  
V.  
A.D. 1678.

CHAP. V. merly accused him before the council ; but he faced  
 A.D. 1678. and silenced the informer ; and it was perhaps this  
 — success which induced him also to despise the deposition of Oates. But on the seizure of his papers he asked the advice of the duke of York, who replied, that if he had written anything illegal, or even suspicious, he had better conceal himself ; otherwise, his spontaneous appearance before the council would be taken as a proof of his innocence. He chose the latter, and became the first victim sacrificed to the perjuries of the informer and the prejudices of the nation.<sup>1</sup>

The fact was that, among several loose papers in a neglected drawer, had been found copies of Coleman's foreign correspondence in the years 1675 and 1676. There was in it much to prove the restless and intriguing spirit of the man ; but that which chiefly attracted the notice of the council was a proposal from him to La Chaise that Louis should furnish Coleman and his friends with the sum of twenty thousand pounds, to be employed by them for certain purposes equally conducive to the interest of France and of the Catholic church. There was indeed no visible connection between this proposal and the plot brought forward by Oates ; for the purposes specified in the letter were the restoration of the duke to his place of lord high admiral, and the establishment of liberty of conscience. But this was accompanied with expressions calculated to awaken suspicion. "Success," he maintained, "would give the greatest blow to the Protestant religion that it had received since its birth."

<sup>1</sup> For this account of Coleman, see James (*Memoirs*), i. 533 ; C. Journ. 1678, Oct. 31, Nov. 7 ; Dalrymple, ii. 199, 201, 314 ; Macpher. i. 82 ; Brief Hist. i. 144 ; Burnet, ii. 94.

. . . "They had a mighty work on their hands, no  
 "less than the conversion of three kingdoms, and by  
 "that perhaps the utter subduing of a pestilent heresy,  
 "which had so long domineered over great part of the  
 "northern world." To a cool and dispassionate in-  
 quirer, acquainted with the state of parties at the  
 time, this language would have appeared a mere  
 rhetorical flourish, employed by the intriguer to in-  
 terest in favour of his project the zeal of the old  
 priest whom he addressed ; but jealousy had been  
 provoked by the disclosures of Oates ; more, it was  
 suspected, might lurk under the words than imme-  
 diately struck the eye ; the great work mentioned by  
 Coleman might be the commencement of the con-  
 spiracy which had been denounced ; the two ends of  
 the chain were already in sight, and it was possible  
 that the discovery of more of the correspondence  
 might supply the links by which they were connected.  
 Under this impression Coleman was committed to  
 prison, where he found for his companions in captivity  
 most of the individuals named in the deposition of the  
 informer.<sup>1</sup>

It was obviously the interest of the king to bring  
 the inquiry to a speedy termination, that of his minis-  
 ter to protract it till the meeting of parliament ; be-  
 cause, if it were then pending, it would infallibly be  
 taken up by the country party. Charles foresaw that  
 they would employ it as an additional weapon of  
 offence against his brother, while Danby hoped to  
 convert it into a shield of defence for himself against  
 the impeachment with which he was threatened. At  
 the beginning of October, when the king was ac-  
 customed to spend a fortnight at Newmarket, the

<sup>1</sup> C. Journ. Oct. 31.

CHAP. dukes of York and Lauderdale conjured him to re-  
 V. main at Whitehall, and to prefer his duty to his  
 A.D. 1678. pleasures; but the opposite advice of the lord treasurer  
 —  
 Oct. 2. was most palatable to the indolent monarch; and he  
 departed with the court to Newmarket, leaving strict  
 orders with Danby to prosecute the investigation with  
 the utmost expedition—orders which that minister  
 was careful to disobey.<sup>1</sup>

Hitherto nothing had transpired to connect the informers with any party in the state; but subsequent events induced many to look upon them as mere puppets, whose motions were regulated by the invisible hand of some master artist. That artist was supposed to be the earl of Shaftesbury; of whom, whether he were or were not the real parent of the imposture, this at least is certain, that he took it under his protection from its birth, and nursed it with solicitude till it arrived at maturity. In conjunction with his political associates, he watched the progress of the alarm excited by the frequent meetings of the council, and the numerous arrests of the supposed conspirators; converted with consummate art every succeeding event into a confirmation of the plot, and gradually contrived, by inflaming the passions, to assume the most extraordinary control over the judgment, of the people.

It chanced that, during the absence of the court, Godfrey, before whom Oates had made his affidavit,

<sup>1</sup> James (Memoirs), i. 545, 546. Temple, ii. 478. "He fancied by the helpe of his pretended conspiracie, and crying out against popery, he should pass for a pillar of the church, and ward the blow which he foresaw was falling on his shoulders; but my Lord Shaftesbury, who soon found out his drift, sayd, let the treasurer cry as lowd as he pleases against popery, and think to put himself at the head of the plot, I will cry a note lowder, and soone take his place; which he failed not to make good."—James (Memoirs), i. 546.

was missing from his family. From his father, who died by his own hands, Godfrey had inherited a melancholy temperament; and after the apprehension of his friend Coleman, was observed to labour under great depression of spirits. On the 12th of October, having settled his accounts, and burnt a large mass of papers, he left his home at an early hour, and was met in different parts of the town during the day, walking with a hurried pace, and apparently inattentive to all that was passing around him.<sup>1</sup> That very evening it was rumoured that he had been murdered by the papists; and five days later his dead body was discovered among some stunted bushes in a dry ditch on Primrose Hill. It rested on the knees, breast, and left side of the face; a short sword had been thrust with such violence through the heart, that the point protruded a few inches beyond the back; his cane was fixed upright on the bank, his gloves lay near it on the grass, and his rings remained on his fingers, his money in his purse. The extraction of the sword was followed by a copious discharge of blood from the wound; and, when the body was undressed, a deep purple crease appeared round the neck.<sup>2</sup> In these circumstances the question to be determined was, whether Godfrey had fallen by his own hand, in which case the tightness of the collar would satisfactorily account for the discoloration of the neck, or had been first strangled, and afterwards stabbed by the murderers, to induce a belief that he was the author of his own death. After an inquiry of two days before the coroner, the latter opinion was adopted by the jury, but chiefly on the authority of two sur-

CHAP.  
V.  
A.D. 1678.

Oct. 12.

Oct. 17.

Oct. 19.

<sup>1</sup> See the affidavits in Brief History, iii. 176—183, 299—310.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. 97—99, 212, 226, 264—271. Compare these with State Trials, vii. 184.

CHAP. V. geons, whose testimony betrays their profound ignorance of the phenomena consequent on sudden and violent death. Even at the time, the verdict was deemed so unsatisfactory, that other medical practitioners solicited permission to open the body; but to this the brothers of the deceased made the most determined opposition. They were aware that a return of *felo de se* would deprive them of the succession to his estate, and on that account had laboured during the whole investigation to impress a contrary persuasion on the minds of the jurors.<sup>1</sup>

The result of the inquest imparted the stamp of authority to the reports previously in circulation. It was no longer safe to deny that Godfrey had been murdered, and murdered by the papists. He had indeed always shown himself their steadfast friend, and had recently given to the accused the first notice of their danger. But the absence of any sufficient motive for the crime was considered of little moment; and no man ventured to argue the question, when the least intimation of dissent was taken as a proof of conscious guilt. The body, instead of being speedily deposited in the grave, was carried in public procession to the former habitation of the deceased; the doors were thrown open during two days; and the populace were invited to gaze on the mangled remains of the Protestant martyr. The sight inflamed their passions, and prepared their minds to believe in the bloody designs attributed to the papists; individual murders, a general massacre, the burning of the city, and the blowing up of Whitehall, were hourly expected; and the precautions employed by the magistrates, the multiplication of the guards, the frequent consultations at the Guild-

<sup>1</sup> Brief History, 235—237, 242—250, 257.



hall, served to nourish the excitement and delusion.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
V.  
A.D. 1678  
—  
Oct. 21.

It was at this moment, when the public phrensy had reached its height, that Charles met his parliament after the prorogation. The presence of his forces in Flanders had procured for Spain more favourable conditions, but had entailed at the same time an enormous expense on the English government. The supply so lately voted was exhausted ; the ordinary revenue of the next year had been already anticipated ; and it was become equally impracticable without additional pecuniary aid to disband the army or to keep it on foot. This was the chief subject which the king in his speech sought to impress on the attention of the two houses. To the plot he made only an incidental allusion, stating it to be his intention to leave the guilt or innocence of the accused to the investigation of the ordinary courts of law. Such, however, was not the plan either of the popular leaders, or of his own minister. Under their guidance both houses, forgetting the king's recommendation, listened with astonishment to the narratives of Oates and Tonge ; and, as if their own existence, that of the sovereign, and of the nation were at stake, they placed guards in the cellars under the house of parliament, extorted from Charles a proclamation that all Catholics, not householders, should quit London, prevailed on him to remove a Scottish regiment to the distance of forty miles from the capital, petitioned for the dismissal of every papist from his domestic service, conjured him to be careful that his meals were prepared by none but orthodox cooks, and appointed committees to pursue the pretended conspiracy through all its secret and numerous rami-

<sup>1</sup> Burnet, ii. 154.

CHAP. V. fications.<sup>1</sup> By these proceedings the inquiry was taken  
 A.D. 1678. out of the hands of the government, and in a great measure transferred to those of Shaftesbury and a committee appointed by the lords. Shaftesbury was always at his post, receiving informations, granting warrants for searches and arrests, examining and committing prisoners, and issuing instructions to the officers, informers, and jailers. But his zeal proved too industrious to escape suspicion. By many he was said to be actuated by a very questionable motive, the desire, not of discovering the truth, but of establishing the credit, of the plot. The popular delirium had given to his party an ascendancy in the two houses, which they could not otherwise have acquired ; and, that he might keep this alive, and direct it in accordance with his own views, he cared little to what perjuries he might give occasion, or what blood he might cause to be shed.

Oct. 23. Oates, at his examination before the Commons, made a most important addition to his previous testimony. He informed the house that Oliva, general of the Jesuits, had, by authority from the pope, already appointed to all the great offices of state, and to the chief commands in the army, both in England and Ireland ; that many of the patents of appointment had been seen by him, or passed through his hands ; that the office of lord chancellor had been conferred on Lord Arundell, of lord treasurer on the earl of Powis, of commander-in-chief on Lord Belasyse, of lieutenant-general on Lord Petre, of lord privy seal on Sir William Godolphin, of secretary of state on Coleman, of major-general on Sir Francis Radcliffe, and of adjutant-general on Lambert, who had formerly distinguished

<sup>1</sup> L. Journ. 297, 301, 303—309, 312, 331, 335, 354. C. Journ. Oct. 23—26, 28, 30, Nov. 1, 2.

himself in the service of the commonwealth. These constituted the new government for England. In Ireland the chancellorship was given to Peter Talbot, the chief command of the forces to Richard Talbot, the rank of lieutenant-general to the Viscount Mountgarret, and the inferior offices were parcelled out among their friends and dependants. In this selection there was much to shake the confidence of those who possessed any knowledge of the parties, because several of the latter, from age, or infirmity, or character, were incapable of executing the different employments to which they had been appointed. But such objections weighed not with the Commons; they sent for the lord chief justice, and instructed him to issue warrants for the apprehension of all the individuals named in the information. In other circumstances the Lords would have interfered in defence of their privileges: now, every minor consideration was sacrificed to the safety of the state; and the earl of Powis, the Viscount Stafford, the lords Petre, Arundell, and Belasyse were committed to the Tower.<sup>1</sup>

The first bill introduced in the House of Commons was the favourite measure of the popular party, the test for the exclusion of all Catholics, and consequently of the duke of York, both from parliament and from the presence of the sovereign. It proposed to enact, 1. That no person should presume to sit or vote in either house of parliament, or name a proxy to vote

<sup>1</sup> L. Journ. 299, 308, 309, 311, 327. C. Journ. Oct. 23—25, 28. The next day Oates accused the earl of Castlemaine, that having obtained a divorce from his wife on account of adultery with the king, he was now a Jesuit in priest's orders, and had, in the hearing of Oates, wished success to the plot that he might gratify his revenge. Castlemaine was sent to the Tower, but acquitted on his trial. See his Manifesto, 7, 10, 46.

CHAP. for him in the House of Lords, unless he had pre-  
 A.D. 1678. viously, in presence of the house, taken the oaths

— of allegiance and supremacy, and subscribed the declaration that the worship of the church of Rome is idolatrous, under the penalty of a fine of five hundred pounds, and of disability to sue in any court of law or equity, to receive any legacy or deed of gift, or to act in any manner as guardian, executor, or administrator.

2. That every unqualified peer and commoner and popish recusant, coming into the house or presence of the king, should be liable to the same penalty, unless in the next term he should take the same oaths, and subscribe the same declaration in the court of Chancery. In former sessions this bill had repeatedly miscarried; but now, under the auspices of Titus Oates, it could not fail of success. Day after day that informer was called in to inflame the passions of the members by new disclosures; every speaker sought to give proof of his loyalty and orthodoxy by the display of hostility to the papists; and the bill passed through the house without opposition, when opposition could lead only to the forfeiture of character, perhaps of liberty and life.<sup>1</sup>

Oct. 28.

The moment the test was transmitted to the Lords, care was taken to add new fuel to the flame by the communication to the house of Coleman's letters. The offensive expressions and the objectionable aims of that busy intriguer were taken for those of the whole

<sup>1</sup> C. Journ. Oct. 23—26, 28. It is remarkable that this bill omitted the obligation of receiving the sacrament in the Established Church, which in former bills had been required as a qualification for taking office. The reason is evident. It would have removed the dissenters from parliament, and without the aid of the dissenters the country party had no prospect of accomplishing their purpose.

body to which he had joined himself; and his constant use of the duke's name provoked a general belief that he had acted by the instructions, or at least with the connivance, of that prince. James, indeed, positively denied, and commissioned his friends to deny by his authority, all connection between him and Coleman; and Coleman himself at his examination faintly acquitted the duke; but the conduct of each was attributed to the necessity of his situation, and both houses voted a resolution that "there had been and still was  
 "a damnable and hellish plot contrived and carried on  
 "by the popish recusants for the assassinating and  
 "murdering the king, and for subverting the government and rooting out and destroying the Protestant  
 "religion."<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.

V.  
A.D. 1678

Oct. 31.

To add to the impression made by the publication of this vote, it was accompanied with the funeral of the first supposed victim of the conspiracy. Godfrey perished on the 12th of October: on the 31st his corpse was borne in procession to the grave. As it passed from Bridewell to St. Martin's-in-the-fields, it was preceded by seventy-two clergymen in their gowns, and followed by more than a thousand gentlemen in mourning, many of them members of parliament. In the pulpit appeared Dr. Lloyd, the rector of the parish, between two men of powerful limbs and determined aspect, habited as clergymen, and stationed for his protection against the designs of the papists. He took for his text the passage, "As  
 "a man falleth before the wicked, so fellest thou;"  
 —and undertook to prove that Godfrey had been the victim of his attachment to Protestantism, and must have been murdered on that account by its

<sup>1</sup> C. Journ. Oct. 28, 30, 31. L. Journ. xiii. 333. Reresby, 67.

CHAP. V. enemies. From this mournful but exciting spectacle  
A.D. 1678. the crowd returned to their homes, breathing vengeance against the assassins, and extolling Oates as "the saviour of his country;" his fictions, absurd and incredible as they must appear to the thinking reader, were received without hesitation; and men of every class suffered themselves to be agitated with the apprehension of dangers, the more alarming to the imagination, because they were wrapt in mystery, and expected from unknown and invisible foes.<sup>1</sup>

Neither was the panic thus created local or momentary. The measures adopted by the government, in consequence of the addresses of parliament, served to give to it both diffusion and duration. In a short time the prisons in the metropolis contained two thousand suspected traitors; the houses of the Catholics (even that of the earl marshal could not obtain exemption) had been searched for arms; and all papists who refused the oaths of allegiance and supremacy, amounting almost to thirty thousand individuals, were compelled to withdraw ten miles from Whitehall. For the security of the capital, posts were fixed in the streets, that chains might be thrown across on the first alarm: the military, the trained bands, the volunteers, to the number of forty or fifty thousand, were occasionally kept all night under arms; strong detachments occupied the most eligible posts; numerous patrols paraded the streets; the guards were doubled at the palace; batteries of field pieces were planted for its protection; and the great gates were kept constantly closed, so that admission could be obtained only through the wicket. From the metropolis the alarm spread into the remotest parts of the

<sup>1</sup> Echard, 950. North, 204. Reresby, 67, 68.

country: the order for disarming the Catholics was CHAP. V. universally enforced; lists, containing their names, A.D. 1678. ages, and occupations, were delivered by the officers of each parish to the magistrates, and all were compelled either to take the oaths, or to give security for their good behaviour. Precautions so general and extraordinary were sufficient to conjure up terror in every breast: Charles alone preserved his tranquillity in the midst of excitement: he hesitated not to declare in every company his disbelief of the plot, and to lament that his subjects should suffer themselves to be made the dupes of a bold and brazened impostor.<sup>1</sup>

Encouraged by the state of the public mind, the popular leaders determined to throw off the mask, and to commence a direct attack on the duke of York. An address to exclude him from the presence and the councils of the sovereign was moved by Lord Shaftesbury in the House of Lords, by Lord Russell in the House of Commons. It was not that they charged him with any participation in the plot: from that ground they had already been driven by Oates, who had declared at the bar of the House of Lords that he believed the duke to be entirely ignorant of the design; and, when he was ordered to denounce every individual cognizant of the conspiracy, whatever the rank or station of that individual might be, had replied upon oath, "That he could name no other person than those whom he had named already."<sup>2</sup> The charge of treason was therefore abandoned; but they relied on the prejudice excited

Nov. 2.

Nov. 4.

<sup>1</sup> See "Les Conspirations d'Angleterre, à Cologne, 1680," p. 338, et seq. The account in that work is written by a foreigner, who resided in London, and appears to have kept a diary. Also Florus Anglo-Bavaricus, 115, 118; and Reresby, 67, 72.

<sup>2</sup> L. Journ. 309, 311, 389.

CHAP. against him by the publication of the letters of  
 A.D. 1678. Coleman, and contended that his presence at court  
 — encouraged the papists to persevere, and proved an  
 obstacle to the adoption of those measures which  
 were requisite for the security of the Protestant  
 worship. Charles openly expressed his indignation at  
 this motion, and ordered his friends to oppose it with  
 all their influence. In the House of Lords their  
 efforts were successful; in the Commons the debate  
 was adjourned, resumed, and again adjourned. But  
 the pertinacity of the party subdued the resolution of  
 the monarch; he sought to escape from the contest;  
 he advised his brother to submit to a compromise, and  
 to withdraw from the council while he remained at  
 court: such a concession would mollify his enemies,  
 and aid his friends in the support of his undoubted  
 rights. It cost James a violent struggle before he  
 would yield; but he deemed it a duty to obey the  
 will of the sovereign, and announced from his seat in  
 the House of Lords that he was no longer a member  
 of the council. Charles then called the two houses  
 before him, and assured them that he was as ready as  
 their hearts could desire to establish the security of  
 the Protestant religion, and to assent to any reason-  
 able laws for that purpose, provided that they did not  
 trench on the rightful descent of the crown, nor on his  
 own authority, nor on the just rights of his Protestant  
 successors. This speech was received with expressions  
 of gratitude; and Lord Russell immediately withdrew  
 his motion. One part of it, the removal of the duke  
 from the council, had been obtained; the other part, his  
 removal from the court, was included in the bill against  
 popish recusants now pending in the House of Lords.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> C. Journ. Nov. 9. James (Memoirs), i. 524. Reresby, 70.  
 Burnet, ii. 157. Parl Hist. iv. 1026.



That bill, however, made but little progress. The lords in general looked with jealousy on a measure which invaded the constitutional rights of the peerage,<sup>1</sup> and would create a precedent which, on subsequent occasions, might be employed against other than Catholic peers. To stimulate their indolence, the Commons, by repeated messages, reminded them that on the adoption of the bill depended the safety of the king and kingdom, and of the Protestant religion; and Charles, weary of contending with clamour and intimidation, consented to sacrifice the rights of the other lords, provided those of his brother were maintained. To the surprise of all men, on the third reading, when the rejection of the bill was generally anticipated, it passed without opposition, but with a proviso that its operation should not extend to his royal highness, the duke of York. James, however, immediately entered his protest against it; and was followed by the earls of Berkshire, and Cardigan, and the lords Audley, Stourton, Hunsdon, and Teynham.<sup>2</sup>

To the popular leaders the exclusion of the Catholic peers was a matter of minor interest; their paramount object, the exclusion of the duke of York, had been defeated by the proviso. They resolved, as a last resource, to throw it out in the House of Commons, and to mark their sense of the conduct of the Lords by the manner of the rejection. Sixteen members

<sup>1</sup> See the standing order in the Lords' Journals, xii. 673.

<sup>2</sup> Stat. of Realm, v. 896. L. Journ. xiii. 365. C. Journ. Nov. 11, 16. Reresby, 71. Monmouth, to escape the necessity of voting in favour of his uncle, left the house before the division, which gave James a fair opportunity of complaining to the king of his son's conduct, and of observing that he was not only intimately connected with the leaders of the opposition, but suffered his flatterers to drink to him by the title of prince of Wales.—James (Memoirs), i. 526.

CHAP.  
V.  
A.D. 1678

Nov. 7.

Nov. 11.

Nov. 20.

Nov. 21.

CHAP. rose in succession to speak in support of the amend-  
 A.D. 1678.<sup>V.</sup> ment, before they could provoke an answer from the  
 — benches of their opponents. Waller was the first to  
 move its rejection; he was followed on the same side  
 by Meres and Capel, and answered by Sir Robert  
 Howard. The debate grew warm; high words, and  
 even blows, were exchanged by Ashe and Trelawney;  
 and when Sir William Coventry, deserting his party,  
 contended that the duke was entitled to the indul-  
 gence, for his eminent services to the nation, he was  
 put down with cries of "Coleman's letters; remember  
 "Coleman's letters!" Lord Cavendish closed the  
 discussion. What were the reasons which recom-  
 mended the proviso to the adoption of the Lords, he  
 knew not; but till he both knew them and approved  
 of them, he would never be a party to an enactment  
 which should declare by authority of parliament that  
 the king's brother was a papist. The question was  
 then put, and, to the deep and bitter disappointment  
 of the party, the proviso was carried by a majority of  
 two voices. Charles gave his assent to the bill, but at  
 the same time remarked that he did it with reluc-  
 tance, and merely through deference to those who  
 were alarmed at the extraordinary excitement of the  
 people.<sup>1</sup>

Nov. 30.

By this statute, which owed its enactment to the

<sup>1</sup> C. Journ. Nov. 21. L. Journ. xiii. 394. Parl. Hist. iv. 1039, 1045. Soon afterwards the Lords made an order that John Hudleston, Charles Giffard, Francis Yates and his wife, the five brothers of the name of Penderell, Mr. Whitgrave of Moseley, Colonel Carlos, and Francis Reynold of Carleton, in Bedfordshire, who had been instrumental in the preservation of the king after the battle of Worcester, should live as freely as any of his majesty's Protestant subjects, without being liable to the penalties against popish recusants, and that a bill be prepared for that purpose.—L. Journ. 408. But no such bill was ever passed.

perjuries of an impostor, and the delusion of the nation, the Catholic peers found themselves, without any fault of theirs, deprived of the most valuable privilege of the peerage, the right which they derived from their birth of sitting and voting in the higher house of parliament. Nor were they the only victims; the unjust proscription attached to their descendants during a long lapse of one hundred and fifty years. It was reserved for a prince of the house of Brunswick, the fourth who swayed the sceptre of these realms, and an enlightened and liberal parliament, to erase the foul blot from the statute-book, and, by an act of tardy but praiseworthy justice, to restore the sufferers to the exercise of their ancient and hereditary rights.<sup>1</sup>

There was one circumstance which greatly embarrassed the patrons of the plot. Its credit still depended on the sole unsupported testimony of Oates. Though the prisoners had been successively interrogated at the bar, or before the committee of the House of Lords, all had uniformly protested their innocence; the offer of pardon and reward had been made in vain; each persisted in declaring his ignorance not only of the facts and designs charged on himself, but also of those charged upon the others. Thus eleven weeks passed away, and no prosecution

<sup>1</sup> The peers whom this act deprived of their seats in the house were the duke of Norfolk, the earls of Shrewsbury, Berkshire, Portland, Cardigan, and Powis, the viscounts Montague and Stafford, the lords Mowbray, Audley, Stourton, Petre, Arundell, Hunsdon, Belasyse, Langdale, Teynham, Carrington, Widdrington, Gerard of Bromley, and Clifford. We are told that three preferred their seats to their religion (Reresby, 73). Of these the marquess of Worcester was one; the other two, as far as I can ascertain, did not take the oaths till the next session, in 1679, viz. the lord Mowbray, son to the duke of Norfolk, and the earl of Berkshire, on his coming to the title after the death of his brother.

CHAP. was instituted, because, to establish the guilt of the  
 A.D. 1678. <sup>V.</sup>accused, the law required the concurrent testimony of  
 — two witnesses. At last the difficulty was surmounted.  
 The king by proclamation had promised to the discoverer of the assassins of Sir Edmondbury Godfrey  
 Nov. 1. reward, protection, and a full pardon, even if he were an accomplice; and in a few days the secretary of state received an enigmatical letter, dated from the town of Newbury, containing the singular request that the writer, William Bedloe, might be taken into  
 Nov. 2. custody in the city of Bristol, and be brought back a prisoner to the metropolis. By order of the council, a warrant for his apprehension was sent to Bedloe himself, with directions to deliver it to the mayor of  
 Nov. 5. Bristol, when and in what manner he might think fit; the arrest accordingly took place in the open street, and in the presence of a numerous crowd; and a report was circulated both there and in London that the prisoner had it in his power to develop the whole mystery in which the death of Godfrey was still involved.<sup>1</sup>

The character of Bedloe was not less open to objection than that of Oates. He had originally been employed in the stables, and afterwards in the household of Lord Belasyse. Subsequently he travelled on the continent as a courier in the service of different gentlemen; in which capacity he became acquainted with the names and residences of many persons of distinction, and availed himself of that knowledge to raise money by artifice and fraud. His swindling transactions had repeatedly been visited with imprisonment and various punishments in different countries; judgment of death had been passed on him for a

<sup>1</sup> See the official papers in Brief History, iii. 67.

robbery in Normandy ; and he had just obtained his discharge from confinement in Newgate, when the proclamation induced him to offer himself a candidate for the reward of five hundred pounds.<sup>1</sup> In his first deposition, taken before the king and the two secretaries of state, he declared upon oath that he knew nothing of the plot, but had seen the dead body of Godfrey at Somerset House ; that, according to his informant, the Jesuit Le Fevre, Godfrey was stifled between two pillows by Le Fevre himself, with the aid of Walsh, another Jesuit, of Lord Belasyse's gentleman, and of a waiter in the queen's chapel ; that he had been offered two thousand guineas to help in removing the corpse, and that it was at last carried away on Monday night at nine of the clock, by three persons unknown to him, but retainers at Somerset House. The next morning he related the same in substance before the House of Lords. To a question respecting Oates, he answered by denying all knowledge of that informer ; but added, contrary to his testimony of the day before, that he had been told by Walsh and Le Fevre of the commissions received by the earl of Powis and Lord Belasyse, and of authority to appoint other officers given to Lord Arundell. This provoked the king to exclaim : " Surely the man " has received a new lesson during the last twenty-four " hours ! " <sup>2</sup>

The memory of the informer continued to improve. In another deposition, made also upon oath, he recollected that in the beginning of October he had been solicited to commit a murder for a reward of four thousand pounds ; that Godfrey was inveigled into the

<sup>1</sup> Burnet, ii. 158. Echard, 951. Florus Anglo-Bavaricus, 127.

<sup>2</sup> Burnet, ii. 157. L. Journ. xiii. 343.

CHAP.  
V.  
A.D. 1678.

Nov. 7.

Nov. 8.

Nov. 12.

CHAP. V. court of Somerset House about five in the evening ;  
 A.D. 1678. that he was not stifled with pillows (that story contradicted the finding of the coroner's inquest), but strangled with a linen cravat; that the body was deposited in a room which Bedloe pointed out to the duke of Monmouth; that he saw standing round it the four murderers and Atkins, clerk to Mr. Pepys, of the Admiralty; and that it was removed about eleven of the clock on the Monday night.<sup>1</sup> In two parts of this deposition he was unfortunate; he had selected for the time of the murder the very hour when Charles was at Somerset House on a visit to the queen; an hour when such a transaction must have been instantly discovered, because a company of foot-guards had been drawn out, and a sentinel stationed at every door; and he had pointed out as the place of concealment of the body the room which was appropriated to the use of the queen's footmen, who were there in waiting at every hour of the day.<sup>2</sup>

Nov. 12. But his succeeding reminiscences were of much greater importance. At first he knew nothing of the plot; now he remembered that during his travels he had become acquainted with English monks, friars, Jesuits, clergymen, and nuns, all of whom were anxious to acquaint him with the particulars of the great design for the re-establishment of Catholicity in England. From them he learned that at first it was proposed to confine the king in a monastery, but afterwards to kill him; that another person, unless he would consent to hold the crown of the pope, would be also set aside,

<sup>1</sup> L. Journ. 348, 350.

<sup>2</sup> James (Memoirs), i. 527. "The king told me," says Reresby, "that Bedloe was a rogue, and he was satisfied that he had given some false evidence concerning the death of Sir Edmondbury Godfrey."—Reresby, 72.

and the government be administered by commission, with the Lord Arundell at its head ; that the duke of Norfolk, the marquess of Worcester, and the earl of Shrewsbury, were too loyal to be trusted with any knowledge of the plot ; that ten thousand men were to land at Bridlington, in Yorkshire, and put themselves under the command of Lord Belasyse ; that an army of twenty or thirty thousand friars and pilgrims was to sail from Corunna to Milford Haven, and to join the Catholics of Wales under the earl of Powis and Lord Petre ; that the king, the dukes of Monmouth, Ormond, and Buckingham, the earl of Shaftesbury, and the Lord Ossory, were to be murdered by persons whose names he stated, the military in London by assassins stationed at the door of every alehouse, and the citizens by a force of forty thousand men secretly organized, and consisting of papists or Protestants in the pay of the papists ; that all who refused to conform to the Catholic worship were to be “utterly extinguished ;” and that there was not a Catholic in England, of quality or credit, who had not received information of the plot, and been sworn on the sacrament to lend to it his aid, and to keep it secret.<sup>1</sup>

It will excite surprise that in the three kingdoms

<sup>1</sup> L. Journ. 351, 353. At this time Luzancy appeared again upon the stage ; but his residence for the last three years at Oxford disabled him, however he had been disposed, from acting an important part among the informers. He had already expelled from England St. Germain, almoner to the duchess of York ; he now expelled La Colombière, successor to St. Germain. Having composed a memorial for Du Vicquier, a Frenchman, he introduced him first to the bishop of London, and then to the lord chancellor. La Colombière was immediately arrested, and committed on the 16th of November. The former accused him at the bar of the House of Lords of having said that the king was a Catholic at heart, and that the power of the parliament would not last for ever ; of having perverted Protestants, and sent missionaries to Virginia. The Lords noted that these were matters of dangerous consequence, and on the 21st addressed the

CHAP. there could be found an individual so simple or so pre-  
 A.D. 1678. judiced as to give credit to this marvellous tale of  
 — bloodshed and treason. But in times of general panic nothing is too absurd for the credulity of the public. The deposition of Bedloe was hailed as a confirmation of that of Oates ; it served to fan the flame, to add to the national delirium ; new addresses were made to the king, and new proclamations and arrests followed. Yet the champions of the plot, those who sought to bring home to the accused the charges against them, saw with uneasiness that there was nothing in these additional informations to constitute Bedloe a second witness in conjunction with Oates. The reader, however, will soon discover how the difficulty was removed by the effrontery of the new informer, who on the trials of the prisoners found it convenient to forget much of his previous testimony, and to substitute other particulars, which, though entirely new, harmonized better with the fictions of his brother impostor.

These discoveries by Bedloe had served to occupy the public attention during the debates on the bill for the exclusion of Catholics from parliament ; the moment the duke of York was excepted by the clause in his favour, a new and most extraordinary intrigue was set on foot. The reader will recollect that Shaftesbury, in his zeal to prevent the succession of that prince, had ventured to propose to the king a divorce, for the purpose of having issue by another wife ; and now, with the same view, a Mrs. Lloyd, at the suggestion of Dr. Tonge, waited on Charles and solicited a private audience for Titus Oates, who wished to confide

Nov. 23.

king to send Colombière out of the kingdom. Four weeks later the zeal of Luzancy was rewarded with the vicarage of Dover-court. —*L. Journ.* xiii. 367, 368. *Conspirations d'Angleterre*, 1680, pp. 360, 370.



to his majesty some secret and important information tending to criminate the queen. He heard her with tokens of incredulity and impatience; and, when she hinted the possibility of a divorce, sternly replied that he would never suffer an innocent woman to be oppressed.<sup>1</sup>

Oates, however, was admitted to tell his tale to the king, then made his deposition on oath before Secretary Coventry, and afterwards was twice examined by the privy council. He stated that in July he saw a letter in which it was affirmed by Wakeman that the queen had been brought to give her assent to the murder of the king; and that one day in August he accompanied several Jesuits to Somerset House, and was left in the ante-chamber, when they were admitted to the queen. The door stood at jar; he had the curiosity to listen, and heard a female voice exclaim, "I will no longer suffer such indignities to my bed! I am content to join in procuring his death, and the propagation of the Catholic faith:" soon afterwards the Jesuits retired; he looked into the room, and saw no other woman than the queen. There was much to throw discredit on this story. Oates had never given any intimation of it before; he had not mentioned the traitorous letter, when he made the charge against Wakeman; and he had solemnly declared upon oath that he knew of no other persons implicated in the crime besides those whom he had already named. Charles ordered the earls of Ossory and Bridgewater to conduct the informer to Somerset House, and oblige

CHAP.  
V.  
A.D. 1678.

Nov. 24.

Nov. 25.

Nov. 26.

<sup>1</sup> L. Journ. xiii. 389. James (Memoirs), i. 529. "He said to me" (Dr. Burnet) "that considering his faultiness towards her in other things, he thought it a horrid thing to abandon her."—Burnet, ii. 169.

CHAP. him to point out the room and ante-chamber which he  
 A.D. 1678. <sup>V.</sup> had described. He was led into every part, he repeatedly visited every chamber, and was at length compelled to acknowledge his inability to discover the place. The king, convinced that the story had been suggested to him by some enemy of the duke, ordered the guards who had been assigned for his security to keep always in his company, and to allow no person to see him, or to speak with him in private.<sup>1</sup>

Nov. 27. Bedloe followed, as a second witness, to support the testimony of Oates. He too, if we may believe him, had been at Somerset House : he had witnessed a conference between Catherine and two French clergymen, in the presence of Lord Belasyse, Coleman, and some Jesuits ; and was subsequently told by Coleman that at the first proposal of the king's murder the queen burst into tears, but that her objections had been removed by the Frenchmen, and that she had reluctantly signified her consent. Bedloe, however, was more cautious than Oates. His former difficulty in finding the chamber in which he had seen the body of Godfrey, proved to him a useful lesson ; and he assigned for the scene of this consultation a place in which he could not be liable to error, the gallery of the chapel, while he, as he pretended, remained on the floor below. But why had he hitherto concealed this important evidence ? To the question he replied, that it had escaped his memory. If he recollected it now, it was owing to the impudent denial of Coleman, that he had ever been in the company of Bedloe.<sup>2</sup>

But, whatever might be the conviction of the king,

<sup>1</sup> L. Journ. 388, 391. James (Memoirs), i. 529. Clar. Corres. i. 52, 56.

<sup>2</sup> L. Journ. 391, 392.

it was not the intention of the party to lose the benefit of this additional testimony. Bedloe, having previously obtained a pardon for all offences committed up to that hour, delivered his deposition in writing to the House of Commons; and then Oates, appearing at the bar, raised his voice and exclaimed, "I, Titus Oates, accuse Catherine, queen of England, of high treason." The members not in the secret were struck dumb with astonishment; an address was hastily voted for the removal of the queen and her household from Whitehall; and a message was sent to the House of Lords to solicit their immediate concurrence. They, however, previously required to be put in possession of the depositions made before the council; then severely examined the two witnesses in person, and, dissatisfied with their answers, resolved to refuse their concurrence, and appointed a committee to state the reasons of their refusal. Shaftesbury with two others protested against this vote; but the majority of the party deemed it prudent to acquiesce; a dissension between the houses might break all their measures, and, by bringing into question the credit of the witnesses, overturn the whole fabric of the plot. The charge against the queen was therefore buried in silence; but an address for the apprehension of all papists within the realm was voted, and impeachments of high treason against the five Catholic peers in the Tower were carried to the House of Lords.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
V.  
A.D. 1678.  
—  
Nov. 28.

Nov. 29.

I shall not detain the reader with a narrative of the

<sup>1</sup> C. Journ. Nov. 28, 29, Dec. 5. L. Journ. 392, 403. The Commons also addressed the king to restore Oates to his former freedom. He gave orders that any member or clerk of either house might have unrestrained access to him, but not all persons without exception. They remonstrated, and he yielded.—C. Journ. Dec. 6, 7.

CHAP. partial trials, and judicial murders, of the unfortunate  
 V. men whose names had been inserted by Oates in his  
 A.D. 1678. pretended discoveries. So violent was the excitement,  
 — so general the delusion created by the perjuries of the  
 informer, that the voice of reason and the claims of  
 justice were equally disregarded : both judge and jury  
 seemed to have no other object than to inflict ven-  
 geance on the supposed traitors : to speak in support  
 of their innocence, or to question the veracity of the  
 accusers, or to hint the improbability of the informa-  
 tions, required a strength of mind, a recklessness of  
 consequences, which falls to the lot of few individuals;  
 even the king himself, convinced as he was of the  
 imposture, and contemptuously as he spoke of it in  
 private, dared not exercise his prerogative of mercy  
 to save the lives of the innocent. These unfortunate  
 men were put on their trials under every disadvantage.  
 1. They possessed not the means of rebutting the  
 charges against them. Kept in solitary confinement,  
 debarred from all communication with their friends,  
 without legal advisers, and with no other knowledge  
 than what they could collect from their previous exa-  
 mination, they received notice of trial on the evening,  
 and were placed at the bar the next morning. 2. The  
 point on which the imposture hinged was the traitorous  
 consult supposed to have been held at the White  
 Horse tavern on the 25th of April, at which Oates  
 deposed that he was present. Now, to prove that no  
 such consult was held, they could not appeal to the  
 testimony of the landlord, who was dead, nor of his  
 widow or former servants still living ; for though the  
 House of Lords ordered the inquiry to be made, not  
 one of these individuals could then be found ;<sup>1</sup> neither

<sup>1</sup> L. Journ. xiii. 335.

dared they show that the real consult took place on that day at St. James's, because that would have been to expose the duke of York to the capital punishment enacted against the harbourers of priests and Jesuits.

3. They were condemned before their trial by the prepossessions of the court, the jury, and the spectators. The chief justice, Scroggs, a lawyer of profligate habits and inferior acquirements, acted the part of prosecutor rather than of judge. To the informers he behaved with kindness, even with deference, suggesting to them explanations, excusing their contradictions, and repelling the imputations on their characters; but the prisoners were repeatedly interrupted and insulted; their witnesses were browbeaten from the bench, and ill-treated by the spectators; and their condemnation was generally hailed with acclamations, which the court rather encouraged than repressed.<sup>1</sup>

These trials were introduced with the prosecution of Stayley, the Catholic banker, at the instance of Carstairs, a Scottish adventurer. Stayley was sitting in a tavern, and conversing in French on the topics of the day with Firmin, a native of Marseilles, when Carstairs entered with a companion, and pretended to listen to their discourse. The next morning he waited on Stayley, and accused him of treason, but offered to suppress the charge in consideration of the sum of two hundred pounds. The banker laughed at the insolence of the man; but in a few minutes he was arrested, and at the end of five days tried for his life. Burnet, when he heard the name of the informer, hastened to assure the lord chancellor that Carstairs was a man of infamous character and unworthy of credit even on his oath; but Jones, the attorney-general, being present,

<sup>1</sup> See in particular the evidence of Fallas, State Trials, x. 1275.

CHAP. asked Burnet who had authorized him to defame the  
 A.D. 1678. king's witness, and the timid divine shrunk from the  
 — frown of the barrister, and left the unfortunate man  
 to his fate. The conversation in the tavern turned  
 Nov. 20. on the Catholics who had been charged with the  
 design of murdering the king, and the question in  
 dispute at the trial between the informer and the  
 accused was, whether Stayley had said that he was  
 ready to kill *him* or *them*, whether he used the French  
 article *le* or *les*. It is plain that Firmin might have  
 decided the controversy; but care had been taken to  
 confine him in close custody, from which he was not  
 Nov. 26. discharged till four months after the trial. The jury  
 believed the informer, and Stayley suffered death at  
 Tyburn.<sup>1</sup>

Nov. 2. The first victim sacrificed to the perjury of Oates and  
 his coadjutor Bedloe was Coleman. In consequence  
 of an address from the House of Commons, Charles  
 had promised that, if Coleman would make a satis-  
 Nov. 4. factory confession, he should have a full pardon; if he  
 did not, the law should have its course. With this in-  
 Nov. 7. formation the committee visited him in Newgate. He  
 gave them the cipher to his correspondence, and ex-  
 plained to them his pecuniary transactions, but strongly  
 denied that he possessed any knowledge of the alleged  
 Nov. 27. plot.<sup>2</sup> At his trial he maintained that his object in

<sup>1</sup> State Trials, vi. 1501. Burnet, ii. 160. Conspirations d'Angleterre, 378.

<sup>2</sup> C. Journ. Nov. 2, 4, 7. According to the report of the committee, Coleman said that he had received two thousand five hundred pounds from Barillon, "to distribute to members of the House of Commons to prevent a rupture between the two crowns," but "had applied the money to his own use, because he thought he was as much out of purse upon the French account in his way of living; though he told Barillon that he had given to some members according to his promise."—Journ. p. 534. I suspect some inaccuracy in this statement. After Coleman's death his widow presented through Barillon a petition to Louis, stating that sixty-five thousand

his letters (that they were imprudent and unwarrantable he did not deny) was to procure money and the toleration of the Catholic worship; that he had never seen either of his accusers before his apprehension; and that both had perjured themselves in their testimony, Bedloe by swearing that he had taken a letter from Coleman to La Chaise in April, 1675, whereas it was plain from the documents on the table that there had been no correspondence between them before September in that year; and Oates by deposing to numerous transactions with him, though in presence of the council the informer was unacquainted with his person, and appeared to be ignorant of these very transactions. Bedloe probably made no answer; Oates replied with some embarrassment, that his eyes were at the time so dazzled by the lights on the table that he could not see distinctly, and his mind so overpowered by fatigue, that he was incapable of recollection. Coleman was found guilty, and perished on the scaffold, protesting his innocence with his last breath.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
V.  
A.D. 1678.  
—  
Nov. 27.

Dec. 3.

Whitbread, Fenwick, Ireland, Grove, and Pickering were soon afterwards brought to the bar. The evidence of Oates was positive against the whole five; that of Bedloe, by some unaccountable mischance, affected only the three last. In these circumstances Whitbread and Fenwick were by law entitled to an acquittal; but the chief justice ordered them to be removed, and called on Ireland, Grove, and Pickering

Dec. 17.

livres, or five thousand pounds, had been promised to her husband for his services in preventing the declaration of war; that only one half, two thousand five hundred pounds, had been paid to him, and that Barillon objected to pay to her the remaining half without an express order from the king.—Dalrymple, 201. On what ground could she claim the money, if her husband were only an agent to distribute it to others?

<sup>1</sup> State Trials, vii. 1, 78. Florus Anglo-Bavaricus, 135.

CHAP. V. to proceed with their defence. The jury returned a  
 A.D. 1679. verdict of guilty, and the three unfortunate men died  
 — like Coleman, asserting on the scaffold, as they had  
 Jan. 24. asserted at the bar, that before their apprehension  
 they had never heard, never so much as thought, of  
 the treason for which they suffered.<sup>1</sup>

In these prosecutions Bedloe acted only a secondary  
 part as the auxiliary of Oates: with respect to the  
 death of Godfrey, he claimed the merit and reward of  
 an original informer, but was compelled to spend two  
 months in search of a second witness to confirm his  
 sole and unsupported testimony. The deficiency was  
 Dec. 21. supplied by the apprehension on some trifling charge  
 of Prance, a silversmith, who had occasionally been  
 employed by the queen. Bedloe, the moment he  
 saw Prance, exclaimed, "That man is one of the mur-  
 "derers;" and the unfortunate silversmith was hurried  
 Dec. 23. to Newgate, where, under the influence of threats and  
 Dec. 24. promises, he was induced to confess himself guilty, and  
 to accuse as accomplices, Hill, Green, and Berry, three  
 servants at Somerset House.<sup>2</sup> But his mind was not  
 hardened against the sting of remorse; he requested to  
 be brought a second time before the king and the coun-  
 Dec. 29. cil, and on his knees, with the strongest protestations of  
 horror and repentance, declared that the whole of his  
 confession was false, and that he knew nothing of the  
 murder or the murderers. The managers attributed  
 this retractation to the arts of the Jesuits. Prance  
 was remanded to Newgate and chained to the floor in  
 the condemned cell: his terrors and his sufferings be-  
 reaved him occasionally of his reason; and Dr. Lloyd,  
 lately made dean of Bangor, and Boyce, the keeper,

<sup>1</sup> State Trials, viii. 79, 143.

<sup>2</sup> Like Oates and Bedloe, he had the folly to mention a room in  
 Somerset House, where the body lay, and being sent there, like  
 them was unable to find it.—L. Journ. 438.



urged him to confess, the one employing spiritual, the other worldly motives. At last he consented; but his disclosures were now so numerous and portentous, that the credulity of the dean was startled; he declined any further interference,<sup>1</sup> and left the unhappy man to the management of Boyce, with whose assistance a narrative was composed, professing to detail "the manner and circumstances of the murder, the conspiracy to assassinate the earl of Shaftesbury, and the vile practices of several popish priests."<sup>2</sup> The prisoners Hill, Green, and Berry, were now brought to trial: ignorant and unassisted, they were unable to detect and expose the glaring inconsistencies between the depositions of the two informers; and all three received judgment of death. Hill and Green, who were Catholics, having resisted every attempt to draw from them an acknowledgment of guilt, suffered at Tyburn: to Berry, a Protestant, the respite of a week was granted; but he, like his companions, disappointed the hopes of the committee, and died like them with asseverations of innocence in his mouth.<sup>3</sup>

CHAP.  
V.  
A.D. 1679.  
—  
Jan. 11.

Feb. 10.

Feb. 21.

Feb. 27.

<sup>1</sup> See L. Journ. xiii. 431, 436, 438; James (Memoirs), i. 535; Extracts from the journal of the committee, and the letters of Prance and Lloyd in Brief Hist. iii. 64—86. "From the time of taking off my irons and changing my lodging, which was upon my yielding basely to forswear myself against those innocent persons who dy'd on my wicked evidence, Mr. Boyce was the man that acted for me, and writ many things which I copy'd after him. I found by his discourse that he had been several times with my lord Shaftesbury and with Bedloe, and he told me that I should be certainly hang'd, if I agreed not with Bedloe's evidence" (p. 127). It is plain that little reliance can be placed on the words of Prance; yet, as Dr. Lloyd observes, "he was best able to refute his own fictions concerning the murder, in which his word may be of some credit, but of none in anything else" (p. 85).

<sup>2</sup> "A True Narrative and Discovery, by Mr. Miles Prance, of Covent-garden, Goldsmith," 1679.

<sup>3</sup> State Trials, vii. 159—230. Ralph has printed the depositions of Bedloe and Prance in parallel columns, that the reader may see

CHAP. V.  
A.D. 1673. — But from these scenes of horror it is time to divert the reader's attention to a new intrigue of a very different description, which led in its consequences to the dissolution both of the ministry and the parliament. It will be remembered that on the 25th of March the lord treasurer, in opposition to his own judgment, wrote by order of Charles a letter to Montague, the ambassador at Paris, commissioning him in certain circumstances to demand from Louis a pension of six million of livres in return for the king's services in disposing the allies to consent to the conditions of peace. The demand was never made—not because it shocked the patriotism of Montague, for it had been suggested and recommended by him<sup>1</sup>—but because the terms proposed were rejected by the French cabinet. What secret overtures were afterwards made to the ambassador by Louis, we know not; but he felt or pretended to feel as an injury the king's refusal of his request to purchase the office of secretary from Sir Henry Coventry, and suddenly abandoning his situation in Paris, he returned without permission or notice to England. Danby, apprehensive

June 24.

August.

at one glance how they contradict each other in almost every circumstance of time, place, and thing (i. 419). Perhaps I should mention that great endeavours were made to implicate in the plot Pepys, secretary of the Admiralty to the duke of York, and that with that view Atkins, his clerk, was charged and tried as an accomplice in the murder of Godfrey. Bedloe, before the lords, swore that one of the accomplices, "who called himself Atkins, was in all things very like the prisoner; but because he never saw him before that time he could not positively swear it, but he verily believed him to be the man."—*L. Journ.* 351. Before the trial, however, it was known that Atkins that very evening was drinking till he was intoxicated, on board one of the king's ships in the river; and Bedloe then swore that the accomplice "was not such a man as the prisoner. He had a more manly face and beard."—*State Trials*, vi. 1473—1492; vii. 242. Atkins of course was acquitted.

<sup>1</sup> His letters are published among those of Danby, i, 13, 20, 21, 26, 36, 38, 43, 60, 62, 82.

of his enmity, watched his steps with solicitude : it was discovered that he not only associated with the popular leaders, but held secret and nightly conferences with Barillon; and his attempts to procure a seat in the House of Commons convinced the minister that, if Montague delayed to strike the blow which he meditated, it was only till he could shelter himself from the royal resentment under the privileges of parliament. At the election for Grinstead he was defeated by the foresight of Danby : at that for Northampton he was returned by the mayor; his absent opponent Sir William Temple by the sheriff; but Montague petitioned, the popular party espoused his cause, and the house pronounced him duly elected.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP  
V.  
A.D. 1678.

Oct. 21.

Nov. 6.

Nov. 11.

Montague's real object was the ruin of the lord treasurer. With the popular leaders it had been arranged that *he* should bring forward the secret despatch of March 25th; and that *they* should ground on it a vote of impeachment against Danby. With Barillon he had concluded a contract that one hundred thousand livres should be spent by the ambassador in purchasing the aid of the most powerful speakers in parliament, and one hundred thousand crowns should be paid to Montague himself, if through his exertions Danby were removed from office within the course of six months.<sup>2</sup> Still he delayed. His timidity was not satisfied with the protection afforded by a seat in parliament, and he waited for the time when the disbandment of the army should render the king less able to violate the privileges of the members. But

<sup>1</sup> Ibid. 78, 83, 88, 115, 116. C. Journ. Oct. 21, Nov. 6, 11, 23.

<sup>2</sup> See Barillon's despatch in Dalrymple, 193. If Louis objected to the one hundred thousand crowns, he was willing to accept a capital producing forty thousand livres of rentes on the Hôtel de Ville, or a pension of fifty thousand for life, at the option of the king.—Ibid.

CHAP. Dauby had already received a hint of his danger : he  
 A.D. 1678. <sup>V.</sup> knew that his despatches had been secretly shown to  
 — some of his opponents, and it became to him a matter  
 Dec. 19. of the first importance to gain possession of the  
 obnoxious papers. With this view he laid before the  
 council the information given by Sir William Temple  
 that Montague had privately visited the papal nuncio  
 at Paris, and might therefore be in some manner or  
 other implicated in the popish plot :<sup>1</sup> it was imme-  
 diately resolved to pursue the inquiry ; messengers  
 were despatched to make the seizure of his papers :  
 and Erneley, chancellor of the exchequer, delivered a  
 royal message, announcing this proceeding, and the  
 information on which it was grounded, to the House  
 of Commons.

The matter had been conducted with so much  
 secrecy that Montague and his friends were taken by  
 surprise. The ingenuity of Powle (he afterwards  
 received five hundred guineas from Barillon as a  
 reward for his services<sup>2</sup>) relieved them for a while  
 from their embarrassment. The seizure, he maintained,  
 was a breach of privilege, unless the information had  
 been taken upon oath, and, at his suggestion, Lord  
 Cavendish with other members waited on the king, to  
 ascertain the fact as to that particular circumstance.  
 To their mortification Charles drily replied, that  
 he would return an answer after the two houses were  
 risen.

In the next place Harbord, another of Barillon's  
 pensioners, was deputed to visit Montague's house,

<sup>1</sup> Danby's Letters, 265—267. Dalrymple, 198.

<sup>2</sup> Barillon appears to have made out in December of each year  
 an account of the money which he disbursed for political purposes.  
 The account for the present year up to December has not been dis-  
 covered ; that for the year 1679 will be afterwards noticed.

with private instructions from that member. Having ascertained that the letters, the only real objects of anxiety to both parties, had hitherto escaped the search of the officers, he returned; Montague immediately announced that he had in his keeping papers containing indubitable proofs of the guilty projects of a certain great minister; Lord Cavendish moved that documents of such high importance should be placed under the custody of the house; and Harbord, Lord Russell, and several others were commissioned to proceed and take possession of the letters in question, in the name of the Commons of England. They returned bearing a small casket, which was placed on the table; and Montague, selecting from its contents two papers, delivered them to the speaker, protesting at the same time that it had been his intention to have communicated them through Secretary Coventry to the king, and that he should not have presumed to make them public even now, were it not in obedience to the express commands of the house. Both bore the signature of the lord treasurer. One, of the date of January 16, stated that the adjournment for thirteen days had been adopted in the hope of discovering in the interval some expedient for a peace; the other proved to be the celebrated despatch of March 25, with which the reader is already acquainted.

The reading of these papers electrified the house. They were described as a continuation of Coleman's intrigue; they proved that the same objects were kept in view, and the same manœuvres employed; that the king's ardour for war had been a mere pretext to wring money from his people; and that, the moment money was voted, he had offered to sell the nation to a foreign sovereign. The debate was long

CHAP.  
V.  
A.D. 1678.

CHAP. and stormy; and no one expressed more virtuous  
 V. indignation against pecuniary transactions with France  
 A.D. 1678. — than those who were then in the pay, or who had  
 planned the prosecution with the advice, of the  
 Dec. 19. French ambassador. The house, carried away by the  
 impulse of the moment, voted by a majority of sixty-  
 three voices that the lord treasurer should be impeached  
 of high treason, and that his letters should be entered  
 on the journals.<sup>1</sup>

Thus far the cunning of Montague had triumphed over that of the minister. He was not, however, without apprehension. He knew that the charge which he had brought might be retorted with tenfold energy against himself, and that the letters in which he had originally suggested, and afterwards advised, the measure, were still in existence: but he gave credit to his adversary for a more delicate sense of honour than he possessed himself, and trusted that Danby would be restrained from the publication of those documents by the fear of betraying at the same time the secret views and negotiations of the sovereign. In this respect he argued correctly; for out of the whole correspondence the treasurer could find but two letters which he might produce in his vindication without compromising the king. Both were forwarded to the house. The first, dated January 1, N. S., gave information that Ruvigny was sent to London to treat through Lord Russell with the popular leaders: the other of the 18th contained a proposal from Montague respecting a demand of money on a conclusion of peace, and a request that he might be furnished with instructions on that head. They were publicly

<sup>1</sup> Journ. Dec. 19. Reresby, 74—78. Parl. Hist. iv. 1054—1067.

read by the speaker, but no attention was paid to them by the house, nor were they entered on the journals. The next day the impeachment was voted, and Sir Henry Capel received orders to carry it to the House of Lords.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
V.  
A.D. 1678.  
—  
Dec. 20.  
Dec. 21.

This instrument accused the earl of Danby of high treason and other high crimes, misdemeanours, and offences; and in particular—1. of traitorously “accroch-  
“ing” to himself regal power by acting without communication with the secretaries of state and the other counsellors; 2. of endeavouring to subvert the ancient government by keeping on foot a standing army; 3. of negotiating a peace in favour of France to the prejudice of England, that he might in return obtain money from France for the support of that army; 4. of being popishly inclined, and of having concealed the popish plot; 5. of having wasted the royal treasure in secret services and useless pensions; and, lastly, of having

<sup>1</sup> Danby says that the letters were not read (Danby, 102); but this, it appears from the journals (Dec. 20), is a mistake. They were moreover entered; and, what is still more extraordinary, the entry of Danby's letters omits the very important postscript in the hand of the king, testifying that the letter was written by his order. Was it then intended to keep this circumstance from the knowledge of the house? It has been answered no: that the letter, which had been read, and was entered, was a copy only, wanting the postscript; for Lord Russell said, “Montague cannot come at the originals now, but he has a copy of them.” Whether that copy had or had not the postscript is immaterial; for Lord Russell spoke before the messengers were sent for the box, and meant to inform the house that, if the originals had been seized, yet there was still a copy at their service. But no use was made of that copy, because the messengers returned with the box, out of which Montague himself took the originals, and delivered them to the speaker, who read them to the house. Mr. Williams immediately asked, “Will any member aver this to be the treasurer's letter?” Montague replied, “I conceive it to be his hand; for I have had several letters “from him in the same hand.”—Parl. Hist. iv. 1061. Hence it is plain that the original letters were read; and probably, that the postscript, as it was not afterwards entered, had been suppressed at the reading.

CHAP. obtained for himself grants from the crown contrary to  
 V.  
 A.D. 1678. the act of parliament.<sup>1</sup>

— Of Montague's perfidy and baseness in this proceeding there can be but one opinion. He had charged the counsels, of which he was himself the author, on one by whom they had always been opposed; he had betrayed the confidence reposed in him by his sovereign, and had sold his services to that very power whose intrigues he had been commissioned to watch and unravel. Nor can much be said in favour of the leaders by whom he was supported. They lent their powerful aid to the malice of a disappointed individual and the policy of a foreign court; they sought to interest the passions of the house by clamour and misrepresentation; they voted charges which were, on the very face of them, false and absurd; they affixed the penalties of treason to an offence which, when fully proved, could amount to no more than a misdemeanour; and this sacrifice of honour, truth, and justice, they made for the paltry purpose of ruining the adverse leader of a political party. Their intemperance, however, had its usefulness. It taught succeeding ministers to recollect that, besides the sovereign whom they served, there existed another power before which they might be compelled to answer, if, through obsequiousness to the royal will, they should presume to violate the existing laws, or to act in opposition to the acknowledged interests, of the country.

Dec. 23. In the House of Lords Danby defended himself with spirit and eloquence. It was, he owned, a misfortune to lie under an impeachment by the House of Commons; yet even with that misfortune upon him he deemed himself more happy than his accuser, ab-

<sup>1</sup> C. Journ. Dec. 21.



horred as that accuser must be by every honest man, CHAP. V. for his duplicity, his perfidy, and his ingratitude. Of A.D. 1678. the charges against him he spoke with contempt. He denied them all: he defied his adversaries to the proof; he asked for nothing but an equal and a speedy trial. The Commons insisted that he should be committed a prisoner to the Tower; but it was argued that not one of the offences specified in the impeachment amounted in law to high treason: after an adjourned debate, the demand was refused, and a day was appointed on which the treasurer should give his answer.<sup>1</sup> Dec. 27.

The parliament had now lasted eighteen years. In its infancy it had been distinguished by a habit of blind obsequiousness, in its more mature age by a system of determined hostility, to the court. The duke of York long ago advised a dissolution; but Charles had listened to the contrary suggestions of the minister, who felt little for the personal embarrassments of the king's brother, as long as he hoped by promises and bribes to mould the majority to his own purposes. Now, however, this hope had vanished. An impeachment was hanging over his head; he could have no certain reliance on his innocence, at a time when the jealous and vengeful passions of the people were in the keeping of his adversaries; and there was reason to fear that the king, however resolute he might profess to be at the moment, would ultimately yield to his habitual love of ease and his constitutional apprehension of resistance. The treasurer's best chance of safety depended on an immediate termination of the session. It would, indeed, be accompanied with an

<sup>1</sup> Lords' Journals, xiii. 432—435, 441. Parl. Hist. iv. 1069. Reresby, 78.

CHAP. inconvenience, the loss of a bill of supply for six hun-  
A.D. 1678. dred and forty thousand pounds for the disbanding of  
— the army; but for this might be substituted the surplus revenue of the year and a loan from the prince of Orange. Danby ventured to bring forward the proposal in the council; and Charles readily prorogued the parliament for the space of five weeks.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> L. Journ. 447. Reresby, 78. The savings, to the amount of six hundred thousand pounds, had hitherto been applied towards the gradual extinction of the debt incurred by the stoppage of the exchequer in 1672.—Reresby, 67. Parl. Hist. iv. 1063, 1071.

## CHAPTER VI.

THE DUKE OF YORK QUITS THE KINGDOM—DANBY PARDONED BY THE KING, BUT IMPRISONED—NEW COUNCIL—DEBATE ON THE BILL OF EXCLUSION—PROROGATION—EXECUTION OF MITCHELL IN SCOTLAND—MURDER OF ARCHBISHOP SHARP—VICTORY AND DEFEAT OF THE COVENANTERS—TRIAL AND EXECUTION OF FIVE JESUITS—OF LANGHORNE—ACQUITTAL OF WAKEMAN—DISSOLUTION OF PARLIAMENT—PETITIONERS AND ABHORRERS—BILL OF EXCLUSION LOST IN THE HOUSE OF LORDS—TRIAL AND EXECUTION OF VISCOUNT STAFFORD.

FROM the prorogation the lord treasurer derived this important benefit ; it suspended the proceedings against him, and afforded him a breathing-time to provide for his own security. His first care was to break the combination of his enemies by entering into a private treaty with some of the leaders ; the Lord Holles in one house, and Lyttleton in the other, were induced to make to him, under certain conditions, a promise of neutrality, if not of support, on the question of impeachment ; and the king by his advice dissolved the parliament, summoning at the same time another to meet at the expiration of forty days. Never perhaps did a general election take place at a season of more intense excitement. The flame kindled in the capital had spread to the remotest corners of the country ; and the minds of men were agitated by rumours and jealousies the most extraordinary and unfounded. They believed at the same time that the king was a party to the conspiracy, and that his death

CHAP.  
VI.  
A.D. 1679.

Jan. 24.

CHAP. VI. was one of the great objects of the conspirators; they  
 A.D. 1679. suffered their judgments to be swayed by words instead of facts, but by words apparently of tremendous import, though without any definite meaning; and the candidates in the interest of the court were everywhere assailed with cries of the danger of Protestantism, and the bloody designs of the papists. The returns proved that the influence of the minister was no match for the phrensy of the people. His adherents were rejected with marks of infamy, and their places supplied with men breathing vengeance against the Catholics, and against an administration by which they believed that the Catholics were secretly supported.<sup>1</sup>

The unfavourable result of the elections suggested to Danby the necessity of some expedient to propitiate and disarm his opponents. *They* had failed to exclude the duke of York from the House of Lords; *he* undertook to remove him from the kingdom. To sound the disposition of that prince, certain persons, some his known friends, others considered as neutral, were employed to explain to him the expediency of a voluntary but temporary exile; and when he refused to purchase impunity for the minister by his own disgrace, Danby advised the king to send him an order to quit England, and to fix his residence at Brussels. But the good-nature of Charles recoiled from so harsh and ungracious a proceeding; the suggestion of an attempt to convert his misbelieving brother was adopted as less offensive to his feelings; and the archbishop with some of his brethren received a commission to bring back the strayed sheep to the fold of the established church. These prelates waited on the duke; they represented to him the pain which it gave

<sup>1</sup> Burnet, ii. 177. L. Journ. xiii. 448. North, 504, 505.

them to behold the son of a martyred king absenting himself from the national worship; they inveighed in sharp and bitter terms against the principles of the Roman church: and they maintained that she “both taught and practised doctrines destructive of salvation;” an assertion which, with his permission, they were prepared to establish, “not by perplexing him with the subtleties and niceties of the schools, but by a plain text or two, and a plain obvious matter of fact.” James replied that he doubted not the uprightness of their motives, though he knew that the suggestion came from an enemy; that it would be presumption in him, a layman, to enter the lists against professed theologians; that he had not changed his religious creed without a serious examination of the distinctive doctrines of the two churches, or a clear foresight of the sacrifices which that change would entail upon himself; and that to renew the investigation would require more leisure than he at that time possessed, and more deep and continued attention than he could under existing circumstances command. The failure of the prelates and the importunity of the treasurer subdued the reluctance of Charles, who at length mustered sufficient courage to hint to James that his expatriation for a short time offered the most probable means of mitigating the hostility of his enemies. The duke professed himself ready to submit to the royal will, but at the same time solicited two favours; one, an order in writing to quit the kingdom, that he might not appear to steal like a coward from the contest; the other a solemn promise that his rights should not be sacrificed in his absence to the pretensions of Monmouth, who, it was now reported, had provided four witnesses to establish, in the

CHAP.  
VI.  
A.D. 1679.

---

- OHAP. VI.  
A.D. 1679.  
Feb. 28,  
March 3.
- event of the king's death, a contract of marriage between his father and mother. The order was immediately given in the form of a most affectionate letter; and Charles, having assembled the council, declared "in the presence of Almighty God that he had never given or made any contract of marriage, nor was ever married to any woman whatsoever but his wife, Queen Catherine, then living." For greater security he subscribed this declaration, commanded the counsellors present to attest its execution with their signatures, and ordered the instrument with their testimony to be enrolled in Chancery.<sup>1</sup> James, accompanied by the duchess, departed the next day for Brussels: his daughter Anne was left under the care of her uncle, that it might not be said that her father meant to seduce her from the Protestant worship.<sup>2</sup>

- March 4.  
March 6.  
March 7.
- The parliament opened with a violent altercation respecting the choice of a speaker. Seymour, who had discharged the office in the last, was re-elected by the new House of Commons. This, however, accorded not with the designs of the lord treasurer, and it was resolved that when, according to custom, he should beg of the king to be excused, his prayer should be granted; but Seymour, aware of the intention, omitted in his speech the usual disqualifying expressions, and merely stated that he stood there to receive his majesty's approbation. The chancellor was

<sup>1</sup> This declaration, as well as another made on the 6th of January has been published by Mr. Rose from the rolls in chancery.—Observations on Fox, App. p. 59.

<sup>2</sup> James (Memoirs), i. 530, 536, 537, 541. Dalrymple, ii. 212 Burnet, ii. 194. The discourse of the prelates is in Clar. Corresp. ii. App. 467—471. The duke afterwards wrote to the archbishop an account of his conversion, which did not take place till after the Restoration, and in consequence of the fullest conviction.—James (Memoirs), i. 539, 540.

disconcerted : Charles had more self-possession ; he whispered in the ear of that officer, who answered that Seymour was reserved for a different employment, and that the Commons must proceed to a new election.

CHAP.  
VI.  
A.D. 1679.

This affront to the speaker elect has been represented as the consequence of a private quarrel between him and the Lady Danby. But it is scarcely credible that the treasurer, with an impeachment hanging over his head, would wantonly plunge into another quarrel with the House of Commons merely to gratify the resentment of his wife ; and the subsequent proceedings appear to show that the attempt was made in consequence of the secret understanding between him and some of the popular leaders. The person whom he sought to substitute in the place of Seymour was Sir Thomas Meres, one of his most active and eloquent opponents in the late parliament ; but the Commons adhered to their first choice ; and to their petition that the king would not invade their undoubted right, an answer was returned, bidding them not to waste the time but to obey. They requested him to reconsider their petition, and he prorogued the parliament for two days. When the house met again, Seymour was never mentioned : as if no dispute had previously existed, Serjeant Gregory, on the motion of Lord Russell, seconded by Lord Cavendish, was placed in the chair, and the new speaker immediately received the approbation of the king. By this arrangement Charles saved to the crown the right of refusing the person elected ; and the Commons took from the privy counsellors, by whom it had hitherto been exercised, the privilege of proposing the

March 11.

March 12.

March 13.

March 15.

CHAP. name of the speaker, and extended it to any member  
VI.  
A.D. 1679. of the house.<sup>1</sup>

—

The moment the last parliament was prorogued, Montague, apprehensive of the royal resentment, had endeavoured to escape to the continent in disguise, but had been apprehended on suspicion at Dover, and compelled to give security that he would not quit the kingdom. Again, however, he absconded, till his election for the borough of Huntingdon in the new parliament reinvested him with freedom from arrest, and placed him in a situation to resume the prosecution of Danby.<sup>2</sup> Fortunately for this purpose, the Lords had resolved that “the dissolution of the last parliament did not alter the state of the impeachments, brought up by the Commons in that parliament,”<sup>3</sup> and the majority of the house were so irritated by the late contest respecting the speaker, that they offered themselves to become the willing tools of his policy or malice. Charles saw, and sought to avert, the impending storm. Having compelled the treasurer to resign the staff, he called the two houses into the royal presence, and informed them that, whatever Danby had done in the writing of the letters, or the inquiry into the plot, had been done by his express order: that they were in reality his own acts, and he was therefore bound to shield his minister from punishment on his account. There existed, indeed, other reasons why he should exclude the earl from his counsels and presence; but, with respect to the offences of which he had been im-

<sup>1</sup> Reresby, 80—82. Parl. Hist. iv. 1093—1113. Burnet, ii. 194.

<sup>2</sup> Danby, 118.

<sup>3</sup> L. Journ. xiii. 464, 466. We may infer from the report of the committee that this resolution was not founded on any ancient precedent, because no inquiry into precedents was made.



peached, a full pardon had already been granted him, and that pardon should be renewed a dozen times, if a dozen renewals should be found necessary.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
VI.  
A.D. 1679  
—

If Charles assumed on this occasion so decisive a tone in favour of his late minister, it was not that he any longer looked upon him with feelings of friendship and esteem. For some months the chief object of Danby's proceedings had been his own preservation; to his obstinacy in the inquiry into the plot the king attributed all his present embarrassments; and the duchess of Portsmouth, whose industry had been quickened by a threat of impeachment, laboured by her suggestions to strengthen the alienation of the royal mind.<sup>2</sup> But a sense of honour and justice (so it was pretended) forbade the monarch to allow that the servant should suffer the penalty of a transaction in which he had done nothing more than obey the command of his master; though, if we believe Danby himself, the king was actuated by another and more selfish motive; it was for the royal interest to prevent a trial, because a trial would probably lead to the exposure of the secret treaties between Charles and the king of France. Had it not been for this inconvenience, Danby would have refused the pardon: he wanted no shield for defence; he was ready to fight his enemies with such arms as innocence supplied.<sup>3</sup> However that may be, by the house the very mention of a pardon in bar of an impeachment was taken as a wrong and an insult. Having searched in vain for a copy of the instrument in the different public

<sup>1</sup> L. Journ. 466. Reresby, 84. Burnet, ii. 196. The pardon was dated on March 1.—See it in Journals, xiii. 539.

<sup>2</sup> Temple, ii. 478.

<sup>3</sup> Danby, 109, III.

CHAP. offices, they interrogated the lord chancellor; and  
 VI. learned from him that Danby offered the pardon ready  
 A.D. 1679. drawn to the king, who immediately signed it, and  
 — ordered the person who carried the bag to affix the  
 March 24. great seal in his presence.<sup>1</sup> In the debate which followed, Powle (the reader will recollect that he was at the very time the secret pensionary of Barillon) called in bold and indignant language for the punishment of a perfidious minister. Danby, it was said, had brought the nation to the very brink of ruin: it was to his mercenary policy that Louis owed the victories which made him master of Flanders, and to his arbitrary maxims that the last House of Commons was indebted for the sharp and vituperatory answers which had been returned to its addresses. He had raised a standing army with the intention of defraying the charge for three years with French money; he had drained the treasury to enrich himself, and to bribe others; and he had first concealed the plot, then tampered with Bedloe to prevail on him to abscond, and afterwards had spoken of Oates in terms of obloquy and contempt. The king possessed, it was true, the power of pardoning, when *he* was the prosecutor; but, had he the same power when the prosecution proceeded from the House of Commons? He could not deprive an injured individual of his remedy at law; and by parity of reasoning he could not take from the representatives of the nation their remedy against the national enemy. By the courtiers it was replied, that the right of pardoning was vested in the crown; that up to that day the exercise of such right had never

<sup>1</sup> Hence the chancellor argued that the seal was not in his possession, but in the possession of the king, and that of course he was not responsible.—C. Journ. March 24.

been called in question; that, if any inconvenience were experienced, limitations might be imposed by a prospective law, but such limitations could not operate to the prejudice of pardons already passed. After a stormy debate, the house resolved to represent to the king the irregularity and illegality of the pardon, with the dangerous consequences of pardons in cases of impeachment by the Commons of England; and at the same time to send a message to the Lords, demanding that the accused might be sequestered from parliament, and committed to safe custody. The representation was not made; but the votes of the house served to alarm both the king, who saw that by supporting the minister he had involved himself in a new contest respecting his prerogative, and the Lords, who, that they might not seem to act from intimidation, ordered in great haste the usher of the black rod to take the earl of Danby into custody, and then, in answer to the message, replied that they had already of their own motion anticipated the wishes of the Commons.<sup>1</sup>

To prevent the trial, now became the chief object of the court. Danby, with the king's connivance, had secretly taken refuge at Whitehall, while the Lords passed a bill disabling him from holding office, or sitting in parliament, to which was afterwards added a clause banishing him from the kingdom. By the Commons this bill was rejected on the first reading, and one of attainder substituted, unless he should surrender himself for trial against a certain day. This, however, in its progress through the upper house, was by successive amendments converted into a bill of

<sup>1</sup> C. Journ. March 24. L. Journ. xiii. 475. Parl. Hist. iv. 1115. Burnet, ii. 196. On the 10th of April the Lords resolved that the previous refusal to commit Danby should not be drawn into precedent.—L. Journ. 510.

CHAP. banishment, similar in its provisions to the former.  
 VI.  
 A.D. 1679. The Commons rejected the amendments; conferences  
 — followed between the houses, and private meetings  
 April 4. between the leaders of the parties; the king's friends,  
 April 7. among whom, for reasons to be presently related,  
 April 8. Shaftesbury now took a prominent part, offered to  
 consent to additional severities, to the loss of the  
 April 10. peerage, to the confiscation of property, to anything  
 except a trial on the charge of high treason; but their  
 April 12. adversaries were as eager to acquire, as the king was  
 April 14. to conceal, the knowledge of the secret negotiations  
 with France; the Lords found themselves compelled  
 April 15. to acquiesce, and, as soon as the bill had passed both  
 April 16. houses, Danby surrendered himself to the black rod,  
 and was committed to the Tower. A few days later  
 April 25. he put in his answer, in which, having complained of  
 the generality and uncertainty of the articles, he suc-  
 cessively denied them all; and then, reciting at large  
 the pardon granted to him by the king, pleaded it in  
 bar of the impeachment, and in discharge of all the  
 offences of which he was accused.<sup>1</sup>

The eagerness with which the popular leaders hunted down this unfortunate minister did not cause them to relax in their pursuit of the supposed conspiracy. The two houses still appeared to contend against each other in the race of orthodoxy and loyalty. Informers and arrests were multiplied; every prison in the metropolis was filled with the victims of perjury and suspicion; throughout the kingdom all Catholics, not merely those of rank and influence, but artisans, servants, and labourers, were summoned to take the oaths,

<sup>1</sup> L. Journ. 476, 479, 481, 496, 497, 505, 509, 510, 513, 514, 516, 520, 521, 537. C. Journ. March 27, April 1, 7, 8, 12, 14 Burnet, ii. 197. Reresby, 84—86.

or give security for their behaviour; every priest whom the officers could discover was committed to take his trial on the charge of high treason; and the king was harassed with addresses for rewards to informers,<sup>1</sup> for the ejection of papists from the inns of court, and for the removal from employment of all Protestants who suffered any of their children to be educated in the Catholic faith. Both houses again declared that there had existed, and did exist, a horrid and treasonable conspiracy, contrived by those of the popish religion, for the murdering of the king, the subverting of Protestantism, and the ruin of the ancient government of the kingdom; and, the more to inflame the passions of the people, it was ordered that this vote should be prefixed to the public form of prayer appointed to be read on the day of the national fast. So general, indeed, was the infatuation, so violent were the antipathies of those who partook of it, that even the few who doubted or disbelieved the existence of the plot, concluded "that it must of necessity be pursued as if it were true, whether it were so or not;" and that, without the king's uniting with his people on this point,

CHAP.  
VI.  
A.D. 1679.

---

<sup>1</sup> In consequence of repeated addresses, Oates and Bedloe were not only lodged and boarded at the public charge, they also received large sums of money; Bedloe, in particular, the reward of five hundred pounds promised for the discovery of the murderers of Godfrey. In the Appendix I shall give the bills of expenses delivered in by these men; by Oates on the 11th, by Bedloe on the 15th of February. That by Oates amounted to six hundred and seventy-eight pounds, twelve shillings, and sixpence; that by Bedloe to two hundred and thirteen pounds. When the reader has perused them, he will be at a loss which to admire the most, the impudence of these impostors, or the credulity of the men who condescended to be their dupes. Oates charged the nation fifty pounds for a pretended manuscript of the Alexandrine copy of the Septuagint, which he alleged that he had given to the Jesuits in order to win their confidence!—See note (E).

CHAP. he would never grow into ease at home, or considera-  
 VI.  
 A.D. 1679. tion abroad.<sup>1</sup>

— The articles of impeachment against the Catholic peers in the Tower were at length forwarded by the  
 April 7. hands of Lord Russell to the House of Lords. This instrument charged them, that, in union with Cardinal Howard, the provincial of the Jesuits, and a number of persons, whose names were mentioned, they had conspired to imprison, depose, and murder the king, and to reduce the kingdom under the tyranny of the pope ; and that for this purpose they had employed persons to take his majesty's life, had provided men and arms, had corresponded with other conspirators beyond the sea, had accepted commissions from the pope, had caused their priests to administer oaths of secrecy, and had incited their adherents to assassinate Sir  
 April 15. Edmondbury Godfrey. The Lord Petre pleaded at once that he was not guilty ; the others that they could not be expected to answer a charge so general and uncertain, which specified neither the times when, nor the places where, the offences were supposed to be committed, and which consequently, by keeping them in ignorance, disabled them from providing witnesses, or preparing their defence. That there was much reason in this objection, can hardly be denied ; but the Commons pronounced it an evasion, and resolved to demand judgment against the four lords unless they put in a  
 April 25. different answer. They deemed it prudent to yield, and, saving to themselves the benefit of exception to the generality, uncertainty, and insufficiency of the articles, severally pleaded not guilty.<sup>2</sup>

April 24. On the preceding day had been tried, under a special

<sup>1</sup> Temple, ii. 491.

<sup>2</sup> C. Journ. April 3, 23. L. Journ. 500, 517, 521, 535, 542.

commission, and at the request of the House of Commons, Nathaniel Reading, a Protestant barrister, once secretary to Massaniello in the celebrated insurrection at Naples, but now practising the law in London. He was acquainted with Bedloe, had often given him the benefit of his advice, and occasionally supplied him with money. In Trinity term he had been employed in procuring the discharge on bail of several among the prisoners on account of the plot, and after the dissolution had been consulted on the same subject by some of the lords in the Tower. In a private conversation between Reading and Bedloe it was suggested (but from which of the two the suggestion originated is uncertain) that, in consideration of an adequate reward, the informer might pare down the evidence which he had already given, so as to render it insufficient to convict the accused of treason. For this purpose, Reading, with the concurrence of Bedloe, wrote out an amended form of testimony to be produced on the trial, took it in company with him to the Tower, and on his return delivered it to his associate. But that associate had previously betrayed him to the committee of inquiry : witnesses had been already concealed to overhear their discourse, and the paper in his writing was instantly, but secretly, transferred by him to the custody of a third person.<sup>1</sup> The fact could not

CHAP.  
VI.  
A.D. 1679.

<sup>1</sup> This account is taken from the evidence at the trial ; but Reading, after he had stood in the pillory, presented a petition to the king, stating that he had been employed by Bedloe to draw up his pardons, that by free conversation with him he discovered not only his practices against innocent men, but his design of accusing the queen, and that he had intended to disclose it to the king, when, to prevent him, Bedloe and his accomplices charged him falsely of the crime for which he had been condemned and punished ; which punishment he might have escaped if he would have turned informer against the innocent ; wherefore he prayed that he might be admitted to prove the said practice of Bedloe and his confederates.—June 4,

CHAP. VI.  
A.D. 1679. be denied. Reading sought to extenuate the offence by protesting that the first proposal came from his accuser, and that he joined in it for no other purpose than to prevent the shedding of innocent blood. He was sentenced to stand in the pillory, to pay a fine of one thousand pounds, and to suffer a year's imprisonment. Much appeared on the trial to expose the profligate character of Bedloe, but the punishment of the pillory disabled Reading from being afterwards produced as a witness to depose to his frauds and perjuries. Fortunately for the three lords, Powis, Stafford, and Petre, they had refused to send money, or to give any written promise to the informer; yet in the public mind the conviction of Reading created a strong presumption against them, accompanied with a persuasion that the attempt must have proceeded from their consciousness of guilt. It must be confessed that in ordinary times, when justice is fairly administered, such an inference is obvious; but it is not warranted in cases where innocence can afford no protection against the perjuries of witnesses and the prejudices of the court and jury. The accused foresaw that, if Bedloe were permitted to give his evidence, their lives would be sacrificed; it is no wonder, then, if they were willing to purchase his silence with money, the only object which he sought by becoming an informer.<sup>1</sup>

1679. To this petition no answer was returned.—From a copy of the petition in the handwriting of Lord Viscount Stafford, now in the possession of Lord Stafford.

<sup>1</sup> State Trials, vii. 259—310. In answer to the questions put by Reading, Bedloe was compelled to acknowledge that he had intended, and even made preparations, to burn the city of Westminster; but that offence, he maintained, was covered by the king's pardon. He confessed also that he had been guilty of perjury on the trial of Whitbread, in swearing that he knew nothing of consequence against that



Ever since the short prorogation, the king had been occupied in devising and arranging a most important change in the administration of the government. The exile of his brother and the disgrace of Danby had left him without an adviser to whom he dared unbosom himself with freedom and confidence. He had sent for Temple from the Hague to succeed Coventry as secretary of state. But Temple feared the responsibility of such an office in the excited state of the public mind, and suggested to the king to govern for the future without a prime minister, or cabinet council, or committee for foreign affairs; to dissolve the present council of state, consisting of fifty members, as being too numerous for secrecy or despatch; to establish in its place a new council of thirty individuals, to whom all public affairs should be referred, and by whose opinion the proceedings of government should be regulated; to give a place in this council to fifteen officers of state in virtue of their respective employments; to select the other fifteen from the popular leaders in the two houses; and to take care that the annual income of the thirty counsellors should amount to three hundred thousand pounds, that it might bear some proportion to that of the House of Commons, which was estimated at four hundred thousand pounds. It was expected that the following benefits would be derived from this institution: 1. The determined hostility of the popular party would in all probability be neutralized by the infusion of their leaders into the new council. 2. In

Jesuit; but this he attributed to the persuasion of Reading. The fact was, he meant now to appear as a witness at the second trial of Whitbread, and invented this answer as an excuse for the contradiction which would then appear in his testimony.—*Ibid.* 271, 291, 294, 296.

CHAP.  
VI.  
A.D. 1679.  
—

CHAP. VI. the event of a rupture between the House of Commons  
 A.D. 1679. and the court, the authority of the first would be  
 — balanced by the contrary authority of a body almost  
 equal in point of property; for it was assumed as a  
 political axiom that influence always accompanies pro-  
 perty; 3. and the king would be still secure of the  
 ascendancy in the council, because he might at all  
 times command the votes of the fifteen officers of  
 state, who depended on his pleasure for the possession  
 of their respective employments.<sup>1</sup>

When this had been determined with Temple,  
 Charles called in the lord chancellor, the earl of Sun-  
 derland, who had succeeded Williamson as second  
 secretary of state, and the earl of Essex, who by the  
 interest of Monmouth had been placed at the head of  
 the treasury. The first difficulty in the nomination of  
 the new counsellors arose from the mention of Lord  
 Halifax. To him the king expressed the strongest  
 dislike; nor was his consent extorted without repeated  
 and most earnest entreaties. Immediately, to their  
 surprise, he himself proposed the Lord Shaftesbury,  
 alleging, as the reason, that Shaftesbury had it in his  
 power to be still more mischievous than Halifax; and,  
 when they objected that he would never be content  
 to sit down as one among thirty, Charles replied that  
 he should be president of the council.<sup>2</sup> Temple was  
 silenced by the authority of the king and the approba-  
 April 20. tion of his three colleagues, and the new council was  
 instituted, containing, besides the officers of state, two  
 lords from each rank in the peerage, the dukes of

<sup>1</sup> Temple, ii. 493, 495, 554.

<sup>2</sup> Temple does not attempt to account for this choice on the part  
 of the king; perhaps it may be explained by the remark of James,  
 that "he thought to keep Shaftesbury from doing him hurt by keep-  
 ing him in his service."—James (Memoirs), i. 558.

Albemarle and Newcastle, the marquesses of Winches-  
 ter and Worcester, the earls of Salisbury and Bridge-  
 water, the viscounts Falconberg and Halifax, and the  
 lords Robartes and Holles; and in addition to Temple  
 himself, the lords Russell and Cavendish, with Sey-  
 mour, the late speaker, and Powle, from the House of  
 Commons.<sup>1</sup> Charles deemed the event of sufficient  
 importance to announce it in a set speech to both  
 houses of parliament. In the city and the country the  
 intelligence excited the most tumultuous joy, which  
 was testified by bonfires, and the usual manifesta-  
 tions of national triumph; and in Holland and Flan-  
 ders it was hailed as the harbinger of a reconciliation  
 between the king and his people, which would enable  
 England to oppose an effectual barrier to the ambi-  
 tious projects still attributed to the king of France.  
 There were, however, many who looked on it with  
 very different feelings. The Catholics anticipated the  
 aggravation of their present miseries; the most loyal  
 of the old Cavaliers believed that the king had deli-  
 vered himself bound and gagged into the hands of his  
 enemies, and the duke of York from Brussels foretold  
 the downfall of the monarchy, or the horrors of a  
 second civil war. But what created universal sur-  
 prise, was the air of sullen indifference with which the  
 announcement was received by the House of Com-  
 mons. The other leaders thought themselves entitled  
 to a seat in the new council as much as their col-  
 leagues. They declared that they did not understand

CHAP.  
 VI.  
 A.D. 1679.

April 21.

<sup>1</sup> See their names and offices in Courtenay's Mem. of Temple, ii. 38. Of the officers of state, Shaftesbury president of the council, Monmouth master of the horse, Essex first lord of the treasury, and his brother Capel first lord of the admiralty, belonged to the opposition; and of the ten peers, if we may judge from the signatures to the protests in the journals, Winchester, Salisbury, Falconberg, Halifax, and Holles.

CHAP. VI. the measure : it was probably an artifice of the court  
 A.D. 1679. to lull them into a fatal security ; it would be advisable  
 — to suspend their judgment till time had shown in what manner the new system would work. It soon appeared that Capel, Cavendish, and Powle, by their greater moderation, had forfeited the confidence of the house : Lord Russell, who continued to speak with his usual warmth, alone retained his former influence.<sup>1</sup>

The alteration had certainly been wrung from the king by the necessity of his situation. But though he was prepared to make the most painful sacrifices for the purpose of appeasing the jealousies of the nation, he had resolved to be, and to show that he would be, the master. One of the first measures recommended by the new counsellors was to weed out of office, and in particular out of the courts of law, and the commission of lieutenancy and the peace, all persons suspected of a secret leaning to popery. A new board of admiralty was already appointed, four of the twelve judges were displaced, when Charles persuaded himself that the real object was to remove from power all the real friends of the crown. He took his seat at the board, called for the rolls, and, wherever he found the name of a "bad man to be removed," assigned in his favour some reason so very ludicrous and inappropriate, as to convince the council that he came there not to argue the question, but to be obeyed. This policy succeeded ; and after a few meetings the attempt was abandoned.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Temple, ii. 497, 556. C. Journ. April 21. L. Journ. 530. Dalrymple, 216, 217. "Tho' great patriots before in the esteem of both houses, most of them began to lose their credit with both ; "so true it is, there is no wearing the court and country livery together."—Reresby, 89. Sidney's Letters, 16, 50.

<sup>2</sup> Temple, 557. North, 77. "He found some jocular reason to

The unexpected elevation of Shaftesbury had increased the power without mitigating the hostility of that nobleman. It was supposed by his adherents that he owed his good fortune to the favour of Monmouth, and that the counsels of Monmouth had now that weight with the sovereign which report had formerly attributed to those of the duke of York. Hence the agitator had little difficulty in persuading the popular party that Charles was not unwilling to concede the exclusion of his brother, but that he would rather have it appear to be extorted from him by the importunity of the house, than to be offered spontaneously by himself.<sup>1</sup> The plan of proceeding was arranged with Shaftesbury's usual ingenuity. A report from one of the committees informed the house of a recent attempt of the papists to burn the capital by setting fire to a press in one of the houses in Fetter-lane.<sup>2</sup> It was immediately contended that these eternal enemies of Protestantism had not abandoned their flagitious designs, though so many of their agents had been convicted and executed; that the life of the king was daily in the most imminent danger; and

CHAP.  
VI.  
A.D. 1679.

April 26.

"let him stand; as that he was a good cocker, understood hunting, kept a good house, had good chines of beef, or kept good fox hounds, or some such indifferent matter that it was ridiculous to contradict or dispute upon."—*Ibid.* 78.

<sup>1</sup> Temple, ii. 498.

<sup>2</sup> A servant maid confessed that she had been induced to set fire to the press by one Stubbs, who had endeavoured to pervert her, and had promised her a reward of 5*l*. Stubbs confessed that he had been hired by Gifford, his confessor, who said that it was no sin, and promised him 100*l*. reward out of the moneys belonging to the church; he added that two Irishmen were to feed the conflagration with fire-balls, that the English, Irish, and French papists in London would form a large army, and that the king of France had sixty thousand men ready to land to their assistance.—*C. Journ.* April 26. This absurd tale served its purpose for the moment, and was then suffered to be forgotten.

CHAP. VI. that his fall would be inevitably followed by the con-  
 A.D. 1679. flagration of the city, the massacre of the orthodox  
 — inhabitants, and the ascendancy of popery and arbitrary power. At the same time information was conveyed to the committee of secrecy, that several bodies of French troops had been ordered to march to the coast, to be placed under the command of the duke of York, for the purpose of making a descent in England; and, when the minds of the members were sufficiently excited by these reports and harangues, votes were moved and carried to provide means for the security of the royal person and of the Protestant religion; to address the king for the revocation of all licenses granted to papists to reside in the capital; to order for execution Pickering, who had obtained a respite, and all priests who had been convicted of having exercised their functions within the realm; to send by the Lord Russell to the House of Lords for their concurrence a resolution that "the duke of York's being a "papist and the hope of his coming to the crown had "given the greatest countenance and encouragement "to the conspiracies and designs of the papists;" and to prepare for the information of the house an abstract of all the evidence which tended in any manner to affect that prince.<sup>1</sup> Charles, aware of the real object of these votes, thought it time to interfere, and to moderate by concession the violence of the party. He proposed in the council to enact that, in the event of a Catholic succeeding to the throne, all presentations to church livings should be taken from him and vested in Protestant trustees; that the parliament in existence at the time of the last king's demise should con-

<sup>1</sup> James, i. 546. Com. Journ. April 26, 27. Parl. Hist. iv. 1125. Alg. Sydney's Letters, 36.

tinue to sit, or, if none were then sitting, the latest parliament that sat should re-assemble; and that no judges, no members of the council, no lord-lieutenants or their deputies, and no officers of the navy, should be appointed or displaced but by authority of parliament. Shaftesbury declared against such expedients; they were an attempt to bind Samson with withes; they were shackles from which any king might disengage himself without difficulty. But the majority of his colleagues expressed their approbation, and the chancellor in the presence of the king laid the plan before the two houses.<sup>1</sup> The Lords returned an address of thanks; the Commons passed to the order of the day, and attended to the report of the committee appointed to search for evidence against the duke. It stated on the authority of Coleman's letters that he had corresponded with the pope; that his first communication was lost on the way; that the second drew tears of joy from the pontiff; and that in the third he excused the consent which he had given to the marriage of his daughter with the Protestant prince of Orange. This report provoked an order to prepare a bill for his exclusion from the English throne, and a vote that the members would stand by his majesty with their lives and fortunes, and "if he should come by a violent death, would revenge his death to the utmost upon the papists."<sup>2</sup>

The bill of exclusion provided that, "whereas the emissaries, priests, and agents of the pope had se-

<sup>1</sup> Temple, ii. 501. James (Memoirs), 548. L. Journ. 547. C. Journ. April 30. Temple joined Shaftesbury in the council, but on a different ground; that, if such restraints were imposed on a Catholic king, they would never be shaken off by his Protestant successors.—Temple, 502.

<sup>2</sup> C. Journ. May 11. Reresby, 89. Sydney's Letters, 65, 68.

CHAP. VI. "duced James duke of York to the communion of the  
 A.D. 1679. "church of Rome, and prevailed on him to enter into  
 — "negotiations with the pope and his nuncios, and to  
 "advance the power and greatness of the French  
 "king, to the end that by the descent of the crown  
 "upon a papist, and by foreign alliances, they might  
 "be able to succeed in their wicked designs, the said  
 "James should be incapable of inheriting the crowns  
 "of England and Ireland; that on the demise of his  
 "majesty without heirs of his body, his dominions  
 "should devolve, as if the duke of York were also  
 "dead, on that person next in succession who had  
 "always professed the Protestant religion established  
 "by law; that if the duke of York, who was then  
 "in foreign parts, should ever return into these  
 "dominions, he should be, and was thereby attainted  
 "of high treason; and that if any one, during the  
 "king's life or afterwards, should aid or counsel the  
 "said duke, or should correspond with him either  
 "within or without the realm, or endeavour his re-  
 "turn, or pronounce him the lawful heir, every such  
 "person so offending should be adjudged guilty of  
 "high treason."<sup>1</sup>

In support of this measure it was argued, 1. That the legislative power residing in the parliament was entire and supreme, extending to all matters of policy, and uncontrollable by former enactments; whence it followed that the present parliament was as capable of revising, modifying, repealing laws, and consequently of regulating the succession to the crown, as any preceding parliament by which that succession had been established: 2. That the great end of

<sup>1</sup> Narrative of divers remarkable Proceedings in the last Sessions, p. 20. London, 1679.



government was the common welfare, and that it was therefore the duty of parliament to exclude the duke of York, if it could be shown that such exclusion was necessary to the safety of the nation: 3. That the great inducement to the papists to attempt the assassination of the king, the conflagration of the capital, and the destruction of the Protestant religion, was the knowledge that the duke was the next heir to the crown; which inducement, and with it the dangers which it threatened, would by that bill be taken away: 4. That the preservation of the Protestant religion required the exclusion of a prince who would deem himself bound in conscience to labour for its subversion: 5. That he had in fact disabled himself; for the king by law was head of the church; and the duke could not take upon himself to be that head, because he professed to believe that the supremacy resided in the pope.

The duke's advocates replied, 1. That there were certain fundamental laws, such as the law of Magna Charta, and the law of succession, which no parliament was competent to alter: 2. That the houses had no right to commit injustice: the crown was the inheritance of the duke; it belonged to him as truly as the inheritance of an entailed estate belonged to the next in the entail; that to deprive him of it was to punish; and to punish without charge or trial, was contrary to justice: 3. That the dangers to the Protestant religion, anticipated from the government of the duke, were not necessarily connected with the succession, because they might be obviated by the adoption of the expedients which the king had suggested: 4. That the exclusion itself presented dangers of a very formidable nature: the Scottish would not

CHAP.  
VI.  
A.D. 1679.

CHAP. submit to the dictation of the English parliament:  
 VI.  
 A.D. 1679. James would still succeed to the crown of Scotland;

— he was a brave and persevering prince; he would undoubtedly claim his right by force of arms; he would find a strong party within the realm, and powerful aid from without; and if he were to obtain the crown by conquest, the Protestant religion would be exposed to greater danger than if he should succeed in the proper course, and under the limitations which had been recommended from the throne.<sup>1</sup> The great struggle between the parties was reserved for the second reading, preparatory to which the committee of secrecy made its report. Out of the immense mass of papers seized in consequence of the plot, sixty-four letters had been selected: extracts from these, or the substance of certain passages in them, were collected under separate heads; and this collection was read to the house as satisfactory proof of the dangerous designs attributed to the duke. A division followed, and the bill was passed by a majority of seventy-nine.<sup>2</sup>

May 21.

This result cast a deep gloom over the cause of the duke of York; but his adversaries forfeited by their

<sup>1</sup> C. Journ. May 15, 21. Burnet, ii. 203. Reresby, 90, 91. Parl. Hist. 1131, 1136. "Two days after the committal of the "bill," says Reresby, "I was at the king's *couchée*, and wondered "to see him quite cheerful amidst such an intricacy of troubles, but "it was not in his nature to think or perplex himself much about "anything" (95).

<sup>2</sup> A copy was sent to the Lords, and afterwards the collection was published for the information of the people, under the title of "The "Popish Damnable plot against our Religion and Liberties fairly "laid open and discovered in the Breviats of Threescore and Four "Letters, &c., 1680." To an impartial reader, these breviats will not offer a shadow of proof, though men whose passions were already inflamed saw in them, with the aid of the accompanying comment, much that wore such an appearance. The numbers on the division were two hundred and seven and one hundred and twenty-eight.—Journals, May 21.

imprudence the benefit of their victory. They pursued too many objects at once; they were embarrassed and retarded by the necessity of dividing their attention, which was incessantly called from the bill of exclusion to the impeachment of Danby and the Catholic lords, and to the angry disputes which speedily grew out of those impeachments. 1. The Commons, with the speaker at their head, proceeded in a body to the House of Lords, and demanded judgment against the earl of Danby; but the Lords, on his petition, assigned to him a day to show, with the aid of counsel, the validity of his pardon, and the Commons, in a moment of irritation, passed a vote that if any commoner, without the permission of their house, should speak in support of that pardon, he should be accounted a betrayer of the liberties of Englishmen. 2. It was observed that, in all questions connected with the impeachment of Danby, the crown, with the aid of the prelates, could rely on a majority in the House of Lords; and to deprive it of that majority, the new doctrine was set forth, that the bishops had no right to sit and vote on the trials of peers in capital cases. Its advocates maintained that the prelates, though lords of parliament, were not the peers or equals of the temporal lords, for the following reasons: 1. They sat in parliament only as the actual possessors of certain ecclesiastical benefices: they did not come there by inheritance; neither could they transmit their seats to their descendants: 2. There was no instance of a bishop since the Reformation having been tried by the House of Lords; all such trials had been by a jury of commoners; commoners were then their peers, and of course *they* could not be the peers of the temporal lords: 3. It

CHAP.  
VI.  
A.D. 1679.

May 5.

May 6.

May 9.

CHAP. VI. was admitted that they never voted on judgment of death; now the final judgment often depends on the preliminary proceedings, whence it followed that they ought not to vote on such preliminary proceedings. It was answered that in the ancient rolls of parliament, the spiritual lords were styled peers of the realm no less than the temporal lords; the only difference admitted between them was, that in one case the peerage was personal, and transmitted by succession to the benefice, in the other hereditary, and transmitted to the heirs of the body: and that if they had not voted in cases of blood, it was not because they had no right in law, but because, in conformity with the canons of the church, they had waived their claim. The lords decided that the bishops had a right "to stay in court in capital cases, till judgment of death came to be pronounced;" that is, "till the question of guilty or not guilty were put." That this decision was in strict accordance with the constitution, cannot be doubted, but its propriety was questioned by the Commons;<sup>1</sup> pamphlets of the most defamatory description were published, and the chief among the prelates expressed a wish to abandon the contest. When orders were given for the trial of the lords in the Tower, the bishops asked leave to withdraw after the usual protestation; but the king insisted that they should at least be present and vote at the trial of the validity of Danby's pardon. His prerogative, he observed, was at stake, and experience must have taught them

<sup>1</sup> L. Journ. 570, 572. It was in conformity with the eleventh of the constitutions of Clarendon that the bishops, in virtue of their baronies, are bound to be present till "sentence is about to be pronounced of life or limb."

that their interest was closely bound up with that of the sovereign ; the debasement of the crown would be quickly followed by that of the mitre. The Commons persisted in demanding that the trial of the pardon should precede that of the five lords, and that the bishops should be excluded from such trial ; but their efforts were fruitless ; the Lords repeatedly adhered to their former vote.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
VI.  
—  
A.D. 1679.

May 23.

May 27.

The attempts of Shaftesbury to create embarrassment and confusion, through the agency of his adherents in the House of Commons, provoked a suspicion in his colleagues of the council, even those of his own party, that his real object was to place himself with Monmouth, whom he governed, at the head of the administration. He now brought into play a new engine, the secret committee of the House of Commons, which, in its endeavour to affix the charge of bribery and corruption on the late treasurer, had traced the annual payment of numerous sums under the denomination of the king's bounty, and of secret service money, to several members of the late parliament. The intermediate agents were Bertie, an officer in the excise, and Fox, treasurer of the navy. The first refused to answer the committee without the royal permission ; the second, a member of the house, was ordered to proceed to Whitehall in the custody of three of his colleagues, and to bring back to the house his books, notes, and acquittances. But the king did not sit tamely down under the insult ; they had come to search his palace without his permission, and the lord chamberlain by his order commanded them in courteous but peremptory language to with-

May 23.

<sup>1</sup> C. Journ. May 15, 26. L. Journ. 575, 577, 580, 584 586, 587, 590, 594.

CHAP. draw without the expected prize. On their return a  
 VI.  
 A.D. 1679. list of the members of the last parliament was put  
 — into the hands of Fox; he was asked to which of  
 those persons he had ever paid any sum of money,  
 and he named seven-and-twenty individuals, many of  
 whom immediately rose, and declared that their pen-  
 sions had been granted to them in exchange for  
 offices or beneficial interests which they had resigned  
 May 24. to the king. The house resumed the subject the  
 next morning, and, having ordered the attendance of  
 witnesses, adjourned the debate for three days.<sup>1</sup>

Enough had occurred to convince the king that  
 concession served only to inflame the hopes and em-  
 bolden the efforts of Shaftesbury and his adherents.  
 He already thought of a prorogation to prevent the  
 prosecution of this new inquiry, when he received  
 advice that an address of thanks to the Commons was  
 circulated for signature in the city, and that a re-  
 monstrance of a most inflammatory tendency was  
 already prepared in one of the committees. His  
 resolution was instantly formed; that the document  
 might not be made public, he concealed his purpose  
 May 27. from the council; and, sending unexpectedly for the  
 Commons, prorogued the parliament for the term of  
 ten weeks. It was a sudden and unforeseen stroke to  
 the popular party. At first they stood mute with  
 astonishment; in a few minutes they gave vent to  
 their indignation, and Shaftesbury declared, before he  
 left the house, that the advisers of the measure should  
 pay for their presumption with their heads.<sup>2</sup>

There remains, however, to be noticed, what has  
 since proved the most important event of this session.

<sup>1</sup> C. Journ. May 23, 24. Parl. Hist. iv. 1136—1148.

<sup>2</sup> L. Journ. xiii. 595. Temple, ii. 504. Reresby, 96.

The writ of *habeas corpus* had been provided by the common law as a remedy against illegal imprisonment; but the benefits which it promised were gradually impaired and reduced by the ingenuity of lawyers and the oppression of men in power. The judges assumed the right of granting or refusing the writ at discretion; the sheriffs and keepers invented pretexts to elude obedience; and the privy council hesitated not to send an obnoxious individual into some of the king's foreign dominions, and consequently beyond the jurisdiction of the courts. These abuses had been frequently exposed and lamented; and in almost every session of parliament, after the administration of Lord Clarendon, attempts to remove them had been made; but bill after bill was lost, frequently by the marked opposition of the court, frequently in consequence of dissensions between the houses, and of successive prorogations. If it passed in the last session, it is chiefly to the exertions of Shaftesbury that we are indebted for the benefit; a benefit so indispensable for the security of personal liberty, that it may be thought to atone for much that was unjust and disgraceful in the career of that celebrated statesman. Its success depended on the result of a conference between the two houses; they fortunately agreed; and the king, who waited the return of the managers, gave the royal assent to the bill immediately before the prorogation. It made the granting of the writ, and the acceptance of bail for offences bailable by law, imperative on the chancellor and the judges even during the time of vacation; it took away all pretexts of disobedience on the part of officers holding persons in custody; it provided for the speedy trial or discharge of prisoners committed for

CHAP.  
VI.  
A.D. 1679.

---

CHAP. VI.  
A.D. 1679. felony or treason; and it abolished the practice of sending persons out of the country, and consequently out of the jurisdiction of the courts, by making such expatriation an offence subject to the most rigorous penalties, and rendering the offender incapable of receiving pardon from the sovereign. Still (so powerful was the influence of prejudice) care was taken to exclude all persons imprisoned in consequence of the plot from the benefit of the act, by limiting its operation to such commitments as should take place after the first day of the month of June.<sup>1</sup>

But from England our attention is now called to Scotland, which was still the theatre of civil and religious dissension. The Covenanters, particularly in the western counties, continued to defy the authority of the law; their obstinacy, partly through motives of interest, partly through attachment to the kirk, was countenanced and supported by the lords who professed themselves enemies to Lauderdale; and the resistance of the people provoked the government to acts of vigour, which, if all that is related of them be true, betrayed an equal disregard both of the rights of the subject and the claims of humanity. Yet the historian who seeks to review these transactions with impartiality will generally find himself at a loss to determine what he ought to believe and what to reject. On the one hand, the accusers are personal enemies, or men actuated by the wildest and most implacable fanaticism; on the other, the trial of Mitchell disclosed, on the part of Lauderdale and his associates, a scene of prevarication and depravity which inclines the mind to give credit to whatever

<sup>1</sup> Parl. Hist. iv. 661, 1148. Stat. 31 Car. II. c. 2. By the 56 of Geo. III. this act has been considerably improved.



may be alleged to their prejudice. Mitchell, the reader will recollect, was the man who made the attempt on the life of Archbishop Sharp. For some years he wandered through Holland and England; at length he returned to Edinburgh, married, and rented a small shop underneath the very lodging of that prelate. It happened one day that the eyes of Sharp met those of Mitchell; he thought that he recognised the features of the assassin; the object of his suspicion was apprehended, and on the person of the prisoner were found a small sword, and a pistol loaded with three bullets. At first he denied the charge; but having, in a private conference, received from Rothes, the chancellor, a promise of life, he repeatedly acknowledged his guilt in presence of the council. When, however, he understood that it was still intended to punish him with the amputation of his hand and imprisonment for life, he revoked his confession; and the council in return, by an act entered in their register, revoked their promise.<sup>1</sup> The lord advocate accordingly indicted the prisoner; but whether it was that he distrusted the force of his proofs, or that he yielded to the desire of Sharp, who refused to prosecute unto death, he deserted the diet, and Mitchell remained three years a prisoner in the Bass. In 1677 he was again summoned before the council, interrogated as to his participation in the rising on the Pentland Hills, and subjected to the torture of

CHAP.  
VI.  
A.D. 1679.

1674.  
Feb. 10.

March 12.

<sup>1</sup> "He did altogether refuse to adhere to his said confessions, notwithstanding he was told . . . that if he would adhere, he should have the benefit of the said assurance, and if otherways, he should lose the same. Therefore the lords commissioners . . . do declare that they are free, and that the said Mr. James ought not to have the benefit of any such promise or assurance."—Act of Council in State Trials, vi. 1259.

CHAP. VI. one leg in the boot.<sup>1</sup> He persisted in his refusal to  
 A.D. 1677. answer, and was again remanded. But the archbishop  
 Jan. 24. had to fear for his life from the fanaticism of others  
 as well as of Mitchell. There were many who be-  
 lieved that they had a clear call from God to execute  
 the justice of the Lord on the traitor, who for so  
 many years had wrung his hands in the blood of the  
 November. saints; "the Judas who sold the kirk of Christ for  
 "an annual rent of fifty thousand marks."<sup>2</sup> It was  
 probably to intimidate such religionists that the coun-  
 cil ordered the advocate-general to prosecute Mitchell  
 for his original offence of attempting the life of the  
 1678. archbishop. By the court of justiciary two questions  
 Jan. 9. were previously decided, that a confession before the  
 council could not be withdrawn, because it was not  
 extrajudicial, and that if any promise were made to  
 induce the accused to confess, that promise must be  
 fulfilled, because the benefit of the contract was not  
 to be taken without payment of the consideration.  
 Jan. 10. The jury found, on his confession, that he was guilty  
 of the offence, and on the testimony of Lauderdale,  
 the archbishop, the lord chancellor, and Hatton, that  
 no assurance of life had been given. Mitchell re-  
 Jan. 18. ceived judgment, and died, justifying the attempt for  
 which he suffered, from the command of Moses to  
 put to death the false prophet, who should turn the  
 people from the worship of the Lord God.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The torture of the boot is thus described in two original letters in my possession. *Sunt ocreæ hæ equulei genus crudelissimum, quo tibie hominis qui torquetur, arctissime restringuntur, quoad usque ad sanguinis et medullæ effusionem.* 30 Jul. 1611.—Crucifragiorum tortura, qua, ossibus confractis, medullam a planta pedis exprimunt. 13 Jan. 1615.

<sup>2</sup> Russell, at the end of Kirkton, 415.

<sup>3</sup> State Trials, vi. 1207, 1262. Fountainhall, note to Kirkton, 384, 387. Wodrow, 375, 512, 514, 519; App. 195, 204. Ellis, Orig. Letters, series ii. vol. iv. 49, 55. Burnet, ii. 125, 132.

This execution, instead of diffusing a salutary terror, acted as a stimulus to revenge. It taught the people to look on the four lords who gave evidence on the trial, not only as persecutors, but as false witnesses, who had not hesitated to perjure themselves, that they might shed the blood of their victim. It is, indeed, impossible to doubt that a promise of life had been given. It was asserted by the sufferer with his last breath ; it was recorded by Lord Hatton in his private and confidential correspondence ; it stood enregistered among the acts of the council ; and yet the four lords positively swore that they knew nothing of any promise, or of any warrant for such promise. Did they by subtle and unmeaning evasions seek to silence their own consciences, and impose on the good faith of the assize ? Even on this hypothesis their conduct will deserve the execration of every honest man.<sup>1</sup>

The boldness assumed by the Covenanters in the west, and the success with which they had resisted every attempt to suppress their meetings, provoked the council to adopt the most powerful means of reducing them to obedience. A committee of eleven persons was appointed to proceed to the refractory districts, accompanied by two thousand men, partly regulars and partly militia ; there they were joined by six thousand Highlanders under their respective chiefs ; and, to be ready in case of rebellion, an English force was drawn towards the borders, and an Irish force was stationed opposite the western coast of Scotland. The commissioners called before them and punished delinquents, apprehended suspected persons, disarmed all the inhabitants but noblemen, gentlemen of quality, and officers in the service of the crown, and

CHAP.  
VI.  
A.D. 1678.

Jan. 18.

Jan. 28.

<sup>1</sup> See State Trials, vi. 1258, 1263 ; Burnet, ii. 299, note.

CHAP. VI. summoned the heritors and feuars to subscribe bonds  
A.D. 1678. of conformity for themselves and their families.

—  
Feb. 14. Multitudes, however, refused to obey; their contumacy was punished by an act of council requiring the recusants to give law-burrows, or legal security for keeping the peace; and, with a view to enforce submission, the troops were permitted to live at free-quarters, fines were imposed, property was distrained, and judgments of outlawry were published. The fierce and predatory habits of the Highlanders had always been subjects of terror to the more civilized natives of the lowlands; but those formidable auxiliaries were soon dismissed; and in their place a permanent force of militia was distributed in numerous small garrisons through the disaffected counties. For  
1679.  
Feb. 18. its support a convention of estates granted an aid of thirty thousand pounds sterling for three years, to be levied by monthly assessments, after the plan originally introduced under the commonwealth; and Lauderdale, having obtained the approbation of the king, exhorted the council to persevere in their exertions, and to subdue by force those whom they could not allure by conciliation.<sup>1</sup>

July 10.

The men of Fife on the eastern coast did not yield to their western brethren in attachment to the covenant; neither did they suffer less for their contumacy from the severity of the council. Among them was James Russell of Kettle, whose fanaticism had been inflamed by persecution, till he mistook the cravings of revenge for the "outlettings of the spirit." During a

<sup>1</sup> Kirkton, 385—393. Wodrow, 460, 463, 466, 467, 528; App. 174, 208. Burnet, ii. 134. It is remarked by the editor of Kirkton, that, notwithstanding all the complaints made of the conduct of the Highlanders, not one Whig lost his life by them.—Kirkton, 391. The only blood spilt was spilt by the Covenanters.

fortnight he spent much of his time in prayer ; he felt that he was destined to render some extraordinary service to God ; and he renewed his former engagements against papists and prelatists, and all other enemies of Christ. Under the influence of these feelings he sought the company of similar enthusiasts ; consultations were held to prevent the extinction of the gospel ; and it was declared a duty to put to death their chief adversaries, the archbishop of St. Andrew's and Carmichel, commissioner from the council, and commander of the forces. With this view nine of the brethren, having Hackston of Rathillet for their leader, undertook to surprise the latter while he was enjoying his favourite amusement of hunting ; but a friendly voice admonished him of his danger, and by a timely flight he escaped from the field to his garrison in Cupar.<sup>1</sup> The saints were employed in lamenting the disappointment, when a boy, pointing to a carriage with six horses at a distance, cried out, "There goes the bishop !" "Truly," they exclaimed, "this is of God ; the Lord has delivered the wretch into our hands ; we must not go backwards, but execute the justice of God." "Gentlemen," said Rathillet, "I am ready to venture all that I have for the interest of Christ ; but I will not lead you to this action ; for I am the personal enemy of the bishop, and shall be accused of seeking revenge ; but I will not prevent you from obeying the call of God, neither will I leave your company." "Then, sirs, follow me,"

CHAP. VI.  
A.D. 1679.

April 8, 18,  
22, 29.

May 2.

May 3.

<sup>1</sup> It is deponed also that at parting, when one of them kissed "Rob. Black's wife" (the meeting was in their house), "she prayed that God might bless and prosper them, and added these words : "If Long Leslie" (the minister at Ceres) "be with him, lay him on the green also ; to which the ruffian answered, holding up his hand, There is the hand that shall do it."—Russ. 413, note.

CHAP. VI. exclaimed John Balfour, a most desperate and bar-  
 A.D. 1679. barous enthusiast; and instantly mounting their  
 — horses, they crossed Magus-muir, in pursuit of their  
 victim.<sup>1</sup>

Their approach was soon announced to the prelate, who, turning to his daughter Isabel, his only companion, said, "The Lord have mercy on me, my dear child, for I am gone." The coachman lashed his horses to their utmost speed; but the ruffians overtook them, discharged their pistols into the carriage, wounded the postillion, and cut the traces. Sharp had received but a slight injury from the shot; and Russell at the door cried to him, "Judas, come forth." A short parley ensued. The prelate declared that he had wronged no man; he offered them money, and promised them a pardon: they replied, that they bore him no private malice, but God had imposed on them a duty which they dared not transgress; his time was come; he must make himself ready for death, judgment, and eternity. His daughter alighted with him; both fell on their knees, and the archbishop most piteously begged for mercy, if not for himself, at least for his poor child. Guillon, one of the number, but the meanest among them, was moved with pity: he cried, "Spare those gray hairs," and solicited, but in vain, the interposition of Rathillet, who stood near, muffled in his cloak. Isabel was in no danger except from her efforts to save her father: the prelate offered his hand to one of the ruffians, who with a blow of his sword nearly severed it from the arm; and Balfour aimed a stroke at his head, which, though partly broken by the hat, inflicted a severe wound along the cheek. He fell on his face, and lay apparently dead; but, his

<sup>1</sup> See Russell's own account at the end of Kirkton, 403—416.

daughter incautiously remarking that life was in him still, the words caught the ears of Russell, who was employed in rifling the carriage. The assassin immediately returned to the body, hacked the skull into fragments, and ordered the servants to take away their priest, and convey him to his home.<sup>1</sup> It might have been expected that the perpetrators of the bloody deed would flee from the vengeance of the law; but they only withdrew to a neighbouring cottage, where they devoted several hours to prayer, first in common, and afterwards separately, and in private. They felt no fear, no compunction; their minds were composed, their hearts enlarged; they blessed their God, that his holy Spirit had led them step by step to the accomplishment of this glorious work, and solicited his grace and strength, that they might, if it were necessary, seal its truth with their blood, as became valiant soldiers of Christ. Nor were their prayers poured forth in vain: Danziel heard a supernatural voice saying, "Well done, good and faithful servants!" and from that moment till the hour of his death (it happened in the course of the month) the soul of the enthusiast was rapt in a transport of joy.<sup>2</sup>

To discover the assassins the council offered the most tempting rewards, and compelled all the inhabitants of Fife to appear on stated days, and clear themselves before their respective presbyteries. But the men whom they sought had wound their way by a circuitous route into the west, and at Glasgow their

CHAP.  
VI.  
A.D. 1679.

May 21,  
23, 27, 30.

<sup>1</sup> See the several accounts of this murder by authority, by the actors, by Russell, and by the archbishop's brother, in Wodrow, ii. 28, 29, 30, 31; App. 8; Russell, 416, and 419—422, note, 483; Ralph, 458, note. "One of these hellish rascals cut my sister in the thumb, when she had him by the bridal, begging her father's life."—Letter from William Sharp, May 10.

<sup>2</sup> I repeat almost the very words of Russell himself, 422, 426.

CHAP. VI. leaders met Hamilton, Cargill, and Spreul. The two  
 A.D. 1679. last were ministers of the most rigid notions and most  
 — daring fanaticism; Hamilton was a young man of  
 May 26. family, who had repeatedly exhorted his brethren to  
 draw the sword in support of the gospel of Christ.

May 29. According to appointment, on the 29th of May, the  
 anniversary of the king's restoration, they entered, to  
 the number of sixty men in arms and on horseback,  
 the little burgh of Rutherglen, and extinguished the  
 bonfires kindled in honour of the day. A sermon and  
 prayer followed; the several acts of parliament sub-  
 versive of the liberties of the kirk were read by Hamil-  
 ton, and committed with much solemnity to the flames;  
 and the copy of a declaration or testimony against  
 them was left affixed to the cross in the market-place.<sup>1</sup>

June 1. On the following Sunday they held a field con-  
 venticle at Hairlaw, but the exercises of the day were  
 interrupted by the approach of the celebrated Graham  
 of Claverhouse, with three troops of cavalry. The  
 Covenanters hastened to meet him at Drumlog, where  
 a narrow slip of swampy ground divided the two  
 parties. The dragoons, in their attempt to pass, fell  
 into confusion; their opponents charged them with  
 halberts and pitchforks; and Graham was compelled  
 to make a precipitate retreat upon Glasgow. Of the  
 military thirty men perished in the action, besides one,  
 a prisoner, slain in cold blood by order of Hamilton,  
 who had forbidden his followers to ask, or to give  
 quarter. The conquerors lamented the loss of six of  
 their brethren, but of no one with more sincere regret  
 than of Danziel, the murderer, who cheered his last mo-  
 ments with the assured hope of an everlasting reward.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow, ii. 44. Russell, 437, 439.

<sup>2</sup> Wodrow, ii. 46. Russell, 441—446. "Russell speired and



At Rutherglen the fanatics had thrown down the gauntlet of defiance; at Drumclog they had won the laurels of victory. By most men it was believed that the conflagration would rapidly spread to every quarter of the western counties. But no plan of operations had been arranged, and the leaders despised the counsels of worldly wisdom. God had called on them for their testimony against the enemies of the kirk. They had given it, and cheerfully left the consequences to him, who was able to save with a few as well as with many. Though the council, uncertain of the extent of the danger, had withdrawn the military towards Edinburgh, the insurgents moved not to any distance from Glasgow. Volunteers, indeed, continued to arrive, for many thought it a sin to remain idle at home, while their brethren ventured their lives in the field: but the accession of numbers added only to their weakness; the new comers differed in religious opinion from the victors at Drumclog; the time, instead of being devoted to preparations for the approaching contest, was consumed in useless but irritating controversy; and both ministers and leaders spent day after day in discussing the obligations of the covenant, the lawfulness of the indulgence, and the grounds on which it was proper to rest the justice of their cause. Never was insurrection so rashly commenced, or so weakly conducted.<sup>1</sup>

In the meanwhile the duke of Monmouth, after many objections made in council, arrived from London to take the command of the royal forces, and en-

CHAP.  
VI.  
A.D. 1679.  
—  
June 2

June 18.

“said, Dear brother Will, ye many times told me ye was sure enough of heaven; have ye any doubts now? He scarcely could speak, but said, No doubts, but fully assured—fully assured.”—*Ibid.* 545.

<sup>1</sup> Russell, 448, 453—456.

CHAP. VI.  
A.D. 1679. camped with five thousand men on Bothwell-muir,  
— within two miles of the enemy. An attempt to  
June 21. negotiate was made by the more moderate among the  
Covenanters. Hamilton would consent to no message  
unless its objects were "to represent to the duke the  
"king's, his own, and his associates' rebellion against  
"God, and to desire him to lay down the weapons  
June 22. "which he had taken up against the Lord and his  
"people;" but a less offensive petition was composed  
by Welsh the minister, and presented by Hume and  
Murdoch, who received for answer that no proposals  
could be accepted from rebels in arms; if they would  
submit they might expect mercy; but that one half-  
hour only would be allowed for their final deter-  
mination.

It seems to have been the object of Monmouth to spare the insurgents, whether he had received such instructions from the king, or followed the advice of his political friends, who certainly at a later period, perhaps even now, looked for aid from the discontented in Scotland. He refused to pass the Clyde by the ford at the foot of the Aven, where no guards had been placed, and whence he might have charged the enemy in the rear; nor did he attempt to cross by Bothwell bridge, till some hours after its defence had been abandoned by Rathillet through want, as it is said, of ammunition. The Covenanters, drawn up on a neighbouring eminence, still continued to consume their time in theological controversy, but a discharge of cannon, which killed fifteen men, warned them of their danger; instantly they turned their backs to flee; above four hundred fell during the pursuit, and twelve hundred yielded themselves prisoners of war, of whom, those who promised to live peaceably were set at

liberty; the others, about two hundred and seventy, were transported as slaves across the Atlantic. Rath-  
 illet with the men of Fife returned to their own country, whence after many perilous adventures most of them escaped by sea to Holland.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP. VI.  
 A.D. 1679.

In England the fanaticism and adventures of the Scottish insurgents excited but little sensation. The attention of the public was absorbed by subjects of more immediate and commanding interest, the investigation of the pretended plot, and the punishment of the supposed conspirators. By order of the council, the two Jesuits, Whitbread and Fenwick, who on their former trial had been illegally remanded to prison, were placed at the bar with three others, Harcourt, Gavan, and Turner; and against them was marshalled a host of formidable witnesses, Oates, Bedloe, Prance, and Dugdale, once steward to Lord Aston, and now, on his dismissal from the service of that nobleman, a subordinate informer. Oates, indeed, could only repeat with a few embellishments his former story; but Bedloe felt himself at liberty to make additional disclosures; better cheer and more indulgent treatment had wonderfully improved the memory of Prance; and the situation which Dugdale held in the family of Lord Aston was supposed to have supplied him with much secret and valuable information. The prisoners rested their defence chiefly on the utter worthlessness of their accusers, particularly of Bedloe and Oates. 1. Against the first they urged that, according to his own showing, he must have perjured himself on Whitbread's former trial; nor did

June 13.

<sup>1</sup> Russell, 465—482. Wodrow, ii. 62—67. Sydney's Letters, 95—99. The "Exact Relation published by authority" differs in several particulars from the preceding authorities. See also "A History of the Rencounter at Drumclog," &c. by W. Aiton, 1821.

CHAP. VI. he attempt to deny the charge, but pleaded in excuse  
 A.D. 1679. that his prevarication at the time was necessary for the  
 — success of his intrigue with Reading ; and this plea, as far as appears from the printed copy of the proceedings, was admitted as satisfactory by the court and jury. 2. They met the testimony of Oates by pointing out its variance in several points from his former depositions before the council, the two houses of parliament, and at the preceding trials in the court of King's Bench : but the judges answered that they had not those depositions before them ; the prisoners might have indicted him for perjury ; and if they had omitted to do so, must abide by the consequences of such omission. 3. In answer to his assertion that on the 24th of April he had waited on the accused at their treasonable consult in London, they produced sixteen young men who deposed that they dined on that day in the same room with him at St. Omer, and that during the four preceding and the two following months he was never more than twenty-four hours absent from the college. To rebut this powerful attack on his veracity, Oates had provided six witnesses to swear that in the month of May they had at different times seen him in London, or some one like, or who bore his name ;<sup>1</sup> and it was argued that in judging of contradictory evidence, more credit was due to men who were Protestants, who spoke upon oath, and who were bound to deliver the truth, than to papists, unsworn, and accustomed, so it was pretended, to obtain dispensations for the utterance of falsehood. 4. Again, he had given the names of three persons, in whose company he crossed the sea to come to England.

<sup>1</sup> On the credibility of these six witnesses, see North, 293, 240 ; and State Trials, x. 1189.

Of these, one deposed in open court that he never saw Oates during the voyage, and the servants of the other two that their respective masters had not on any occasion in the months of April and May been a day absent from their places of abode on the continent. But the minds of men were still too highly excited to give due weight to such testimony; the voice of reason and innocence was stifled by passion and prejudice; the chief justice delivered his charge with his usual partiality, and the jury without hesitation returned a verdict of guilty.<sup>1</sup>

The next evening the place of these unfortunate men was occupied by Langhorne, the celebrated Catholic lawyer. His case presented an instance of extraordinary hardship. He had been committed to Newgate without any previous examination before a magistrate or the council; and, until the week preceding his trial, had been kept in solitary confinement and in complete ignorance of every passing event; yet he was now called upon to plead for his life without any other knowledge of the facts to be charged against him in evidence than what he could hastily collect from the printed narratives and the reports of his friends. The moment he appeared, the crowd received him with hooting and hisses; his witnesses were abused, beaten, and intimidated; his objections to the credibility of the informers, and his remarks on the inconsistency of their evidence, were overruled by the court; and when the foreman of the jury pronounced the verdict of guilty, it was received by the audience with loud and repeated cheers. The other five were then ranged at the side of Langhorne; Jeffreys, the recorder, pronounced on them judgment of death, and

CHAP.  
VI.  
A.D. 1679.

June 14.

<sup>1</sup> State Trials, vii. 311—418. Burnet, ii. 215.

CHAP. VI. the hall resounded a second time with the acclama-  
 A.D. 1679. tions of the spectators.<sup>1</sup>

— The Jesuits were the first who suffered. They were already tied to the gallows, and expected each moment to be launched into eternity, when their attention was awakened by cries of "A pardon, a pardon." A horse-man rode up at full speed, and delivered to the sheriff a paper which proved to be a pardon on condition that "they should acknowledge the conspiracy, and lay open what they knew thereof." With thanks to the king they replied, that it was not in their power to fulfil the condition, because they could not disclose that of which they possessed no knowledge. The piety which they displayed, and the composure with which they resigned themselves to their fate, gave additional weight to this their last declaration.<sup>2</sup>

Other arts were employed to shake the constancy of Langhorne. He received an offer of pardon, first, if he would confess himself guilty, and then, if he would make a discovery of the property of the Jesuits, with which he had become acquainted in his professional capacity. To the last proposal he assented; his

<sup>1</sup> State Trials, vii. 417—490. Burnet, ii. 218. In the life of Lord Guildford we are told, in defence of the judges, "that the prejudice was so universal and so strong that, if an apostle had spoken against it no impression would have taken place, nor had it done the prisoners any service; but on the other side not only the rabble, but even the parliament itself, had flounced at it; which consideration turned the scales of their discretion, and made those judges let a vessel drive which they could not stop, and reserve themselves for fairer opportunities. Again they said that not they but the jury were judges of the fact, and therefore they allowed Scroggs to do as he pleased" (vol. i. 327). The falsehood of these pretences was proved by the next trial. Scroggs behaved with moderation, and the accused were acquitted.

<sup>2</sup> State Trials, 490—451. Burnet, ii. 217. Challoner, ii. 404. Three other Jesuits, Mico, Nevil, and Bedingfield, died in prison; a fourth, Jenison, perished in consequence of the injury which he received from the violence of the pursuivants.

books were restored to him; and from them he extracted a statement, which was forwarded to the king. It is probable that the amount, a sum between twenty and thirty thousand pounds, fell short of expectation. In a personal interview, Shaftesbury informed him that this discovery was not thought of sufficient importance to redeem his life; he must in addition disclose the particulars of the plot, and in return for that disclosure he should receive any reward which he might ask. The honesty of Langhorne withstood the temptation, and he suffered the punishment of a traitor, asserting like the others his total ignorance of the conspiracy.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
VI.  
A.D. 1679.

July 14.

Still the thirst for blood was not satisfied; and four other prisoners, Sir George Wakeman, the queen's physician, and Corker, Marshall, and Rumby, Benedictine monks, received notice of trial. They came, however, to the bar under more favourable circumstances than those who had preceded them. The testimony of the witnesses from St. Omer, and the protestations of the victims who had suffered, had shaken the credit of the plot; and even the chief justice himself had at last resolved to act the part of an indifferent judge. To the statement of the in-

July 18.

<sup>1</sup> State Trials, vii. 501—530. Burnet, ii. 218. Oates and Bedloe afterwards charged the chief justice Scroggs before the council with having said at the assizes at Monmouth "that he did believe "in his conscience that Richard Langhorne, whom he condemned, "died wrongfully, to the great disparagement," &c. Scroggs replied, that he was more unsatisfied about Mr. Langhorne's case than all the rest, the more so that he was credibly informed that part of Bedloe's evidence, about Langhorne's writing in his presence, could not possibly be true.—State Trials, viii. 172, 173.

CHAP. VI. both Oates and Bedloe, from being accusers, were  
A.D. 1679. reduced to the necessity of defending themselves from  
— the imputation of perjury. The chief burthen lay upon the former, who displayed considerable ingenuity in the manner of qualifying his evidence, so as to elude the objections of his adversaries. Though his vexation occasionally betrayed itself in passionate and irreverent expressions, he maintained the contest without flinching, and in a tone of conscious superiority, till he was unexpectedly confronted with Sir Philip Lloyd, clerk of the council, who deposed that, when the lord chancellor asked Oates if he knew any thing personally of Sir George Wakeman, he raised his hands to heaven, and protested before God that he did not; and yet that very morning he had charged him with several overt acts of treason, committed, as he said, in his own presence. This was a blow which he could not parry; feigning indisposition, he asked leave to withdraw, and the jury acquitted all the prisoners.<sup>1</sup>

To the patrons of the plot, who were preparing for the trial of the lords in the Tower, such a result was as embarrassing as it had been unexpected. It became necessary not only to support the credit of the informers, but also to prevent the persons acquitted of coming forward to convict them of perjury. To effect the first of these objects, the chief justice was charged with manifest partiality in favour of the prisoners, and reports were circulated that he had received a valuable bribe from their friends; the second was accomplished by inducing Wakeman, through the menace of a second prosecution, to withdraw beyond the sea, and by committing the three monks to New-

<sup>1</sup> State Trials, vii. 591—687.



gate under a new charge of high treason, for having received orders in the church of Rome.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
VI.  
A.D. 1679.

—

But the men accused of a participation in the plot were not the only victims sacrificed to the delusion of the people. It seemed as if there existed a design of wholly extirpating the Catholic religion. Rewards were offered by proclamation of ten pounds for the discovery of any papist or reputed papist within any one of the royal residences, of fifty pounds for the discovery of money or lands belonging to any priest, chapel, college, or religious order, and of one hundred pounds for the discovery of any priest or Jesuit; the magistrates received authority to visit and search the palace of St. James's at any time, and that of Somerset House, whenever the queen should be absent; the judges were empowered to reward at their discretion the prosecutors of popish recusants out of the forfeitures of the sufferers, and lists of the Catholics or suspected Catholics in each county, which had previously been furnished to the committee of the House of Commons, were delivered to commissioners, with orders to tender to all such persons the oaths of allegiance and supremacy. Their zeal and cupidity were stimulated by rewards, and the time of the judges during the circuit was chiefly employed in the prosecution of Catholic priests or recusants. The latter paid the fine of twenty pounds per month for absence from church, or forfeited two-thirds of their estates to the king; of the former, twenty-four received sentence of death for the exercise of their

<sup>1</sup> State Trials, vii. 702. North, 185. Oates and Bedloe declared that they would never more give evidence in any court in which Scroggs presided, and exhibited articles against him before the council.—Echard, 988. The articles are in State Trials, viii. 163—174.

CHAP. functions. Most of them after condemnation were  
 VI.  
 A.D. 1679. sent to London to undergo the ordeal of a private  
 — examination before Shaftesbury, and his assistants  
 Oates, Bedloe, and Dugdale. But their innocence  
 was proof against the influence of threats and pro-  
 mises. Not one admitted any knowledge of the sup-  
 posed conspiracy; not one could be seduced to lend  
 his aid to the informers. The House of Commons  
 grew impatient under the delay; several of the mem-  
 bers called aloud for their blood; and an address was  
 presented to the king soliciting their immediate exe-  
 cution. The council remanded them to their former  
 prisons; and having granted reprieves to some, aban-  
 doned the remainder to their fate. Pleasington suf-  
 fered at Chester, Evans and Lloyd at Cardiff, Lewis  
 at Usk, Postgate at York, Mahony at Ruthin, John-  
 son at Worcester, and Kemble at Hereford. Of these,  
 two had passed their eightieth year.<sup>1</sup>

In the council, the ambition of the popular leaders  
 had divided them into opposite parties. On one side  
 Shaftesbury, though aware of the king's aversion, still  
 cherished the hope of acquiring the ascendancy through  
 the influence of his disciple the duke of Monmouth,  
 who had returned from his Scottish expedition, proud  
 of his success against the insurgents, and of the title of  
 highness with which he was addressed by his flatterers.

<sup>1</sup> C. Journ. April 27, May 22. L. Journ. xiii. 587. State Trials, vii. 715, 726, 740, 811. Kennet, 380, 381, 391. Challoner, ii. 411—449. James, i. 560. "I thought the execution of the priests  
 "wholly unjust, without giving them public warning by proclamation  
 "to be gone, or to expect the penalties of the law within such a  
 "time, since the connivance had lasted now through three kings'  
 "reigns; upon this point Lord Fairfax and I had so sharp a debate  
 "that he told me, if I would not concur in points which were so  
 "necessary for the people's satisfaction, he would tell everybody I  
 "was a papist; affirming that the plot must be handled as if it  
 "were true, whether it was so or no."—Temple, ii. 506.

On the other, Essex and Halifax won the royal favour by artfully opposing the manœuvres of Shaftesbury; who attributed the last prorogation to their advice; an offence for which he threatened them with the vengeance of parliament in the next session. At first they sought to mollify his resentment by admitting him and Monmouth to their secret meetings; but there was no trusting to his friendship, and they knew that his power in the House of Commons was irresistible. They consulted Sunderland and Temple, and it was resolved to suggest the expediency of a dissolution. The advice met with the approbation of the king, who was well acquainted with Shaftesbury's intrigues, and with his intention of bringing forward new charges against the queen and the duke of York.<sup>1</sup> For the sake of form, the question was proposed in the council; but by some mismanagement the "king's friends" had not been apprized of the royal wish, and a decided majority had already pronounced against the measure, when Charles, taking advantage of an expression dropped by Temple, suddenly turned to the chancellor, and ordered him to prepare a proclamation for the dissolution of the present and the calling of another parliament. This act of vigour struck his adherents with surprise: it threw the lords Shaftesbury and Russell into a paroxysm of "rage."<sup>2</sup>

CHAP.  
VI.  
A.D. 1679.

July 10.

<sup>1</sup> Monmouth's cook had made oath that he heard a person desire Antonio, servant to the queen's confessor, to take care of the four Irishmen, who were to do the business. Antonio was accordingly committed for high treason. Moreover, a Venetian merchant asserted that Sir Henry Tichbourne owned to him, that the object of his journey to Rome was to prosecute, by order of the duke, the design mentioned in the letters of Cardinal Howard.—James (Memoirs), i. 561.

<sup>2</sup> Temple, ii. 509—512.

CHAP. VI.  
A.D. 1679. — In the meanwhile the duke of York bore with impatience his exile at Brussels. His dearest interests were at stake; and yet, instead of being on the spot to oppose the intrigues of his enemies, he was detained in a foreign land, and compelled to trust to the promises of a brother, whose easy wavering disposition had so frequently yielded to the united and reiterated efforts of his opponents. It was true that Essex and Halifax, the most influential of the royal advisers, professed themselves his friends; but their conversion was very recent, and they were friends only after a certain fashion; that is, as far as might suit their personal interests. They exhorted the king to maintain the duke's right to the succession, because they knew that the success of Monmouth would infallibly lead to their own disgrace; but they sought to avoid the appearance of advocating the duke's cause, because they feared to share with him the dislike of the people. On every favourable occasion, at the prorogation, or the acquittal of Wakeman, at the dissolution of parliament, James renewed his solicitations for leave to return; but he received invariably the same answer, that the time was not yet come; that his presence would probably lead to insurrection; that he must wait till the public excitement, raised by the plot, had subsided. "Indeed," said Charles in one of his letters, "I should be very unwilling to have a question brought upon the stage, whether or no you should be secured, and you at the same time present, considering how easy it is to have false witnesses, till Oates and Bedloe have their due."<sup>1</sup>

It chanced, however, that in August the king was confined to his bed by a violent fever. Monmouth was

<sup>1</sup> James (Memoirs), I 556, 557, 559, 561, 562.

then at court in the zenith of his popularity ; he held the office of commander-in-chief ; and he had the face to solicit from the sick monarch an order for the duke of York not to remove from Brussels. His object under these circumstances could not be misunderstood. Essex and Halifax met Sunderland, Hyde, and Godolphin at the lodgings of the duchess of Portsmouth ; and Charles by their advice despatched a message to James to return to England, but on condition that he should come on his own responsibility, and should go back to Brussels after the king's recovery. The duke lost not a moment ; he travelled under a feigned name, reached Windsor in disguise, and was the first to announce his arrival to his brother. Charles, who was now in a state of convalescence, received him most affectionately, and the courtiers crowded round to offer their congratulations. Monmouth alone appeared awkward and embarrassed. On the suggestion of Shaftesbury, he rejected the proposal of a reconciliation with his uncle, and occasionally dropped menaces of vengeance against those counsellors who had advised the recall of the duke. By them, to save their popularity, it had been determined that James should immediately go back to Brussels ; but at the same time the threats of Monmouth induced them to think of securing themselves from his resentment. For this purpose they called the attention of the king to the hard case of his brother, the presumptive heir to the crown, compelled to live in banishment without office or influence, while his intended competitor, who had no other claim than the interest of a factious party, resided in the capital, held the command of the army, and was always ready to seize, as opportunity might offer, the object of his ambition. Charles acknow-

CHAP.

VI.

A.D. 1679.

August 22.

August 23.

August 29.

Sept. 11.

Sept. 12.

CHAP. VI. ledged the justice of the suggestion ; and, sending for  
 A.D. 1679. Monmouth, told him that circumstances required him  
 — to resign his office of lord general, and to withdraw  
 for a season to the continent. The young man be-  
 trayed in his answer a pettishness of disposition, and a  
 feeling of disrespect, which offended the pride, though  
 it did not extinguish the affection, of his father ; but  
 in the evening he met Shaftesbury, Montague, and the  
 leaders of his party, who advised him to obey ; for his  
 banishment would raise him to the dignity of a martyr  
 in the eyes of the people, and the parliament would  
 not fail to demand justice for a prince, whose only  
 crime was his attachment to the religion and liberties  
 Sept. 24. of his country.<sup>1</sup> With reluctance he yielded to their  
 authority, and repaired to Holland, where he was  
 coldly received by the prince of Orange, whose claim  
 to the crown, in the event of the exclusion of James,  
 taught him to look upon Monmouth in the light of a  
 rival. After dinner they walked together in the garden.  
 Monmouth showed the prince a letter from the king  
 promising that the time of his exile should be short,  
 attributed his disgrace not to the jealousy of the duke  
 of York, but to the arts of the duchess of Portsmouth,  
 and of Essex, Halifax, and Sunderland, and solemnly  
 declared that he had never cherished, never would  
 cherish, a thought of aspiring to the crown. They  
 parted with mutual protestations of friendship, to  
 which it is probable that neither gave the smallest  
 credit.<sup>2</sup>

It was evident that considerable inconvenience  
 might arise if, at the king's death, the heir to the crown

<sup>1</sup> James (Memoirs), i. 566, 570. Temple, ii. 513, 518. Burnet,  
 ii. 232. Dalrymple, 247, 249.

<sup>2</sup> D'Avaux, i. 24, 32, 34.

were resident in a foreign country, and under the control of a foreign prince. This was represented with so much force by Secretary Coventry, that the duke received permission to exchange the place of his exile for the capital of Scotland. He returned to Brussels, for the ostensible purpose of conducting his wife and family to Edinburgh, and his intention of residing in that country was announced by authority in the Gazette; but instead of sailing from Holland to Leith, he anchored in the Downs, and requested permission of his brother to remain in England. He had been secretly informed that Charles had no objection; but Essex and Halifax were inexorable; instead of the answer which he expected, he received an invitation to court, and after a short visit proceeded on his voyage. At Edinburgh he was received with the respect due to his rank, and took his place in the council, but carefully abstained from all connection with either of the parties which divided that kingdom.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
VI.  
A.D. 1679.

Oct. 7.

Oct. 9.

Oct. 12.

Oct. 27.

Dec. 4.

It had been ascertained that the general result of the elections was unfavourable to the court; and Shaftesbury waited anxiously for the meeting of the new parliament, in which he promised himself an easy victory over his political opponents. But it was equally the interest of the king and the two confidential ministers to defeat his designs.<sup>2</sup> To deprive him of the means of annoyance which he derived

<sup>1</sup> James (Memoirs), i. 571, 575, 580. Dalrymple, 250. Gazette, 1449.

<sup>2</sup> The name by which he was designated in the correspondence of the royal brothers was "Little Sincerity," the first of which words alluded to his person, the other to his professions of a virtue for which they gave him no credit. Charles said of him that "he had nurrished a snake in his bosome, that Shaftesbury began to play the devil, and could no longer be suffered."—James (Memoirs), i. 563.

CHAP. from his office of president of the council, he was  
 VI.  
 A.D. 1679. unexpectedly superseded by Lord Robartes, lately  
 — created earl of Radnor; and to extinguish his hopes  
 Oct. 15. from the superiority of his party in the lower house,  
 the king in council, without any previous notice, ordered the chancellor to prepare a commission for the prorogation of parliament during the long space of twelve months. At this announcement the members gazed on each other with signs of astonishment; some rose to speak, but Charles commanded silence; he had foreseen and weighed every objection, had taken his resolution, and would be obeyed. No one ventured  
 Oct. 17. to remonstrate; and on the very day appointed for the opening of the session, the parliament was prorogued for a few weeks, and afterwards by repeated commissions for a full year.<sup>1</sup>

The real motive of the king, which was unknown to the council, may be discovered in a secret intrigue  
 June 24. between him and the French ambassador. A little before the dissolution in July, Charles had applied to that minister for relief from the pecuniary embarrassments with which he saw himself threatened. Louis was, indeed, offended at his past conduct; but he did not allow his resentment to stand in the way of his interests. He accepted the apology of his English brother; he even listened to his proposals; but at the same time affected to set no great value on any services which could then be rendered to him by the English crown. It was to quicken his tardiness that Charles summoned a new parliament when he dis-  
 Oct. 17. solved the old one. The negotiation then proceeded

<sup>1</sup> Temple, ii. 521. L. Journals, xiii. 597, 609. Bulstrode, 304. The reason why short prorogations were preferred may be seen in the Life of James (Memoirs), 585, 586.



more rapidly : it was at last agreed that the king should receive from France a pension of one million of livres during three years ; and it was under these circumstances that Charles, being no longer at a loss for money, prorogued the parliament. It chanced, however, that the treaty was not yet signed, and Louis grasped at the opportunity to append to it new and more humiliating conditions. The pride of the king revolted ; James advised him to substitute in lieu of the French pension a system of the most rigorous economy ; and Charles following his counsel, not only rejected the conditions, but refused to listen to Barillon, when he proposed to resume the negotiation.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
VI.  
A.D. 1679.

Nov. 25.

That minister, in his despatches to his sovereign, affected to make light of the disappointment. He had a party in parliament sufficiently powerful to prevent any grant of money to the king, or any accommodation between the opposition and the government.<sup>2</sup> To secure the fidelity of that party, he was careful to remunerate the services of those who had given him their aid during the last session. The army had been disbanded ; the lord treasurer had fallen ; they had gained a right to the rewards which had previously been promised. To the duke of Buckingham he paid the sum of one thousand guineas ; and another sum of two thousand five hundred guineas he distributed in equal portions among Baber, Sydney, Harbord, Lyttleton, and Powle. Montague demanded one hundred thousand crowns, according to the terms of the contract. The ambassador rejected his claim. Danby was, indeed, in prison ; but his trial had not taken place ; it

Dec. 4.

<sup>1</sup> Dalrymple, 229, 230, 233, 244, 254, 255. James (Memoirs), i. 564.

<sup>2</sup> Barillon, 5 Dec. in Mazure, i. 261.

CHAP. VI.  
A.D. 1679. remained yet to be seen whether the lord treasurer were ruined or not. Montague, on the other hand, complained of such chicanery ; he pretended that, to purchase the votes of those who supported him in the House of Commons, he had mortgaged the larger portion of the money ; and at last, by dint of importunity, obtained fifty thousand crowns, one half of his demand.<sup>1</sup>

Henceforth, that the reader may form a distinct notion of the events which occurred between the prorogation in October 1679, and the meeting of parliament in October 1680, it will be convenient to arrange them under two heads, of which the first will comprehend the struggles of the two political parties to acquire the ascendancy, the other the discoveries and prosecutions which continued to grow out of that fruitful stock of imposture and injustice, the fictitious narrative of Titus Oates.

I. Shaftesbury and his associates resolved to keep alive the fears and jealousies of the people, and to harass and intimidate the king. 1. On the 17th of November, the anniversary of the accession of Queen Elizabeth, a most extraordinary pageant, calculated to make a deep impression on the minds of the populace, was exhibited at the expense, and under the superintendence, of the Green Ribbon Club. First appeared the bellman walking with slow and solemn pace, and

<sup>1</sup> Dalrymple, 252, 255, 314. From Barillon's despatch it appears that Buckingham demanded twenty thousand crowns ; that Baber avoit été fort utile en beaucoup d'occasions, et l'avoit averti à tems de ce qui se passoit dans les différentes cabales ; qu'il avoit une étroite liaison avec Lyttleton—qu'il avoit conservé une correspondance particulière avec le sieur Powle, que le sieur Harbord avoit beaucoup agi dans l'affaire du grand Trésorier, et que M. de Sidney avoit été d'une grande utilité en bien des occasions.—Ibid. 256, 257.

exclaiming at intervals, "Remember Mr. Justice God-  
 "frey:" next came a man dressed in the habit of a  
 Jesuit, bearing on horseback the figure of a dead body;  
 then followed representations of nuns, monks, priests,  
 Catholic bishops in copes and mitres, Protestant  
 bishops in lawn sleeves, six cardinals with their caps,  
 and last of all the pope in a litter, accompanied by his  
 arch-counsellor the devil. In this state the procession  
 set out from Moorgate in the dusk of the evening,  
 amidst the glare of several thousand flambeaux; peram-  
 bulated the city in the presence of two hundred thou-  
 sand spectators, swearing eternal hatred to the princi-  
 ples of popery, and calling for vengeance on the heads  
 of the papists; and at last halted at Temple-bar in  
 front of the King's Arms tavern. The clubbists in-  
 stantly appeared at the balconies; fireworks were  
 exhibited; and, at a given signal, the pope and his  
 attendants were precipitated into the flames with a  
 tremendous shout, "the echo of which," it is observed  
 in the official account published by the party, "reached  
 "by continued reverberations to Scotland, and France,  
 "and Rome itself, damping them all with dreadful  
 "astonishment." The effect of the exhibition an-  
 swered the hopes of its authors; and it was repeated  
 with variations in the two succeeding years; but in  
 1682 Charles recovered the government of the capital,  
 and put down the nuisance.<sup>1</sup>

2. Within eight days after this pageant the duke of  
 Monmouth returned to England. Shaftesbury had sent  
 for him, under the pretext that the time of his exile  
 was determined by that of the duke of York: James  
 had obtained permission to reside within the king's

<sup>1</sup> See "London's Defiance to Rome;" Ralph, 484; also North,  
 571, 575; Echard, 985.

CHAP. dominions, Monmouth had a right to the same benefit.  
 VI.  
 A.D. 1679. He entered London at midnight; but the watch announced his arrival; the bells were rung, and bonfires kindled. Charles resented deeply the disobedience of his son and the manner of his reception. He ordered him to quit the kingdom immediately, under the penalty of perpetual exclusion from the royal presence; he rejected the petitions of the duchess and of her friends; and he deprived Monmouth (but successively, and after short intervals, that he might have time for repentance) of his several offices of captain of the guards, of lord lieutenant of Staffordshire and of the north riding of Yorkshire, of governor of Hull, and of master of the horse. Still the young man set at defiance the displeasure of his father, and pretended to justify his obstinacy under the plea of filial piety. His presence, he said, was necessary. He would either preserve the king's life from the daggers of the papists, or revenge his death, if he should fall by their treason.<sup>1</sup>

3. At the same time, to prepare the public mind for the future pretensions of Monmouth, was printed and circulated a most seditious libel, under the title of "An appeal from the country to the city for the preservation of his majesty's person, liberty, property, and religion." The writer called on the citizens to ascend the Monument, to contemplate from its summit the magnificent scene which lay at their feet, and then to imagine that they beheld their houses in flames, their children and neighbours massacred, their wives and daughters violated, and their ministers and teachers tortured by the papists. Let them not be deceived;

<sup>1</sup> James, i. 578, 582. Evelyn, iii. 20. Bulstrode, 310. Kennet, 378.

this imaginary spectacle would be infallibly realized on the succession of a popish monarch. Their present safety could last no longer than the life of the king, who (such was the benevolence of his disposition) gave no credit to the plot, and thus exposed himself to the daggers of the assassins. It was therefore time to prepare for the approaching crisis, to select a man who should lead them against French invaders and popish rebels. That man was the duke of Monmouth, eminently qualified for command by his birth, his conduct, and his courage. Let the citizens stand by him, and he would stand by them. His fortune was united with theirs. Nor should they forget that "the worst title makes the best king," because, what the prince wants in right he must supply by concession.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
VI.  
A.D. 1679.

4. Another expedient suggested by the fertile brain of Shaftesbury, was to petition that the parliament might be permitted to sit at the end of the first short prorogation. With this view the kingdom was parcelled out into districts, to each of which particular agents were assigned. They informed the people that if the king were permitted to govern without a parliament, the ascendancy of popery, and the establishment of despotism, would inevitably follow; and for the prevention of these evils they solicited subscriptions to the petitions with which they had been furnished from the head committee in London.<sup>2</sup> Some of the grand

<sup>1</sup> State Tracts in the reign of Charles II., vol. ii. 491. Parl. Hist. iv. App. xcv.

<sup>2</sup> From North's account it appears that the art of getting up petitions arrived at perfection in its very infancy. The agents traversed the districts allotted to them, procuring the signatures of those who could write, and "the hieroglyphics of clowns;" adding in many cases the names of the absent, or of persons not in existence. When the petitions had been returned to the committee in London, the "beadrolls were cut off, and glued in succession to each other,"

CHAP. VI.  
A.D. 1679. — juries set the example ; the common council followed ; and most of the counties and populous towns hastened to tread in the footsteps of the capital. The king at first returned for answer, that it was *his* province, and not that of the petitioners, to judge of the proper time for the sitting of parliament ; but his patience was gradually exhausted, and his alarm daily excited. He sought in vain to escape from the approach of the petitioners—they waylaid him wherever he went, and thrust their papers into his hands at the most unreasonable times and places ; nor could he foresee the consequences of the extraordinary ferment which prevailed in every part of the kingdom, conjoined, as it was, with the pretensions of Monmouth and the boldness of his partisans. To provide against insurrection, he furnished Portsmouth, Sheerness, Hull, and other fortresses with trusty garrisons, and to free himself from annoyance, he sent for the lord mayor and aldermen, to whom in the royal presence, the chancellor explained what he termed the law on the subject of petitions, with a strict injunction that they should see it enforced.<sup>1</sup>

Dec. 10. The next day a proclamation was addressed to all magistrates throughout the kingdom. It is remarkable that this instrument did not deny the right of petitioning, nor pretend that the sitting of parliament was an improper or illegal subject. It attached itself solely to the manner of procuring signatures, and threatened with the utmost

Dec. 11. see it enforced.<sup>1</sup> The next day a proclamation was addressed to all magistrates throughout the kingdom. It is remarkable that this instrument did not deny the right of petitioning, nor pretend that the sitting of parliament was an improper or illegal subject. It attached itself solely to the manner of procuring signatures, and threatened with the utmost

and the whole collection attached to one form of petition similar to that which had been sent into the country.—North, 342. #

<sup>1</sup> This explanation consisted of the resolutions of the judges in the second year of James I. and the provisions of two acts in the reign of Charles II.—Somers' Tracts, viii. 122—129. It would, however, require no small portion of ingenuity to show that either the resolutions or the statutes were at all applicable to the petitions in question.

rigour of punishment all who should subscribe their own names, or procure the subscriptions of others contrary to the common and known laws of the land. A more unmeaning document could not have been published, and yet it produced an effect which its framers had never anticipated. It turned the popular current into the opposite direction. Numbers, who from the similarity of the late proceedings to those of the year 1641 had foretold a second revolution, were awakened by it from their apathy; the cavaliers and the churchmen, the majority of the gentry and of the merchants, suddenly came forward; and multitudes in every quarter crowded to subscribe addresses to the king, expressing in the most forcible terms their reliance on his wisdom, and their abhorrence of the practices of the petitioners. Westminster set the example; Essex, Middlesex, Surrey, Somerset, Shropshire, and Norfolk followed; and the last county ventured even to offer thanks to the king for the recall of the heir apparent from Flanders.<sup>1</sup>

By Charles these addresses were received with joy and gratitude. They dispelled the doubt and appre-

<sup>1</sup> North, 342. James, i. 581. Bulstrode, 310. Macpherson, i. 100. Here it may be observed that the Licensing Act, an act which was incompatible with the liberty of the press, had not been renewed in the last session of parliament, and therefore expired of course at the prorogation on the 27th of May, 1679. Authors and printers hastened to avail themselves of their freedom, and publications of every description were poured without intermission from the press. The judges, however, undertook to check what they considered an evil. They resolved, without a dissentient voice, that not only books reflecting scandalously on the government and private persons may be seized, and the authors and publishers punished, but that no man could lawfully print and publish books of news without authority, and that whoever did so, was answerable for the falsehoods contained therein.—State Trials, vii. 929, 1127; viii. 187, 198. In conformity with this resolution, the printing of news without license was prohibited.—See Gazette, May 17, 1680.

CHAP. VI.  
A.D. 1679. — hension which hung over his mind; they convinced him that he still retained a strong hold on the affections of his subjects; and they encouraged him to adopt a measure as unexpected by his friends as it was by his opponents. Entering the council-chamber, he stated that he had derived little benefit from the absence of his brother; that he could not understand the justice of taking from a prince, whose rights were assailed, the opportunity of defending them in his place in parliament; and that he had therefore ordered the duke of York to quit Edinburgh, and to return to his former residence at St. James's. This declaration revealed to the lords Russell and Cavendish, and to Capel and Powle, the degraded situation to which they had been insensibly reduced. When they accepted seats in the council, they probably cherished the hope of gaining the ascendancy through the easy disposition of the king, and the preponderance of their party in the two houses. But time had dispelled the delusion. The parliament was not permitted to sit; Shaftesbury, their leader, had been dismissed; they themselves were no more than nominal counsellors; their presence served only to give a sanction to measures which they never advised, and which, had the opportunity been given, they would have strenuously opposed. They tendered their resignation, and Charles replied that he accepted it "with all his heart."<sup>1</sup>

Jan. 31.

Feb. 24.

In a short time the duke of York returned to the capital, and had reason to be gratified with his reception. The recorder presented to him a congratulatory address in the name of the city; a sumptuous entertainment was given to the royal brothers by the lord

<sup>1</sup> Kennet, 379. James (Memoirs), i. 587. Macpherson, 102.



mayor; and a general illumination testified the public joy at his presence. To check these demonstrations of reviving attachment in the people, his enemies began to circulate new rumours respecting the king's pretended marriage with the mother of Monmouth. It was said that the witnesses of the ceremony were still alive; that the contract itself, enclosed in a black box, had been intrusted by the late bishop of Durham to the custody of his son-in-law Sir Gilbert Gerard; and that several persons were ready to depose that they had both seen and perused the important document. By order of Charles every individual named in these reports was sent for, and interrogated before the council, and each disclaimed all knowledge whatsoever of the box, the contract, or the marriage. In conclusion two royal declarations were published in the Gazette, in which the king related all these particulars, repeated the deposition which he had formerly subscribed, and, to silence the cavillers against it, called God to witness that he had never been married to Lucy Barlow, or to any other woman besides the queen.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
VI.  
A.D. 1680.

April 26.

June 3.

5. To parry this blow, the earl of Shaftesbury, on the 26th of June, proceeded to Westminster Hall in company with the earl of Huntingdon, the lord Grey of Werke, the lord Gerard of Brandon, the lords Russell and Cavendish, nine commoners, and the arch-informer, Titus Oates. Being admitted before the

June 26.

<sup>1</sup> James. i. 589. Macpherson, i. 101. London Gazette, 1507, 1520. To these solemn appeals of the king it was answered by his adversaries that, if the eye and fear of God could not restrain him from living in adultery, it could not be expected that they should restrain him from swearing falsely.—Somers' Tracts, viii. 187—208, with Sir Walter Scott's notes.

CHAP. grand jury, he described to them the dangers to be  
 VI. apprehended from the possession of the post-office in  
 A.D. 1680. fee by the duke of York, and the benefit to be de-  
 — rived from the forfeiture of two-thirds of his estate  
 according to the popery laws; offered six reasons why  
 they should look upon him as a papist, and present  
 him for a recusant; and in addition advised them to  
 indict the duchess of Portsmouth as a national nu-  
 sance. The last part was intended only to excite  
 alarm in the king's mistress; and the object of the  
 first part was defeated by the address of the judges,  
 who discharged the jury, while a portion of their num-  
 ber was closeted in private consultation with Shaftes-  
 Nov. 29. bury. In the next term the attempt was renewed;  
 and the duke, on the oath of Oates that he had seen  
 that prince receive the sacrament at mass, was pre-  
 sented as a recusant at the Old Bailey; but advantage  
 was taken of some irregularity in the proceedings, and  
 the cause was removed by writ of certiorari into the  
 court of King's Bench.<sup>1</sup>

It was during this period that the appellations of Whig and Tory became permanently affixed to the two great political parties which for a century and half have divided the nation. The first had long before been given to the Covenanters in the west of Scotland, and was supposed to convey a charge of seditious and anti-monarchical principles. The second originally designated those natives of Ireland who, having been deprived of the estates of their ancestors, supported themselves by depredations on the English settlers; and was now employed in conversation to intimate a secret

<sup>1</sup> State Trials, viii. 179. C. Journ. Dec. 23, 1680. James (Memoirs), i. 666. Ralph, i. 504, note.

leaning towards popery and despotism. Hence the *abhorrrers* branded the *petitioners* with the name of Whigs; and the petitioners in revenge bestowed on their opponents the name of Tories. But in a short time Whig and Tory ceased to be terms of reproach; they were cheerfully adopted by the parties themselves, and became hallowed in their estimation as indicative of the political principles which they respectively professed to cherish and uphold.

II. To pursue the "Popish plot" through its successive ramifications, would be to impose an irksome task on the feelings and patience of the reader. But out of the new informers, who daily grafted their own discoveries on the original narrative of Oates, two will claim his attention, not so much on account of their superior infamy, as of the purpose to which their evidence was subsequently applied. 1. The first was named Dangerfield, a young man of handsome person and of creditable acquirements, but who, in the course of a few years, had run through a long career of guilt. In different places and for different crimes, he had been condemned to fine and imprisonment, had suffered the punishments of whipping and being burnt in the hand, had stood in the pillory, and had been repeatedly outlawed. Mrs. Cellier, a Catholic midwife of eminence, who collected alms for the relief of the prisoners, found him among the debtors in Newgate, and received from him a petition for pecuniary assistance, with a promise that he would in return purloin the papers of Stroud, a fellow-captive, supposed to have been suborned by Shaftesbury, as a witness against the lords in the Tower. She satisfied his creditors, and on his discharge employed him to collect

CHAP.  
VI.  
A.D. 1680.

1679.  
June 6.

CHAP. VI.  
A.D. 1679. — certain moneys due to her husband. In this occupation he pretended that, by visiting the different coffee-houses, he had discovered the existence of a most dangerous conspiracy. Cellier, through the agency of Lady Powis, introduced him to the earl of Peterborough, and Peterborough to the duke of York, to whom he declared that, during the king's indisposition, the principal Presbyterians had conspired to raise an army, and seize on the government; that the design, though frustrated for the moment by the king's recovery, was not yet abandoned; and that the paper which he then delivered to his royal highness, would show that commissions had already been distributed, and the plan of a revolution in the government had actually been arranged. James heard him with jealousy and reserve. He gave him indeed twenty guineas as a reward for his good will; but transferred him with his document to the king, who, having ordered him an additional present of forty guineas, commissioned Secretary Coventry to watch his conduct, and investigate the truth or falsehood of his story. Coventry thought it unworthy of credit. He gave him back his paper, and demanded something more satisfactory; but Dangerfield could produce nothing besides two letters written by Bulstrode, the envoy at Brussels, to the earl of Shaftesbury. The letters were on indifferent matters; but that they should be in the possession of Dangerfield was very extraordinary. The king grew uneasy: there was, he declared, some dark and mysterious plot in agitation.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Dangerfield, in his "Particular Narrative" (p. 39), says that he waited on Lord Shaftesbury to kill him at the instigation of the papists, and being left alone for some time took the opportunity of stealing these letters.

A few days later, in consequence of an information laid by Dangerfield, the revenue officers searched the lodgings of Colonel Mansel, the quartermaster of the supposed Presbyterian army, and instead of a prize of foreign lace which had been promised them, discovered a bundle of treasonable papers concealed behind the bed. That these papers were forgeries appeared on the first inspection; Mansel traced the contrivance to Dangerfield; and the council committed him to Newgate. In prison he appeared to be agitated with the most violent remorse. He acknowledged that, at the instigation of Lady Powis and Mrs. Cellier, he had been engaged in a sham plot for the purpose of covering a real one: the Presbyterians were innocent, the papists guilty: Lord Arundell had offered him two thousand pounds as a reward for the murder of the king—that bribe he had the virtue to refuse—then Lord Powis offered him five hundred pounds to assassinate the earl of Shaftesbury—he yielded to the temptation; but twice his heart failed him, and Lord Peterborough reproached him with cowardice. In conclusion, as a proof of the sincerity of his repentance, he declared that the original of the notes shown by him to the king, the document on which the sham plot was to have been founded, lay concealed in a meal-tub in the house of Mrs. Cellier. There the paper was accordingly discovered; and thence the whole transaction is known in history by the name of the meal-tub plot.

In consequence of these disclosures, Lady Powis was committed to the Tower, but escaped the danger of a trial, the bill against her being ignored by the grand jury of Middlesex. Mrs. Cellier was imprisoned in Newgate where Shaftesbury, Sir William Waller,

CHAP.  
VI.  
A.D. 1679.  
—  
Oct. 20.

Oct. 23.

Oct. 27.

Oct. 31.

Nov. 1.

CHAP. VI. and Dangerfield himself, solicited her to turn informer;  
 A.D. 1680. but her resolution set them at defiance; and, on her  
 trial, she satisfied the court that her accuser was too  
 infamous in law to be admitted as a credible witness.<sup>1</sup>  
 Her acquittal induced the attorney-general to postpone  
 for a few days the trial of Lord Castlemaine, who had  
 been charged with high treason; and in the interval  
 another pardon—the first had not included felony, bur-  
 glary, or forgery by name—was granted to Dangerfield,  
 that he might be brought forward as a second witness  
 in support of the evidence of Titus Oates against that  
 nobleman. But no pardon could remove the stigma  
 which had been impressed on his character by sixteen  
 convictions in different courts; the jury refused to give  
 credit to his oath, and Lord Castlemaine also obtained  
 an acquittal.<sup>2</sup> The informer, however, was not aban-  
 doned by his patrons; they kept him in reserve till the  
 meeting of parliament; and hoped to influence by his

<sup>1</sup> Dangerfield having published his narrative, Mrs. Cellier, who as a writer was more than a match for him, published a vindication of herself, with an account of her trial, under the title of "Malice Defeated; or a Brief Relation of the Accusation and Deliverance of Elizabeth Cellier." Some passages in this tract, respecting the treatment of the prisoners in Newgate by Captain Richardson, the jailer, exposed her to a second trial (Sept. 13) for a libel. She was found guilty, and condemned to pay a fine to the king of 1,000*l.*, and to stand thrice in the pillory.—State Trials, vii. 1183—1218. She had been an important witness at the trial of Lord Castlemaine, and we are told by North that the real object of the second prosecution was to disable her from becoming a witness also in favour of the lords in the Tower.—North, 264.

<sup>2</sup> State Trials, vii. 1067, and Lord Castlemaine's manifesto, who bitterly complains that in the printed reports of his own and of the other trials respecting the popish plot, great partiality to the informers is shown by the publishers, and much injury done to the cause of the accused (p. 39). From his statement it appears that a person committed to the Tower, if he was a peer of England or Ireland, paid in fees one hundred pounds to the lieutenant, ten pounds to the gentleman porter, and five pounds to the gentleman jailer.—See his Manif. 103.

testimony, infamous and degraded as he was, the de-liberations both of the Lords and Commons.

CHAP.  
VI.  
A.D. 1680.

The mystery which covered the meal-tub plot has never been completely developed. There were many who believed that the Catholics, indignant at the unjust persecution which they suffered, sought to retaliate on their accusers by forgeries similar to those which had been employed against themselves. Others looked on Dangerfield as the mere tool of Oates; and that the real object of both was to inveigle some Catholics into an attempt to fix a pretended plot on the Presbyterians, that, by denouncing them, they might prop up the declining credit of the original imposture. But the king was convinced that his real instigators, whoever they might be, aimed at a higher quarry; that they sought to draw the duke of York into some practice which might add fuel to the popular prejudice against him, and minister additional arguments in favour of the bill of exclusion. The use which was afterwards made of Dangerfield seems to confirm this conjecture.<sup>1</sup>

2. A short notice may suffice for Bolron, from whom was derived the Yorkshire branch of the plot. He had been the manager of Sir Thomas Gascoign's coal-pits, had made free with the money of his employer, and had been threatened with a prosecution for felony by Lady Tempest, the daughter of Sir Thomas. In his alarm he sought to shelter himself under the mantle of an informer; but the county magistrates, before

1679.  
June 24.

<sup>1</sup> For this account of the meal-tub plot, I must refer my readers to the notes of the Chief Justice North, written at the time (North, 265); to Dangerfield's "Particular Narrative," in 1679; Cellier's "Malice Defeated," in 1680; Dangerfield's Answer to a certain scandalous, lying Pamphlet, entitled, "Malice Defeated," 1680; Cellier's rejoinder of "Matchless Rogue," 1680; the Lords' Journals, xiii. 667; Castlemaine's Manifesto, 1681; and State Trials, vii. 1043—1112.

CHAP. VI. whom he laid his information, convinced by their personal knowledge of its falsehood, refused to grant the warrant which he demanded. Bolron hastened to London, made a second and more ample deposition before the earl of Shaftesbury, and subsequently added a third, which supplied the deficiencies, and reconciled the inconsistencies of the preceding. From London the informer was sent back to Yorkshire to procure a second witness, whom he found in Mowbray, a servant lately discharged from the family on suspicion of theft. Sir Thomas Gascoign, who was in his eighty-fifth year, was tried at Westminster before a jury of Yorkshire gentlemen. The two witnesses deposed that he, his son Thomas, his daughter Lady Tempest, his nephew Mr. Thwinge, Sir Miles Stapleton, Mr. Ingleby, and some others, had subscribed money towards the assassination of the king, and the propagation of the Catholic faith, and that they themselves had been initiated in the conspiracy by taking what the informers called "the papists' bloody oath of secrecy." For the defence it was proved by the prisoner's solicitor that Bolron never made any charge against his master till he had been threatened with a prosecution; by the two magistrates, that his deposition before them bore very little resemblance to his evidence in its present improved form; and by a host of unimpeachable witnesses, that neither he nor his associate Mowbray had any claim from their previous character to the belief of the court. The old man was acquitted; and the other cases were sent back to be tried in the county. Lady Tempest proved equally fortunate with her father, but a third jury convicted Thwinge, while a fourth acquitted Ingleby, and a fifth Sir Miles Stapleton.<sup>1</sup> It was evident that if the others were inno-

<sup>1</sup> State Trials, vii. 959—1043. The Narrative of Lawrence Mow-



cent, Thwinge could not be guilty ; and the king, under this conviction, granted him a reprieve ; but the ministers dared not face the House of Commons as long as a single individual under condemnation for the plot remained alive, and on the day after the meeting of parliament, in consequence of their remonstrances, Thwinge suffered at York the death of a traitor.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
VI.  
A.D. 1680.

The summer passed away amid the hostile preparations of the two parties. The king (satiety had now blunted his appetite for pleasure) spent his time in privacy at Windsor ; and, as if he had no subject of disquietude on his mind, amused himself with angling, walking in the park, and superintending the improvements in the castle and the adjoining grounds.<sup>2</sup> But James was more anxiously employed. He watched with solicitude the intrigues of the party, and laboured to impress on the royal mind a persuasion that the real object of his enemies was the subversion of the monarchy and the re-establishment of the commonwealth. He observed that many of them were men who, having acquired power and influence in the revolution, still cherished, under the mask of patriotism, their former principles ; that they put forward the safety of religion, as they had done during the rebellion, for the sole purpose of inflaming the people ; that

bray, of Leeds, Gent. 1680. The Narrative of Robert Bolron, of Shipponhall, Gent. 1680.

<sup>1</sup> Low as the credit of Bolron was sunk, he was again brought forward, and made to publish, with permission of the House of Commons, a most infamous forgery, entitled, "The Papists' Bloody Oath of Secrecy, and Litany of Intercession," 1680. See the tract and the journals of Dec. 16, 1680. The publication was well timed ; it took place in the interval between the condemnation and the execution of Lord Stafford.

<sup>2</sup> "Certain," says Reresby, "it is, that he was much better "pleased with retirement than the hurry of the gay and busy world."—Reresby, 100.

CHAP. VI. they had begun with the bill of exclusion to make the  
 A.D. 1680. monarchy elective; and that, when they had accom-  
 — plished that object, they might, indeed, gratify Charles with the title and the revenue of a king, but would reduce him in point of power to a level with the doge of Venice.<sup>1</sup> There is no doubt that James was correct, as far as regarded the views of Algernon Sydney and his confidential friends;<sup>2</sup> but the majority of those who advocated the bill of exclusion were not unwilling to perpetuate the monarchy, though their leaders sought to strip it of many powers which it still possessed, and which they deemed inconsistent with the rights of the people. But if James were removed from the succession, whom did they intend to substitute in his place? They were divided between the two competitors, the prince of Orange in right of his wife, the eldest daughter of James, and the duke of Monmouth, as the son of the king. That the ambition of the former was not insensible to the splendid prize which fortune seemed to offer him, is certain; and much has transpired to provoke a suspicion that he secretly promoted the plan of exclusion. With this intention Van Lewen was sent to England, in quality of envoy from the States, but with instructions to press on the mind of the king the necessity of preserving a good understanding between him and the parliament. Frimans followed Van Lewen in a private capacity, but for the purpose of treating clandestinely with the leaders of the country party.

<sup>1</sup> James (Memoirs), i. 595, 598, 613, 614, 632. Dalrymple, 266.

<sup>2</sup> James (Memoirs), 635. Dalrymple, 257, 282, 312. D'Avaux, i. 9. Barillon describes Penn, le chef des trembleurs, as united with Sydney, and à la tête d'un fort grand parti.—Dalrymple, 282. See also Penn's letters on election matters to Sydney, in the Sydney Papers, i.; Memoirs, pp. 154, 155; and Mrs. Cellier's examination, *Malice Defeated*, 31.

Among the ministers, Godolphin and Sunderland, both high in the royal confidence, were already won to his interest, and Hyde, though devoted to James through gratitude and attachment, felt no inclination to oppose the cause of his niece, the princess of Orange.<sup>1</sup> The hopes of Monmouth rested on the yet unextinguished affection of the king, who in a private interview had forgiven his past conduct, and on the assurances of support from Shaftesbury, from Montague, and perhaps from their intimate associate, Lord Russell. Of himself he put forth no pretensions; he had nothing in view but the common welfare of the nation. Laying aside all political engagements, and assuming the appearance of a man of pleasure, he made a tour of the kingdom, and visited the most celebrated fairs, races, and assemblies of amusement. His friends, however, were everywhere careful to make preparations against his coming, to sound forth his praises and pretensions, and to collect multitudes to greet his arrival. On one occasion, when he visited Sir William Portman, near Taunton, he is said to have been met by twenty thousand persons; and afterwards, when he accepted an invitation to dine with the city, it was observed that the royal arms were emblazoned on his carriage, without the bar, the heraldic token of illegitimate birth.<sup>2</sup>

In June Charles had concluded a treaty with the king of Spain, by which the contracting parties had engaged to maintain the peace of Nimeguen, and to aid each other with their whole force in the case of aggression on any part of their respective dominions in Europe.<sup>3</sup> This treaty had been devised by the

CHAP.  
VI.  
A.D. 1680.  
—

June 10.

<sup>1</sup> D'Avaux, i. 34, 43, 45, 49, 53. Dalrymple, 205, 209, 271.

<sup>2</sup> Sydney's Letters, 54. <sup>3</sup> Dumont, vii. par. ii. p. 2.

CHAP. prince of Orange, to curb the ambition of Louis, who  
 VI. was still believed to cherish hostile designs against  
 A.D. 1620. — the Spanish territories in the Netherlands ; and it was  
 strongly seconded by the advice of Temple and Sun-  
 derland, as calculated to refute the general opinion  
 that the king still suffered himself to be swayed by  
 August 23. French counsels. In August he announced his inten-  
 tion of meeting the parliament on the 21st of Octo-  
 ber, and the announcement stimulated the opposite  
 parties to new exertions preparatory to the contest.  
 It was evident that the adversaries of the duke had  
 acquired in the interval a considerable accession of  
 strength. On the other hand, the boldness of Shaftes-  
 bury in presenting that prince for recusancy, had in-  
 dissolubly bound the noblemen and gentlemen who  
 accompanied him to his party—they had gone too far  
 to withdraw ; they must ruin the presumptive heir or  
 be ruined by him—and it confirmed the wavering  
 fidelity of some among their followers, who conceived  
 that no reasonable man would have ventured on such  
 an attempt without full assurance of success. In  
 addition, they could now command the services of  
 Sunderland and Godolphin, who, from the moment  
 that they devoted themselves to the interests of the  
 prince of Orange, had pledged themselves to the  
 leaders to promote the bill of exclusion. They had  
 won a still more powerful auxiliary in the duchess of  
 Portsmouth. Her terrors had been excited by the  
 threat of an indictment, and were kept alive by the  
 publication of articles of high treason and other mis-  
 demeanours against her.<sup>1</sup> She sought a reconciliation  
 through the agency of Lord Howard of Eserick, and  
 to lull the suspicion of Charles, attributed her inter-

<sup>1</sup> See it in Somers' Tracts, viii. 137.

views with that nobleman to her desire of mitigating the hostility of the party. A treaty was concluded between her on one side, and Monmouth, Shaftesbury, and Russell on the other; it was stipulated that they should suppress all proceedings against her, and that she should employ all her influence with the king in aid of the bill of exclusion. With this view she was commissioned to offer him a large supply of money, with the power of naming his successor in the same manner as it had been conferred on Henry VIII. Gradually he was brought, or at least pretended, to listen to these terms. Monmouth had little doubt that he should be the person named by his father; the duchess was supposed to indulge a hope that her own son by the king might prove the successful competitor.<sup>1</sup>

Though James was not without suspicion, he was kept in ignorance of this intrigue, till the court returned from Newmarket, when Essex, Halifax, Sunderland, Godolphin, and the duchess of Portsmouth took opportunities to represent to the king, separately, and as it were without concert, the necessity of his brother's departure before the opening of parliament. He permitted them to signify their opinion to James, who received it with strong expressions of displeasure. Experience, he said, had convinced him that his presence proved an encouragement to his friends, his absence to his enemies. The question was then laid before the council, where eleven out of eighteen members spoke in his favour; but the king, with those in the secret, contrived, by putting hypothetical cases, to embarrass the deliberation, and the next day

<sup>1</sup> Temple, ii. 531. James (Memoirs), i. 591, 594, 599, 615. Macpherson, i. 104. Dalrymple, 264, 270, 272, 279.

CHAP. VI. informed the duke that reasons of state rendered his  
A.D. 1680. absence indispensable during the approaching session.

— At these words the unfortunate prince appeared sunk in despair; and to console him Charles most solemnly promised that he would never surrender but with his life the rightful descent of the crown, the command of the naval and military force, and the power of calling, proroguing, and dissolving parliament. James, for a last favour, solicited a general pardon, as a protection against impeachment during his absence; but the king replied that a pardon was unnecessary. If the Commons talked of an impeachment, he would meet the attempt with a dissolution. Convinced that he was abandoned by his brother, the prince with a heavy and misboding heart went on board his yacht, and sailed for Leith, the day before the meeting of parliament.<sup>1</sup>

Oct. 20.

Barillon had carefully watched the progress of these intrigues, and received instructions from his court to make it his chief object to prevent any grant of money in support of the Spanish treaty, and for that purpose to foment, by every expedient in his power, the dissension among the several parties. He informed the popular leaders that Louis considered it as much his interest as theirs, that the powers of the crown should be confined within the narrowest limits; and would therefore be always ready to aid them in their efforts to secure the liberties of the people. To James he

<sup>1</sup> James (Memoirs), i. 594—600. Dalrymple, 265, 268. Macpherson, i. 105. In conversation with Barillon before his departure, James says, *en termes pleins de colere et de ressentiment*, que si on le pousse à bout, et qu'il se voit en état d'être entièrement ruiné par ses ennemis, il trouvera les moyens de les en faire repentir... cela veut dire qu'il espère pouvoir exciter des troubles en Ecosse et en Irlande. Hence Dalrymple (269) and Heywood (316) represent him as intending to excite a rebellion against his brother; an inference which certainly is not warranted by this sudden burst of passion.

made the offer of pecuniary aid, whenever that prince might deem it expedient to draw the sword in support of his own rights. If the king should seem disposed to an union with the popular party, the ambassador was authorized to prevent it by offering a yearly pension, provided he would withdraw from his treaty with Spain, and govern without a parliament; and should the bill of exclusion be carried, and a necessity exist of choosing between the prince of Orange and Monmouth, he was instructed to support the former, though a personal enemy, in preference to the pretensions of a bastard. Barillon immediately began to intrigue, and with the distribution of a few thousand pounds purchased the services, or a promise of the services, of several among the more influential members of the House of Commons.<sup>1</sup>

It was the intention of the Whigs that the bill of exclusion should originate in that house. The plan of operations was traced by the hand of Shaftesbury, and did honour to the ingenuity of its author. As soon as the members had taken the oaths, Dangerfield appeared at the bar to accuse the presumptive heir to the crown. Though he stood there with the accumulated infamy of sixteen convictions on his head, though his testimony had been rejected by the verdicts of three

CHAP.  
VI.  
A.D. 1680.

Oct. 26.

<sup>1</sup> Dalrymple, 271, 277, 278, 279, 280, 285. Besides Montague, whose services were secured by other payments, Hampden member for Buckinghamshire, Titus for Huntingdonshire, Herbert for Wilton, Hill for Agmondesham, Harbord for Camelford, Armstrong for Stafford, and Boscawen for Tregony, with Algernon Sydney and Baber, neither of whom sat in this parliament, received severally five hundred guineas: Sacheverell member for Derbyshire, Foley for Bewdley, Bide for Hertford, Bennet for Shaftesbury, Hotham for Beverley, Garroway for Arundel, Frankland for Thirsk, and Harley for Herefordshire, with Hicdall and Compton, two agents, were satisfied with the smaller sum of three hundred guineas.—See Barillon's account, dated December 4, O.S., in Dalrymple, 316.

CHAP. VI.  
A.D. 1680. successive juries, he was received with approbation, and listened to with credulity. He solemnly affirmed

— that the duke of York had been privy to his imposture of a Presbyterian plot; had given him instructions to forge and distribute the lists and commissions; had made him a present of twenty guineas, with a promise of a more substantial reward; had turned into ridicule his scruple of shedding the king's blood, and had commanded him to persevere without dread of the consequences.<sup>1</sup> Before the indignation excited by this disclosure had subsided, Lord Russell rose, and moved that it should be the first care of the house "effectually" "to suppress popery, and prevent a popish successor." He was seconded by Sir Henry Capel, who, in the whole reign of the king, during the lapse of twenty years, could see nothing but the prevalence of popish counsels. Whether toleration was granted or denied; whether war was declared or peace concluded; whether the king sought to conciliate the two houses by concession, or cut short their debates by a prorogation or dissolution, every measure, whatever might be its apparent motive, proceeded from the secret influence of the papists in the prosecution of their great objects,—the destruction of Protestantism and the elevation of a popish prince to the throne. From the same impure source he derived the many acts of arbitrary power which marked the king's reign, the burning of London, the destruction of the fleet in the river, the attempts on the life of the Protestant monarch, and that hellish plot, for the discovery of which they were indebted to the mercy of Providence and the agency of Titus Oates. Montague and others followed in the same

<sup>1</sup> L. Journal, xiii. 667; and "The Information of Thomas Dan-gerfield, Gent. 1680."



tone of invective and crimination, and the resolution was adopted without a dissentient voice.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
VI.  
A.D. 1680.

It was of importance not to suffer the vindictive feelings kindled by these harangues to cool through procrastination, or the want of additional excitement. Two days later the deposition of Bedloe on his death-bed, confirmatory of his former testimony, was read to the house;<sup>2</sup> soon afterwards Francisco de Faria, a converted Jew, came forward to declare that a proposal to assassinate Oates, Bedloe, and Shaftesbury, had been made to him by the late Portuguese ambassador, to whom he had acted as interpreter;<sup>3</sup> then Dugdale related at great length his proofs of the guilt of the lords in the Tower; next came Prance to make additions to his old tale of the murder of Godfrey; and last of all Mr. Treby made a full report of the several informations respecting the plot, which had been collected by the industry of the committee appointed in the last parliament. In conclusion the house passed the three following votes:—1. That the conspirators had been

Oct. 28.

Oct. 30.

Nov. 1.

Nov. 2.

<sup>1</sup> C. Journ. Oct. 26. Parl. Hist. iv. 1162—1172. James, i. 601.

<sup>2</sup> Bedloe during his sickness at Bristol sent for the chief justice North, and before him and several others declared that the evidence which he had given was true, and lamented the danger to which the Protestant religion was exposed. He then expressed a wish to communicate important information to North alone; all but his wife and North's clerk left the room; the sick man was sworn, and declared that the duke of York was a party to the plot, with the exception of the murder of the king, and that the queen had given money for the propagation of the Catholic faith, but was, as far as he knew, ignorant of any mischief designed to the king. This deposition was read over to him: he approved of it, and declared that he had nothing to add to it. Its publication greatly disappointed the expectation of the party.—State Trials, vi. 1493. North, 252, 255.

<sup>3</sup> Gaspar de Abreu de Freitas, the ambassador, left England in February. De Faria without employment grew poor: he pretended to fall into fits, in which he often repeated the names of Shaftesbury, Oates, and Bedloe, and at last turned informer. He insinuated that Lord Powis, Lady Abergavenny, and Chief Justice Scroggs were leagued with the ambassador.—See his printed information, and narrative.

CHAP. led to engage in the plot by their knowledge that the  
 VI. duke of York was a papist. 2. That if any violence  
 A.D. 1680. — were offered to his majesty's person, it should be re-  
 venged on the whole body of the papists. 3. That a  
 bill should be introduced to disable the duke of York  
 from succeeding to the imperial crown of England.<sup>1</sup>

Had the adherents of the court united in his defence with the "party volant" (so the independent members were called), James might yet have bidden defiance to the formidable host which stood in array against him. But means were devised to intimidate the one and to attract the other. The expulsion and imprisonment of Sir Francis Wythens, for the presentation to the king of the Westminster address expressive of "abhor-  
 "rence of the petitions," and of Sir Robert Canne, because at Bristol he had hinted an opinion that a Presbyterian was more probable than a popish plot, showed how dangerous it was to provoke the displeasure of the leaders; and a number of petitions against undue returns, petitions levelled chiefly against the courtiers, taught them to tremble for the possession of their seats, and to propitiate those on whose votes their subsequent fate must depend. On the other hand the party volant was induced to give their aid to the Whigs, on considerations drawn from the sudden departure of James and the warmth displayed by Lord Russell and William Jones. The king, it was argued, would never have banished his brother a second time, had he not seen the necessity of yielding to the popular ferment; nor could it be supposed that a nobleman so cautious as Lord Russell, with such a princely fortune at stake, or a lawyer so eminent in his profession as Jones, with such a brilliant prospect before him, would have

<sup>1</sup> C. Journ. Oct. 28, 30, Nov. 1, 2.

embarked so eagerly, so violently, in the cause, without some secret assurance of being able to bring it to a successful issue.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
VI.  
A.D. 1680.

In the debates respecting the bill of exclusion, the speakers on both sides did little more than repeat the arguments which they had enforced in the last parliament. The principal novelty was an allusion to the unacknowledged claim of the duke of Monmouth. Why, it was asked, did the bill contain no provision in case the duke of York should return to the Protestant church? For what purpose had all mention of his children been so cautiously avoided? Why was not the right of succession declared to reside in them? "They talk, indeed," exclaimed Colonel Legge, afterwards earl of Dartmouth, "of another successor in "a black box; but, if that Pandora's box is to be "opened, I hope it will be in my time, and not in "that of my children, that I myself may have the "honour of drawing my sword in support of the "rightful heir." The advocates of the bill were content to reply, that as it named no one but the duke, the disability would apply solely to him; he would be dead in law; and the crown would of course descend as if he were naturally dead.<sup>2</sup>

Nov. 4, 8,  
10.

In the meantime Shaftesbury, to the surprise of the uninitiated, paid several visits in public to the duchess of Portsmouth; and yet the negotiation, which had commenced under her auspices, proceeded but slowly. Charles had descended from the demand of eight

<sup>1</sup> C. Journ. Oct. 28, 29. Temple, ii. 532.

<sup>2</sup> State Tracts, 85. Parl. Hist. iv. 1175, 1215. James, 601—613. The bill proposed to enact that, if James survived the king, the crown should descend and be enjoyed by such person or persons successively, during the life of the said James duke of York, as would have inherited and enjoyed the same in case he were naturally dead.—See it in State Tracts, ii. 91.

CHAP. VI.  
A.D. 1680. hundred thousand pounds to the sum of six hundred thousand pounds; but neither party dared to place confidence in the good faith of the other; he insisted that the parliamentary grant should precede, the Whigs that it should follow, the exclusion of the duke.<sup>1</sup> The king, at the suggestion of Halifax, sought to bring the question to an issue by a message to the House of Commons, in which he professed his readiness to concur with them in any measure of precaution which did not infringe on the lawful descent of the crown. But it was determined to pay no regard to this message, and while the committee prepared an answer, the managers added a new stimulus to the fears and prejudices of the members by the announcement of another conspiracy lately discovered in Ireland.

From the very beginning, it had acted as a drawback from the credit of the English plot, that there existed no trace of any similar design in Ireland, where the Catholics were so much more numerous, and had experienced so many more grievous and more recent causes of irritation. Ormond carefully executed the orders of the English council, though he was convinced that they were not called for by any fault of the natives. He disarmed the Catholics, suppressed all schools and convents, shut up the chapels in the principal towns, and commanded by proclamation all Catholic priests to quit the island by a certain day. Next, in obedience to new instructions, but in opposition to his own judgment, he offered rewards to informers respecting the plot, and immediately a few men of desperate fortunes and abandoned character

<sup>1</sup> James (Memoirs), i. 640, 645. Burnet, ii. 254, and note. Dalrymple, 279.

came forward. But they met with little credit among their countrymen. Most of the accused were dismissed after examination by the Irish council, and the others, who took their trials, were acquitted by Protestant juries.<sup>1</sup> The friends of the plot were not discouraged. They summoned the disgraced informers to England, sent them back with new instructions to Ireland, and now, having recalled them from their mission, exhibited them at the bar of the House of Commons, where Hetherington, Murphy, and Fitzgerald detailed the particulars of an imaginary plot in Ireland, the exact counterpart of that supposed to have been discovered in England. The moment they departed, an address complaining of evil counselors, and begging the king to trust to his faithful Commons, was adopted, and a motion made to read the bill of exclusion the third time. The duke's friends yielded to the torrent: they did not even call for a division, and the bill passed amidst the shouts and congratulations of its advocates.<sup>2</sup>

Here, however, for some reason, of which we are ignorant, a pause of four days ensued; and the intermediate time was spent by the opposite parties in preparing for the contest in the House of Lords. Charles took a most decided part, openly soliciting votes in favour of his absent brother; and the popular leaders procured numerous petitions, and were careful that Dangerfield should be in attendance. It had been artfully arranged that his charge against the duke should immediately precede the introduction of the bill of exclusion. But his testimony failed to produce the desired effect; for Lord Peter-

CHAP.  
VI.  
A.D. 1680.

Nov. 15.

<sup>1</sup> Carte, ii. 477, 498, 513—516; App. 99.

<sup>2</sup> C. Journ. Nov. 11.

CHAP. VI.  
A.D. 1680. — borough, who was named as a party, vindicated himself so victoriously, that even Essex, one of the opposite leaders, pronounced the informer unworthy of credit.<sup>1</sup> When Lord Russell brought up the bill, he was accompanied by the great body of the Commons, and his announcement of its title, "to disable "James, duke of York, from succeeding to the "crown," was followed by a cheer of approbation from behind the bar. The house resolved itself into a committee, and the Commons remained to hear the debate. Essex and Shaftesbury, particularly the latter, distinguished themselves by the force and eloquence with which they urged the expediency of the measure, and were followed not only by the accustomed leaders of the party, but by the earl of Anglesey, who seems to have been intimidated by the evidence of Dangerfield, and by the earl of Sunderland, who took this opportunity to announce his apostasy.<sup>2</sup> Prudence might have closed the lips of Monmouth; but he spoke boldly, and uttered sentiments which gave unpardonable offence both to his father and uncle. He should vote, he said, for the bill, because he knew of no other expedient to preserve the life of the king from the malice of the duke of York; an expression which Charles, who

<sup>1</sup> In the Memoirs of James (i. 617) we are assured from his collection of letters, that the information of Dangerfield preceded the debate on the bill; and that such was the case is evident from the time at which the division took place, nine or eleven at night. It is probable that the clerk entered both the information and the debate on Lord Peterborough's guilt or innocence afterwards for his own convenience.—*L. Journ.* 667—670.

<sup>2</sup> "I am assured," says Evelyn, "he (Lord Sunderland) did not do "this out of inclination, or for the preservation of the Protestant religion, but by mistaking the ability of the party to carry it."—*Evelyn*, iii. 50.

was present, likened, in a loud whisper, to "the kiss of Judas." On the opposite side appeared a champion of matchless prowess, the earl of Halifax. He exposed the hypocritical ambition of Monmouth with all the powers of wit and sarcasm; he rebutted the arguments of Shaftesbury with an eloquence and energy which surpassed the most partial expectations of his friends; and he developed the arts and intrigues of the exclusionists in a manner which was keenly felt and deeply resented. At nine at night, after a debate of six hours, the house divided, and the bill was rejected, on the first reading, by a majority of sixty-three to thirty voices.<sup>1</sup>

To console themselves under this disappointment, the popular leaders resolved to hunt down those whom they considered as its principal authors. Halifax in one house, and Seymour in the other, were marked out for the objects of vengeance. Against Halifax the commons presented an address, that he might be for ever removed from the royal councils and presence, not because he had so successfully opposed the bill of exclusion, but under the pretence that he had advised the late dissolution. Charles briefly replied, that whenever they could show that either Halifax, or any other of his councillors, had committed a legal offence, he would never interpose to screen him or them from punishment. Seymour, the most powerful advocate of the duke in the council, they impeached of peculation in the execution of his office of treasurer of the navy; a charge the truth or falsehood of which was never ascertained, because he

<sup>1</sup> L. Journ. 666. James (Memoirs), i. 617, 618. Macpherson, 108, 109. Reresby, 104. Burnet, ii. 246, note a. From these authorities it appears that all the bishops present, fourteen in number, voted against the bill.

CHAP. VI. was never brought to a public trial. To the king  
 A.D. 1680. himself, who had asked for pecuniary aid towards the  
 — defence of Tangier against the Moors, they replied by  
 an address, which was in reality meant to be an  
 appeal to the people. The papists, they told him,  
 “that bloody and restless party,” not content with the  
 private exercise of their idolatrous worship, had  
 brought over multitudes of priests and Jesuits to per-  
 vert the consciences of his subjects, and to corrupt  
 those whom they could not pervert; had gradually  
 usurped the control over the internal and external  
 polity of the kingdom; had prevailed on him to make  
 peace or war, to call or dissolve parliaments, as suited  
 their purposes; and, having before them the prospect  
 of a proselyted prince to succeed to the throne, had  
 formed the design of assassinating his majesty, of  
 destroying the Protestants in England, and of exe-  
 cuting a second massacre in Ireland, that by these  
 means they might accomplish the suppression of reli-  
 gion and the overthrow of the government. To  
 prevent these evils, the House of Commons had pro-  
 posed the exclusion of the duke as the only remedy.  
 Let the king adopt it, and he would find them ready  
 to supply him with pecuniary assistance: if not, they  
 should at least preserve themselves guiltless of the  
 blood and desolation likely to ensue.<sup>1</sup>

In the House of Lords Shaftesbury proposed, what  
 he described “as the sole remaining chance of security  
 “for liberty and religion,” a bill of divorce, which, by  
 separating the king from Catherine, might enable him  
 to marry a Protestant princess, and to leave the crown  
 to his legitimate issue.<sup>2</sup> The earls of Essex and Salis-

<sup>1</sup> C. Journ. Nov. 17, 22, 26, 27.

<sup>2</sup> It should be remarked that the exclusionists never attempted to



bury and the Lord Howard of Escrick supported the motion; which was as warmly opposed by the earls of Halifax and Bridgewater. Charles, however, declared that he would never consent to the disgrace of an unoffending woman; he openly solicited the votes of the peers against the measure; and its originator, despairing of the result, suffered it to sleep for a while, with the hope of bringing it forward again under more favourable auspices, and with a better prospect of success.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
VI.  
A.D. 1680.

Hitherto the session had brought to the popular leaders nothing but disappointment and defeat; the prosecution of William Howard, Lord Viscount Stafford, gave to them a victory, but a victory which covered them with disgrace. Of the victims sacrificed to the perjury of Oates and his brother informers not one had died without protestations of innocence; and the truth of these protestations had been strongly confirmed by the repeated acquittal of their surviving companions during the last summer. The credit of the plot, the credit of the majorities in both houses who had so loudly and so frequently pronounced their belief in its existence, and the credit of the statesmen who had employed it as an engine to move the passions of the people, and as a weapon of offence against the duke of York, were evidently at stake. To maintain the reputation and the influence of the party, a conviction was necessary, and to obtain such conviction no art was left untried which the desire of victory could suggest. Hence it was, that when the lords in the Tower, after their long and rigorous con-

move the question of Monmouth's legitimacy, whence Ralph justly infers that they knew it would not bear inquiry.—Ralph, 560.

<sup>1</sup> James (Memoirs), i. 618. Macpherson, i. 109.

CHAP. VI.  
A.D. 1680. — finement,<sup>1</sup> demanded a trial, the Commons did not bring them together to the bar, but selected the Lord Stafford, who on account of his age and infirmities appeared the least able to make a powerful defence; and in addition they exposed him, during the proceedings, to insults capable of unnerving the stoutest heart, and refused to him those indulgences which humanity, if not justice, seemed to demand. 1. Each day, as the noble prisoner proceeded to the hall, or returned to the Tower, he was constantly surrounded and assailed by crowds of miscreants, sounding in his ears the most hideous yells and most appalling imprecations. He complained to the court of such treatment, but complained in vain. These cries, he said, wounded his feelings, and disturbed his thoughts; they disabled him from attending to his defence; they took from him that calmness of mind so necessary to a man pleading for his life. 2. On the second day, when the witness Dugdale came to the capital offence, and deposed to the assent said to have been given by Lord Stafford to the design of assassinating the king, a cheer of congratulation, an expression of feeling suited more to savages than civilized men, burst from the members of both houses, and ran through the

<sup>1</sup> On the 21st of May, 1680, Lord Stafford was brought by habeas corpus before the court of King's Bench, and demanded to be discharged on bail, as he had been eighteen months in prison without being brought to trial. The chief justice refused, on the ground that the Lords had declared that impeachments continued from parliament to parliament. Lord Stafford replied that he asked for nothing but what the law granted to every Englishman: by law he had a right to be bailed; nor would the granting of his demand infringe the order of the Lords; for, whether he were in prison or out on bail, he should be equally forthcoming when called upon. But the judges were unwilling to interfere, and advised him to petition the king.—See his letter to his son in the possession of his descendant, the present Lord Stafford.

hall. "What," exclaimed the lord high steward, "is  
 "the meaning of this? For the honour and dignity  
 "of public justice, let us not carry it as if we were  
 "in a theatre!" 3. The counsel of Lord Stafford  
 attended to argue points of law, if any such points  
 should arise. Yet so captious was the jealousy of the  
 managers, so ardent their desire of a conviction, that  
 they would not permit the counsel to stand within a  
 certain distance of the prisoner, lest they might by a  
 whisper or sign suggest to him some question or re-  
 mark, useful for his defence, or embarrassing to their  
 witnesses. 4. When the Commons had concluded  
 their case, and the accused solicited the respite of a  
 day to prepare his answer, urging his fatigue, his in-  
 firmities, his want of sleep, and the precedent of a  
 similar indulgence in the case of Lord Strafford, they  
 sternly withheld their assent; and the Lords, through  
 fear of giving offence, had the inhumanity to refuse a  
 request, which was originally suggested by the high  
 steward, and had been pronounced by him reasonable  
 and just.<sup>1</sup>

Westminster Hall had been fitted up for the trial  
 after the form which had been adopted during the  
 proceedings against Lord Strafford. The interior ex-  
 hibited an exact resemblance of the House of Lords;  
 on each side ascending rows of benches were appro-  
 priated to the members of the House of Commons;  
 the managers, the witnesses, and the accused were  
 stationed near the bar, in face of the lord high  
 steward; on the right of that officer the king with his  
 attendants, on the left the queen with hers, occupied  
 a private box; and above them a spacious gallery  
 accommodated the foreign ambassadors, and other

<sup>1</sup> Trial of Lord Stafford, folio, 1680-1, pp. 40, 42, 65.

CHAP. VI. privileged individuals. Finch, the chancellor, dis-  
 A.D. 1680. charged the office of lord high steward; and the  
 — managers for the Commons were Maynard, who forty  
 years before had been similarly engaged in the trial  
 of Lord Strafford, Winnington, Treby, Jones, Powle,  
 and Trevor, the most distinguished lawyers in the  
 house.

On the thirtieth of November (it was his sixty-  
 ninth birthday, but whether the coincidence arose  
 from design or chance is unknown) this venerable  
 nobleman was placed at the bar to plead against the  
 informers, and politicians, and zealots who thirsted for  
 Nov. 30. his blood. The day was spent by the managers in an  
 attempt to establish the existence of the plot. With  
 this view they detailed to the audience all those per-  
 nicious doctrines which have been so often, and so  
 falsely, attributed to the church of Rome; that faith  
 is not to be kept with heretics, that heterodox sove-  
 reigns may be lawfully deposed and murdered by their  
 subjects, and that actions, vicious of their own nature,  
 become virtuous, when their object is the benefit of  
 the church. They then reminded their hearers of the  
 persecution under Queen Mary, of the gunpowder  
 plot, of the massacre of the French Huguenots, and  
 of the rebellion in Ireland; they attributed to the  
 Catholics the burning of London, the destruction of  
 the fleet at Chatham, and the subsequent fires in the  
 metropolis; they painted in vivid colours all the  
 horrors disclosed by Oates and his associates, the in-  
 tended assassination of the king, the massacre of the  
 Protestants, the auxiliary armies of French papists, of  
 wild Irishmen, and of Spanish pilgrims; and they  
 urged the death of Godfrey, the correspondence of  
 Coleman, and the convictions of that intriguer, of

Langhorne, and of the Jesuits. In the next place they threw out menaces of vengeance against all who should presume to defame the king's witnesses, or affirm the innocence of the peers in the Tower; called on the lords to display the love of truth, and zeal for the Protestant cause; and predicted that, if justice were done in this case, popery would be for ever banished out of the English world. Having thus prepared the minds of the audience, they called five witnesses, Dugdale, Oates, France, Turberville, and Denis, men whose very characters were a sufficient condemnation of the cause which they appeared to support. They deposed to things, many of them utterly incredible, and many morally impossible; that the pope, the cardinals, and the Jesuits had for several years made this, their design of assassinating the king, the subject of common discourse and of public sermons in Italy; that the moment the king should fall, the papists, confessedly a small body of men, would rise and cut the throats of the Protestants, and that such Protestants as had the good fortune to escape the knives of the assassins would nevertheless fall by the swords of the popish army, though whence that army was to come, or by what means it was to be raised, no man could describe or conceive. To the testimony of these men Lord Stafford was content to reply, that no part of it was in any manner applicable to him.<sup>1</sup>

On the second day the managers undertook to bring the charge home to the accused. Dugdale deposed to three facts: 1. That Lord Stafford, at a consult at Tixall, had given his consent to the king's death: 2. That on a subsequent Sunday, coming from Stafford

CHAP.  
VI.  
A.D. 1680.

Dec. 1.

<sup>1</sup> Trial, 7—39.

CHAP. VI.  
A.D. 1680. to Tixall to hear mass, he met the deponent, and told him that the Catholic worship would soon be established in England: and 3. That on the 20th or 21st of September, sending for the witness to his chamber, he offered him five hundred pounds if he would undertake to assassinate the king. Dugdale was repeatedly urged to name the time of the consult; but he kept himself on his guard; though a latitude of ten and subsequently of fourteen days was offered, still no ingenuity could extort from him any other answer than that it was held about the end of August, or the beginning of September, 1678.

Oates followed. Besides his pretended acquaintance with many letters, in which Lord Stafford had expressed his adhesion to the plot, he swore positively that he saw Fenwick deliver into the hands of the prisoner a patent from the general of the Jesuits, appointing him paymaster to the Catholic army. To Oates succeeded Turberville, a younger son of a Catholic family in Glamorganshire, who, finding himself reduced to poverty, had conformed to the established church, and put in his claim for the reward promised to informers.<sup>1</sup> This witness declared that in Paris he had been three weeks with Lord Stafford, who earnestly solicited him to murder the king. His deposition closed the case for the prosecution; and the prisoner was called upon for his defence. He observed, that he had good reason to believe that the doctrines so ostentatiously put forward by the managers, were not the doctrines of the church of Rome; at all events, they were not his

<sup>1</sup> According to his sworn "information," he was at first gentleman usher to Lady Mary Molineux, and afterwards sent to Douai to become a friar, but ran away from the convent, which so enraged his relations, that his brother disinherited him.—Inform. 5, 7.

doctrines ; he had always looked on them with abhor-  
 rence, and therefore was not answerable for them ; that  
 his past life had borne witness to his loyalty, and had  
 earned for him the approbation of his sovereign ; and  
 that his conduct on the first discovery of the plot was  
 a satisfactory proof of his innocence. Had he been  
 conscious that Oates the informer saw him accept the  
 traitorous commission, and that others had been sub-  
 orned by him to murder the king, would he not have  
 sought to preserve his life by flight or concealment ?  
 Yet seven days afterwards he came publicly to Lon-  
 don, and continued to attend his duty in parliament,  
 till he was taken into custody. Again, two commis-  
 sioners from the House of Lords, and subsequently  
 others from [the council, had come to him in the  
 Tower, with a promise of a full pardon, if he would  
 only confess what he knew of the conspiracy. Was it  
 to be conceived that, with the knowledge of the fate  
 which had befallen those who were found guilty, and  
 of the fate which awaited himself in the event of con-  
 viction, he would have refused the proposal, if he had  
 been conscious of guilt ? These things he offered as  
 strong presumptions in his favour ; and then requested  
 the respite of a day to prepare for his defence. That  
 the request was refused is already known to the reader.<sup>1</sup>

The following morning he boldly met the charges  
 against him. Each of the three witnesses was, he  
 maintained, a perjured villain ; and whoever impar-  
 tially considers his proofs must admit the truth of the  
 assertion.<sup>2</sup> Of Dugdale he showed that the informer

<sup>1</sup> Trial, 52—56, 65.

<sup>2</sup> Of course I must confine myself to the more important points  
 of the case. Unfortunately Lord Stafford urged in addition a great  
 variety of proofs, many of them more liable to objection from an  
 ingenious opponent. This enabled the managers, by disputing the

CHAP. VI.  
A.D. 1680. knew nothing of the pretended consult at Tixall when he made his original deposition upon oath in December, 1678. It was seven months later, at the trial of Sir George Wakeman, that he first announced its existence to the public; but then he fixed it in the month of August, now he sought to transfer it to the beginning of September. But this artifice would not avail him. Lord Stafford, as was clearly proved, spent the month of August in Bath, and did not arrive at Tixall till the 12th of September, much too late to attend a consult there about the end of one month or the beginning of the other. Again, of the pretended offer of five hundred pounds on the 20th or 21st of September for the murder of the king, Dugdale was equally ignorant at the time of his original information. He then, indeed, mentioned an interview with Lord Stafford on the 20th; and charged him with saying, "that there was a design in hand, and that, if Dugdale would undertake it, he should have a good reward, and would make himself famous;" but, to learn the nature of this design, he hastened from Lord Stafford to Evers the Jesuit, and by him, having previously taken an oath of secrecy, was informed that it had for its object the assassination of the king.<sup>1</sup> How could that deposition be reconciled with his testimony on the present trial? How could he be ignorant of the design if he had already assisted at the consult in which it was determined, and had even received an offer of five hundred pounds to carry it into execution?

Against Oates Lord Stafford objected, 1. That this

accuracy of his statements and the credit of some of his witnesses, to withdraw the attention of the court from that which constituted the most important part of his defence.

<sup>1</sup> Trial, 69—95, 103. This information may be seen in the Lords' Journals. *iii.* 442.



witness, according to his own testimony, not only pre- CHAP.  
tended to be a Catholic while he was in reality a Pro- VI.  
testant, but during his voluntary transactions with the A.D. 1680.  
Jesuits had lived in the practice of a religious worship  
which in his conscience he believed to be idolatrous.

Was a man of this degraded character, a miscreant of such deep dissimulation and hypocrisy, one who would even commit idolatry for the accomplishment of his purpose, admissible as a witness in a court of justice?

2. Oates had stated that, if he had descended to such discreditable arts, it was to discover the secrets of the Jesuits; that he had succeeded in obtaining their confidence, had been employed by them to arrange all their papers, and to distribute their treasonable commissions, and yet, out of the multitude of documents which passed through his hands, he had not preserved a single line, to prove the truth of any one of his pretended discoveries. 3. This was not the first time that Oates had charged Lord Stafford upon oath. In one deposition he had made him secretary of state, in another he had named him without any office; and now he comes forward and swears that, three months before his first affidavit, he saw Lord Stafford receive from the hands of Fenwick, the Jesuit, a commission appointing him paymaster of the army. How was it possible to reconcile these different oaths, or to attach credit to the testimony of a man who had voluntarily taken them all.<sup>1</sup>

To the evidence of Turberville the prisoner opposed,  
1. A solemn assertion that he was a perfect stranger to the person and name of the informer: 2. The testimony of the two servants who attended him in Paris,

<sup>1</sup> Trial, 95—102. See the depositions in State Trials, vi. 612; and L. Journ. xiii. 327.

CHAP. that they never saw Turberville in their master's house:  
 VI.  
 A.D. 1680. 3. The acknowledgment of Turberville himself at the  
 — bar, that he knew not the servant, nor could describe the house, or the rooms, or their furniture; and, lastly, the depositions of different persons, that Turberville, after he had conformed to the established church, repeatedly asserted, and sometimes with oaths, that he knew nothing respecting the plot. In addition to these, Dr. Lloyd, the bishop of St. Asaph, at whose table Turberville, after his conversion, dined for the space of three months, might have testified the same, and with still greater effect; but a menace, artfully thrown out by Winnington in his opening speech, had terrified the prelate, and he thought it better to allow innocent blood to be shed, than to encounter in its defence the displeasure of the House of Commons.<sup>1</sup>

Dec. 4. Three of the managers were heard in reply. They maintained that the reality of the plot was now proved beyond dispute, and that the evidence against the prisoner was clear and conclusive; they dwelt minutely on all the weak points of his case, and the apparent inaccuracy of a part of his statements; and they urged the contradiction which had been given to some of his witnesses, and the probability that others, who were

<sup>1</sup> Lloyd, from having been Turberville's religious instructor, was enabled to judge that his testimony at the trial was nothing but fiction. Unfortunately, he had recently published a treatise, in which, to create dissension among the Catholic clergy, he had praised the secular priests at the expense of the religious orders (Burnet, ii. 259), and Winnington, to terrify the bishop, complained of this book in his opening speech, as "artificially written in favour of popery, and deserving what it would undoubtedly receive, a particular consideration." The prelate, urged by conscience on one side, and deterred by fear on the other, consulted his friends whether he was bound to come forward in the defence of innocence at the risk of bringing on his own head the vengeance of the House of Commons, and they very indulgently resolved the case in favour of his timidity.—Burnet. ii. 258.

Catholics, had been previously tutored to serve his purpose ; but the most important feature in the case, the charge of perjury against their own witnesses, seems almost to have escaped their notice. The pretended consult at Tixall, a manifest forgery, they were content to waive, because the prisoner objected the uncertainty of Dugdale as to the time ; and on the glaring inconsistency between the testimony of that witness, as well as that of Oates, and their original informations, they made no comment whatever. The condemnation of an innocent man seems not to have alarmed their consciences. They acted as if they thought it their duty to employ all the powers of their eloquence, all the resources of their ingenuity, to procure a conviction ; leaving it to the court to detect the fallacy of their reasoning, to unravel the web which they had so artfully woven, to sift out the truth from that accumulation of chaff under which they had buried it. If injustice were done, the judges, not the advocates, were to be responsible.<sup>1</sup>

The prisoner now made his exceptions in point of law ; of which the principal were, that impeachments in parliament determine at the dissolution of parliament, and that two witnesses are necessary to prove an overt act of treason. The first of these the Lords would not allow to be argued—it had already been decided by their house ; on the second day they consulted the judges, who replied unanimously that it was sufficient if one witness proved one overt act, and a second another, both being directed towards the accomplishment of the same treason. It is difficult to believe that such could be the original meaning of the legislature, if we consider the real object for which

CHAP.  
VI.  
A.D. 1680.

<sup>1</sup> Trial, 169—192.

CHAP. VI. the statute of treasons passed. But this explanation  
 A.D. 1680. was first given under the commonwealth in the trial  
 — of Love before the high court of justice; it was adopted by the judges at the restoration in the trials of the regicides, and has ever since continued to be the doctrine of the courts.<sup>1</sup>

Dec. 7. On the seventh day the Lords assembled in the hall; the high steward called on them in order, beginning with the junior baron; and each, placing his right hand on his breast, pronounced his judgment "upon his honour." Out of eighty-six voices, one-and-thirty declared the prisoner innocent, fifty-five guilty. He was now introduced, and informed of the unfavourable result. It proved far different from what he had anticipated; but he mastered his feelings. "God's holy name be praised," was his answer. "I confess I am surprised at it; but God's will be done, and 'your lordships': I will not murmur at it. God forgive those who have sworn falsely against me." The Commons in a body, with the speaker at their head, demanded judgment; and the high steward, after a laboured speech, which showed, if he spoke his real sentiments, how miserably prejudice had benighted his understanding, or if he did not, how anxiously he sought to conciliate the victorious party,<sup>2</sup> adjudged the prisoner to suffer the usual punishment of traitors. "My lords," said the unfortunate viscount, "give me leave to speak a few words. I thank you for all your favours to me. I do here, in the presence of Almighty God, declare that I have no malice in my

<sup>1</sup> Trial, 193—198.

<sup>2</sup> I should think the last was his object. For what other purpose could he tell Lord Stafford that now no man could doubt that London was burnt by the papists—a subject on which not one tittle of evidence had been given at the trial?—State Trials, 1556.

"heart against those who have condemned me. I  
 "know not who they are, nor desire to know. I for-  
 "give them all, and beseech your lordships all to pray  
 "for me. But I have one humble request to make,  
 "that for the short time I have to live I may not be  
 "a close prisoner, as I have been of late, but may be  
 "allowed to see my wife and children, and friends."  
 The request was granted, with a promise that the  
 Lords would also be suitors to his majesty to remit  
 every part of his punishment but the striking off his  
 head. At these words he burst into tears; but, sud-  
 denly collecting himself, said, "My lords, it is not your  
 "justice, but your kindness, that makes me weep."<sup>1</sup>

That Lord Stafford should have been condemned by  
 so numerous a majority must have provoked the sur-  
 prise of the reader. But he should recollect that the  
 same object will often appear in a very dissimilar light  
 to the spectator who views it calmly from a distance,  
 and to the man who acts under the influence of public  
 excitement, and with a judgment swayed by the views  
 and prejudices of party. It is also to be remembered  
 that Lord Stafford was not arraigned before a jury of  
 indifferent individuals; his fate was decided by the  
 votes of men who were parties to the prosecution, and  
 interested in his conviction. The House of Lords  
 had been employed for two sessions in investigating  
 the plot, in procuring evidence, in forwarding the trials  
 of the accused. They had excited the passions of the  
 people by their votes, had published their conviction  
 of the existence of the plot, had made that conviction  
 the ground of a severe persecution of the whole body  
 of Catholics, and had thrown into prison the persons  
 who ventured to express a doubt of the honesty of the

<sup>1</sup> Trial, 209—214.

CHAP. VI.  
A.D. 1680. — informers. Had they now, in opposition to the positive oaths of the same informers, acquitted the prisoner, they would have done what they so arbitrarily punished in others; they must have acknowledged that the plot was a fiction; they must have taken shame to themselves for the excitement, the miseries, and the bloodshed which they had caused. It should, moreover, be observed, that the trial came on at a moment most unfavourable to the noble prisoner, immediately after the rejection of the bill of exclusion, when one party was goaded almost to madness by the sting of disappointment, and the other, alarmed by the threats, sought to pacify the vengeance of their adversaries.<sup>1</sup> It will not then excite surprise if, under the influence of such motives, many were disposed to look rather to the testimony of the witnesses than to the objections against their veracity; and to persuade themselves that, if they judged wrongly, the blame must rest, not with themselves, but with those by whose oaths they had been deceived.<sup>2</sup>

Among the friends, or pretended friends, who visited Lord Stafford after his condemnation, were Doctor Burnet and the bishop of London. They exhorted him to attend to the welfare of his soul, and offered to point out to him the erroneous doctrines of the church of Rome. He replied that his time was

<sup>1</sup> This certainly appears from their refusal of granting Lord Stafford a day's preparation for his defence.

<sup>2</sup> North, *Examen*, 219. "Very few of the lords who found him guilty would own that they gave full credit to the witnesses. The chief justice North asked how, then, they could condemn him? In answer, he was told that they were bound by the legal proof of facts, and the witnesses, by swearing to the facts, had furnished such proof: to which he replied that peers, like juries, had to weigh the credibility both of the persons and the things."  
—*Lives of the Norths*, i. 328.

so short, and therefore so precious, that he could not afford to spend it in religious controversy. From the care of the soul they descended to that of the body. CHAP.  
VI.  
A.D. 1680.

To one of their inquiries he replied, that of a conspiracy against the king he had neither any knowledge nor so much as a suspicion. Many projects for the purpose of obtaining toleration had, indeed, been agitated among the Catholics. These he might disclose as the price of his life, though that disclosure would earn for him the displeasure of the duke of York. This last hint produced its effect. Burnet brought him a message from Lord Essex, Lord Russell, and Sir William Jones, that if he would discover what he knew respecting such designs, particularly respecting the conduct of the duke, he should be excused from confessing the charges against himself; and the earl of Carlisle informed the lords that his unfortunate kinsman would be ready in the course of two days to give full information of all that he knew in reference to the plot. But the house refused to wait; and, with the king's permission, Lord Stafford was immediately placed at the bar. He said, that the Catholics had made several attempts to procure an abolition, or at least a mitigation, of their sufferings. Long ago he himself had proposed to exchange the fines and penalties, to which they were subject, for the annual payment of one hundred thousand pounds to the king. Lord Shaftesbury, who was then chancellor of the exchequer, approved the offer; but the Catholics objected to so large a sum, and the project was abandoned. Subsequently a measure of relief, founded on a new oath of civil allegiance, was brought into parliament, but lost through the obstinacy of Lord Bristol. After this the

Dec. 18.

CHAP. VI. opposition of Lord Clarendon and the bishops to the  
 A D. 1680. declaration of indulgence extinguished his hopes,  
 — which, however, were subsequently rekindled by the report of the conversion of the duke of York to the Catholic faith. It was then proposed to form a coalition between the Catholics and the country party, for the purpose of procuring, in the first place, the dissolution of the parliament, and in the next the toleration of the Catholic worship. This plan obtained the approbation of all to whom he had submitted it, of the duke of York, of the lord chancellor, and of Lord Shaftesbury. But the moment Shaftesbury was mentioned, the house interrupted his discourse. He was brought there, not to defame the great champion of Protestantism, but to disclose the particulars of the plot; and, on his solemn protestation that he had never any knowledge of the plot, he was remanded to the Tower.<sup>1</sup>

The same day the sheriffs received the warrant for his decapitation, but disputed its validity.<sup>2</sup> They could not conceive why the king should interfere at all with the execution. The cause had not been tried before him: the House of Lords had pronounced the judgment, and it was for the same court to enforce it.

<sup>1</sup> Lords' Journals, 721. Reresby, 109. Echard, 997. Burnet, ii. 264. Lord Stafford left behind him an autograph copy of this communication. The latter part of it has been lost; from the first portion of it I have been enabled to correct some errors of the preceding authorities.

<sup>2</sup> "I think it a terrible thing," says James, "to sign a warrant for putting a man to death upon the testimony of such perjured villains as those who deposed against Lord Stafford; and I hope his majesty will have considered the trouble it was ever after to the king his father the having signed the warrant for the execution of Lord Strafford; and, if it be not too late, why should not you put him in mind of it, it being a terrible thing the shedding the blood of an innocent man, as I am most confident Lord Stafford is."—Letter to Hyde, *Clar. Cor.* i. 50.



In this pretended perplexity they applied by petition to the Lords, and received for answer that “the king’s CHAP. VI. A.D. 1680.  
 “writ ought to be obeyed.” They were not, however, satisfied; they began to question the authority of the Lords also; and solicited the direction of the House of Commons. At their request the four following queries were laid before that house: “Can the king, being neither party nor judge, order the execution? Can the Lords award the execution? Can the king dispense with any part of the execution? If he can dispense with a part, why not with all?” But the majority of the Commons betrayed no wish to entertain a subject which would have drawn after it an altercation both with the king and the Lords; and, on the motion of Sir William Jones, the petitioners were informed, that “the house was content the sheriffs should execute William, late Viscount Stafford, by severing his head from his body only.” The suggestion obtained for Jones the reputation of ingenuity: a vote more insulting to the sovereign could not easily have been devised.<sup>1</sup>

Much conjecture was expended respecting the motives which actuated the sheriffs. They were Cornish and Bethel, who after a long contest had been returned in opposition to the court;<sup>2</sup> and their professed

<sup>1</sup> L. Journ. xiii. 724. C. Journ. Dec. 23. Parl. Hist. iv. 1261. State Trials, vii. 1562. North, 219. It is observed by Mr. Hargrave, that in this warrant (see it, Trial, 215) the judgment against Lord Stafford is stated to be, not by the king, or the king and Lords, or with the assent of the king, but by the Lords only, not the Lords temporal or spiritual, or the Lords generally, but expressly by the Lords temporal.—Opinion and Argument of Mr. Hargrave, p. 86.

<sup>2</sup> They were chosen at the usual time, Midsummer-day, but, as they refused to receive the sacrament and abjure the covenant, a new election was fixed for the 14th of July. Before that time they qualified, and were opposed by Nicholson and Box in the interests of the court. At the close of the poll, the numbers stood for Cornish 2,483, Bethel 2,276, Box 1,428, and Nicholson 1,230.—Echard, 989.

CHAP. devotion to Shaftesbury and his more intimate asso-  
 VI. ciates provoked a strong suspicion that they were  
 A.D. 1680. — advised and guided by that nobleman. But what was  
 the object? It could not be that any doubt was  
 seriously entertained of the king's right. That right  
 had been uniformly exercised without dispute by pre-  
 ceding monarchs. Scarcely a reign had passed with-  
 out the conviction or attainder of some peer for  
 treason; and in every instance, when the judgment  
 was carried into effect, the execution took place in  
 virtue of a similar warrant, and by the same man-  
 ner of death. It is equally difficult to believe that  
 the same spirit of remorseless bigotry which displayed  
 itself by the burst of congratulation at the trial, could  
 pursue its victim after condemnation, and seek to in-  
 crease the bitterness of his death by adding to the  
 poignancy of his sufferings and the ignominy of his  
 punishment. Perhaps it was one of those dark and  
 dangerous contrivances, which teemed in the prolific  
 brain of Shaftesbury, and of which the object was to  
 point the clamour of the people against the court by  
 holding out the king as the friend and favourer of the  
 papists.<sup>1</sup>

Supported by the consciousness of innocence, and  
 by the persuasion that he was about to perish a martyr  
 Dec. 29. to his religion, Stafford proceeded with a steady step  
 and cheerful countenance to the place of execution.  
 The severity of the weather induced him to ask for a

<sup>1</sup> If we may believe Echard (p. 1035), "Lord Russell's zeal against  
 "Lord Stafford transported him so far, that he was one of those  
 "who, with Bethel, Cornish, &c., questioned the king's power in  
 "allowing that lord to be only beheaded." In another place he says  
 that Charles, alluding to this, said, when he granted the same miti-  
 gation to him after his condemnation, "My Lord Russell will now  
 "see that I have a power to change his sentence."—Id. p. 1034.

cloak, lest, as he said, if he should tremble through cold, it might be taken for a symptom of fear. At his appearance a few yells and groans were heard; and to his request that the sheriffs would interfere, we are told that Cornish returned this brutal answer: "I am ordered to stop no one's mouth but your own." As, however, he passed on, the people treated him with respect, and many uncovered their heads. From the scaffold he delivered a long speech with a firm voice and much animation. He indignantly repelled the foul calumnies which had been uttered against his religion at his trial, and asserted his own innocence in the most energetic terms. He declared on his salvation that he had never in his life spoken to either Oates or Turberville, nor more than twice or thrice to Dugdale, and then only on trifling matters, and always in the presence of others.<sup>1</sup> Falling on his knees, he pronounced aloud a prayer composed for the occasion, and rising, once more protested his innocence. The spectators listened to him with bare heads, and answered with cries of "We believe you, my lord—" "God bless you, my lord!" Having embraced his friends, he knelt down and stretched himself on the block. The executioner poised the axe in the air, as if he were taking aim; but suddenly checking himself, brought it down again to his feet. Lord Stafford, raising his head, inquired the cause of the delay; and was told that he waited for a sign: "Take your own time," he replied; "I shall make no sign." "Do you forgive me, sir?" said the executioner. "I do," was his reply. After this short dialogue, he resumed

CHAP.  
VI.  
A.D. 1680.

<sup>1</sup> See "The Speech of Wm. late Lord Viscount Stafford, London, "printed for Wm. Bailey, 1680." Four drafts of this speech, in the hand of the unfortunate viscount, are in the possession of Lord Stafford.

CHAP. VI. his former posture, and at one stroke his head was severed from the body. The spirit with which he had defended himself at his trial surpassed the expectations of his friends and confounded the hopes of his enemies; and his Christian piety and fearless deportment on the scaffold confirmed the growing opinion of his innocence. The patrons of the plot derived no benefit from his death.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Trial, 218. State Trials, vii. 1563, 1568. Burnet, ii. 266. Echard, 997. Reresby, 112. See Note (F). Reresby, a few days before (Dec. 24), attended the king's *couchée* for two hours. Charles "seemed quite free from care and trouble, though one would have thought at this time he should have been overwhelmed therewith; "for everybody now imagined he must either dismiss the parliament "in a few days, or deliver himself up to their pressing desires; "but the straits he was in seemed no ways to embarrass him" (p. 110).

## APPENDIX.

NOTE A, p. 78.

*Extract of a Letter from Charles II. to the Lord Chancellor.*

“Now I am on this matter, I thinke it necessary to give you a little good counsell in it, least you may thinke that by making a further stirr in the businesse, you may diverte me from my resolution, which all the world shall never do ; and I wish I may be unhappy in this world and in the world to come, if I faile in the least degree of what I have resolved, which is of making my Lady Castlemaine of my wive’s bedchamber, and whosoever I finde use any endeavour to hinder this resolution of myne (excepte it be only to myselfe), I will be his enemy to the last moment of my life. You know how true a friend I have been to you. If you will oblige me eternally, make this businesse as easy to me as you can, of what opinion soever you are of ; for I am resolved to go through with this matter, let what will come of it, which again I solemnly swear before Almighty God. Therefore, if you desire to have the countenance of my friendship, medle no more with this businesse, except it be to beat down all false and scandalous reports, and to facilitate what I am sure my honour is so much concerned in. And whosoever I find to be my Lady Castlemaine’s enemy in this matter, I do promise upon my word to be his enemy as long as I live. You may shew this letter to my lord lieutenant (Ormond), and if you have both a minde to oblige me, carry yourselves like friends to me in this matter.”—Lansdowne MSS. 1206, 121.

NOTE B, p. 183.

*The secret Treaty of 1670.*

[This important treaty was kept secret till the year 1830, when the late Lord Clifford permitted me to publish it from the original in his possession.]

CHARLES R.

Charles par la grace de dieu roy de la Grande-Bretagne, France et Irelande, defenseur de la foye, à tous ceux qui ces présentes lettres verront, Salut. Ayant leu et meurement consideré les pouvoirs du sieur Colbert, ambassadeur de nostre très-cher et très-amié

frère et cousin le roy très-chrestien dattés du 31 Octobre, 1669, par lesquels notre dit frère luy donne autorité de conférer avec les commissaires, que nous pourrions nommer, traicter, conclurre, et signer des articles d'une plus étroite amitié, liaison et confédération entre nous, et déclare que nulle autre alliance ne luy peut estre plus agréable ny plus avantageuse à ses sujets, nous qui sommes dans les mesmes dispositions, et qui n'avons point de désir plus ardent que de nous lier d'une amitié parfaite et indissoluble avec nostre d<sup>r</sup> frère, y estant conviés et par la proximité du sang, l'affection et estime que nous avons pour sa personne, les avantages qui en reviennent aux peuples que dieu a soumis à nostre obéissance, et sur tout l'appuy et assistance, que nous nous pouvons promettre de l'amitié et du zele d'un si puissant allié dans le dessein que nous avons (avec la grace de dieu) de nous reconcilier avec l'église Romaine, donner par la le repos à nostre conscience, et procurer le bien de la religion catholique, Sçavoir faisons q'ayans une entière confiance en la fidélité, suffisance, zele, et prudence de nostre très-féal et bien-amé le my lord Arlington, conseiller en nostre conseil privé et nostre premier secrétaire d'estat ; nostre très-féal et bien-amé le my lord Arundel de Warder ; nostre très-féal et bien-amé le sieur chevalier Clifford, conseiller en nostre conseil privé, thrésorier de nostre maison, et commissaire de nos finances ; nostre féal et bien-amé le sieur chevalier Bellings, secrétaire des commandmens de la reyne nostre très-chere espouse, nous avons les dits my lords Arlington et Arundel, les sieurs chevaliers Clifford et Bellings commis, ordonné et député, commettons, ordonnons, et députons par ces présentes signées de nostre main, et leur avons donné et donnons plein pouvoir, autorité, commission, et mandement spécial, de conférer avec ledit sieur Colbert, ambassadeur de nostre très-cher et très-amé frère et cousin le roy trèschrestien, des moyens de parvenir à l'establissement d'une plus estroite amitié, liaison et confédération entre nous, et traicter et convenir ensemble, et sur iceux conclurre, et signer tels articles et conventions que nos dits commissaires aviseront bon estre tant sur le fait du commerce, que sur toutes autres sortes d'affaires et d'intérêts, et mesme de ligues offensives et deffensives, et generalmente faire, negotier, promettre, accorder et signer tout ce qu'ils estimeront nécessaire pour les effets cy dessus dits : Promettant, foye et parolle de roy, sous l'obligation et hypothèque de tous nos biens présens et à venir de tenir ferme et stable, et d'accomplir, sans jamais y contrevenir n'y permettre qu'il y soit contrevenu, tout ce qui par nos dits commissaires aura esté stipulé promis et accordé en vertu du présent pouvoir, et d'en faire expédier nos lettres de ratification en bonne forme, et les fournir dans le temps qu'il nous y auront obligez ; en tesmoing de quoy nous avons fait mettre aux dites présentes le sêel de nostre secret. Donnée à Whitehall le quinziesme de Décembre, l'an mil six cens soixante et neuf, et de nostre regne le vingt et uniesme.

Par commandement de sa Ma<sup>te</sup>

ARLINGTON.

Au nom de Dieu tout puissant soit notoire à tous et un chacun, que comme ainsy soit que le sérénissime et très-puissant prince Charles second par la grace de dieu roy de la Grande-Bretagne, et le sérénissime et très-puissant prince Louis quatorziesme par la mesme grace de dieu roy trèschrestien, auroient tousjours donné tous leurs soins et toute leur application à procurer à leurs sujets une félicité parfaite, et que leur propre expérience leur auroit assés fait connoistre que ce bonheur commun ne se peut rencontrer que dans une très estroite union, alliance, et confédération entre leurs personnes et les pays et estats qui leur sont sousmis, à quoy s'estant trouvés esgallement portés, tant par la sincere amitié et affection que la proximité du sang, celle de leurs royaumes, et beau-coup d'autres convenances ont estably entre eux, et qu'ils ont conservé chèrement au plus fort des desmêlés que les intérêts d'autrui leur ont fait avoir ensemble, que par le désir qu'ils ont de pourvoir à la seureté de leurs dits pays et estats, comme aussy au bien et à la commodité de leurs sujets dont le commerce doit recevoir dans la suite du temps de notables avantages de cette bonne correspondance et liaison d'intérêts ; les dits seigneurs roys pour exécuter ce saint et louable désir, et pour tousjours fortifier, confirmer, et entretenir la bonne amitié et intelligence qui est à present entre eux, ont commis et député chacun de sa part, sçavoir ledit seigneur roy de la Grande-Bretagne le my lord Arlington, conseiller au conseil privé de sa majesté, et son premier secrétaire d'estat, le my lord Arundel de Warder, le sieur chevalier Clifford, conseiller au conseil privé de sa majesté, thrésorier de sa maison, et commissaire de ses finances, le s<sup>r</sup> chevalier Bellings, secrétaire des commandemens de la reyne de la Grand-Bretagne, et ledit seigneur roy très-chretien le sieur Charles Colbert, seig<sup>r</sup> de Croissy, conseiller ord<sup>re</sup> de sa majesté en son conseil d'estat, et son ambassadeur ordinaire vers sa majesté de la Grande-Bretagne, suffisamment autorisés, ainsy qu'il apparoistra par la teneur des dits pouvoirs et commissions à eux respectivement donnés par lesdits seigneurs roys et insérés de mot à mot à la fin de ce présent traité, en vertu des quels pouvoirs ils ont accordé au noms des susdits seigneurs roys les articles qui ensuivent.

1. Il est convenu, arrêté et conclu qu'il y aura à toute perpétuité bonne secure et ferme paix, union, vraye confraternité, confédération, amitié, alliance, et bonne correspondance entre le dit seigneur roy de la Grande-Bretagne, ses hoirs, et successeurs d'une part, et le dit seigneur roy trèschrétien de l'autre, et entre tous et chacun de leurs royaumes, estats et territoires, comme aussy entre leurs sujets et vassaux, qu'ils ont ou possèdent à présent, ou pourront avoir, tenir, et posséder cy après, tant par mer et autres eaux que par terre : et pour tesmoigner que cette pair doit estre inviolable sans que rien au monde la puisse à jamais troubler il s'ensuit des articles d'une confiance si grande, et d'ailleurs si avantageuse aux dits seigneurs roys, qu'à peine trouvera-t-on que dans aucun siècle on en ait arrêté et conclu de plus importants.

2. Le seigneur roy de la Grande-Bretagne estant convaincu de

la vérité de la religion catholique, et résolu d'en faire sa déclaration, et de se réconcilier avec l'église Romaine aussy tost que le bien des affaires de son royaume luy pourra permettre, a tout sujet d'espérer et de se promettre de l'affection et de la fidélité de ses sujets qu'aucun d'eux, mesme de ceux sur qui dieu n'aura pas encore asses abondamment respandu ses graces pour les disposer par cet exemple si auguste à se convertir, ne manqueront jamais à l'obeissance inviolable que tous les peuples doivent à leurs souverains mesme de religion contraire ; néantmoins comme il se trouve quelques fois des esprits brouillons et inquiets qui s'efforcent de troubler la tranquillité publique principalement lorsqu'ils peuvent couvrir leurs mauvais desseins du prétexte plausible de religion, sa majesté de la Grande-Bretagne qui n'a rien plus à coeur (après le repos de sa conscience) que d'affermir celuy que la douceur de son gouvernement a procuré à ses sujets, a crû que le meilleur moien d'empêcher qu'il ne fust altéré, seroit d'estre assuré en cas de besoin de l'assistance de sa majesté très-chrestienne, laquelle voulant en cette occasion donner au seigneur roy de la Grande-Bretagne des preuves indubitables de la sincérité de son amitié, et contribuer au bon succès d'un dessein si glorieux, si util à sa majesté de la Grande-Bretagne, mesme à toute la religion catholique, a promis et promet de donner pour cet effet au dit seigneur roy de la Grande-Bretagne la somme de deux millions de livres tournoises dont la moitié sera payée trois mois après l'eschange des ratifications du présent traicté en espeece à l'ordre dudit seigneur roy de la Grande-Bretagne à Calais, Dieppe, ou bien au Havre de Grace, ou remis par lettres de change à Londres au risques, perils et frais dudit seigneur roy trèschrestien, et l'autre moitié de la mesme manière dans trois mois après : et en outre ledit seigneur roy trèschrestien s'oblige d'assister de troupes sa majesté de la Grande-Bretagne, jusqu'au nombre de six mille hommes de pied s'il est besoin, est mesme de les lever et entretenir à ses propres frais et despens, tant que ledit seigneur roy de la Grande-Bretagne jugera en avoir besoin pour l'exécution de son dessein ; et lesdites troupes seront transportées par les vaisseaux du roy de la Grande-Bretagne en tels lieux et ports qu'il jugera le plus à propos pour le bien de son service, et du jour de leur embarquement seront payées, ainsy qu'il est dit, par sa majesté trèschrestienne, et obéiront aux ordres du dit seigneur roy de la Grande-Bretagne ; et le temps de ladite déclaration de catolicité est entièrement remis au choix dudit seigneur roy de la Grande-Bretagne.

3. Item a esté convenu entre le roy trèschrestien et sa majesté de la Grande-Bretagne que ledit seigneur roy trèschrestien ne rompra ny n'enfreindra jamais la paix qu'il a fait avec l'Espagne, et ne contreviendra en chose quelconque à ce qu'il a promis par le traicté d'Aix la Chapelle, et par conséquent il sera permis au roy de la Grande-Bretagne de maintenir ledit traicté conformément aux conditions de la triple alliance, et des engagemens qui en dépendent.

4. Il est aussy convenu et accordé que s'il écheoit cy-après au roy trèschrestien de nouveaux tiltres et droits sur la monarchie



d'Espagne, ledit seigneur roy de la Grande-Bretagne assistera sa majesté trèschrestienne de toutes ses forces tant par mer que par terre, pour luy faciliter l'acquisition desdits droits, le tout suivant les conditions particulières dont lesdits seigneurs roys se reservent de convenir tant pour la jonction de leurs forces après que le cas de l'escheance desdits tiltres et droits sera arrivé, que pour les avantages que ledit seigneur roy pourra raisonnablement désirer : et lesdits seigneurs roys s'obligent reciproquement des à présent de ne faire aucun traicté de part n'y d'autre pour raisons desdits nouveaux droits et tiltres avec aucun prince ou potentat quel que ce puisse estre que de concert et du consentement de l'un et de l'autre.

5. Lesdits seigneurs roys ayant chacun en son particulier beaucoup plus de sujets qu'ils n'en auroient besoin pour justifier dans le monde la résolution qu'ils ont pris de mortifier l'orgueil des estats généraux des provinces unies de Pays Bas, et d'abbatre la puissance d'une nation qui s'est si souvent noircie d'une extrême ingratitude envers ses propres fondateurs et créateurs de cette république, et laquelle mesme a l'audace de se vouloir aujourd'huy eriger en souverains arbitres et juges de tous les autres potentats, il est convenu, arrêté et conclu, que leurs majestés déclareront et feront la guerre conjointement avec toutes leurs forces de terre et de mer aux dits estats généraux des provinces unies des Pays Bas, et qu'aucun desdits seigneurs roys ne pourra faire de traicté de paix, de trêves, ou de suspension d'armes avec eux, sans l'avis et le consentement de l'autre, comme aussi que tout commerce entre les sujets desdits seigneurs roys et ceux desdits estats sera défendu, et que les navires et biens de ceux qui trafiqueront nonobstant cette défense pourront estre saisis par les sujets de l'autre seigneur roy, et seront réputés de juste prise ; et tous traictés précédens faits entre lesdits estats et aucun desdit seigneurs roys ou leurs prédécesseurs demeureront nuls, excepté celuy de la triple alliance fait pour la manutention du traicté d'Aix la Chapelle, et si après la déclaration de la guerre on prend prisonniers les sujets d'aucun desdits seigneurs roys qui seront enrôllés au service desdits estats, ou s'y trouveront actuellement, ils seront exécutés à mort par la justice dudit seigneur roy dont les sujets les auront pris.

6. Et pour faire et conduire cette guerre aussy heureusement que lesdits seigneurs roys espèrent de la justice de la cause commune, il est aussy convenu que sa majesté trèschrestienne se chargera de toute la despense qu'il conviendra faire pour mettre sur pied, entretenir, et faire agir les armées nécessaires pour attaquer puissamment par terre les places et pays desdits estats, ledit seigneur roy de la Grande-Bretagne s'obligeant seulement de faire passer dans l'armée dudit seigneur roy trèschrestien, et d'y entretenir tousjours à ses despens un corps de six mil hommes de pied, dont le commandant sera général, et obéira à sa majesté trèschrestienne, et à celuy qui commandera en chef l'armée, ou ledit corps de troupes servira comme auxiliare, lequel sera composé de six régimens de dix companies chacun, et de cent hommes chaque compagnie : et lesdites troupes

seront transportées et débarquées en tels ports ou havres et en tel temps qu'il sera concerté cy-après entre lesdits seigneurs roys ; ensorte néantmoins qu'elles puissent arriver aux costes de Picardie, ou tel autre lieu qui sera concerté, au plus tard un mois après que les flottes se seront jointes aux environs de Portsmouth, ainsy qu'il sera dit cy-après.

7. Et pour ce qui regard la guerre de mer ledit seigneur roy de la Grande-Bretagne se chargera de ce fardeau, et armera au moins cinquante gros vaisseaux, et dix bruslots, auxquels le dit seigneur roy trèschrestien s'obligera de joindre une escadre de trente bons vaisseaux François, dont le moindre portera quarante piéces de canon, et un nombre de bruslots suffisant jusques à dix mesme s'il est nécessaire, à proportion de se qu'il y en devra avoir en la flotte ; laquelle escadre de vaisseaux auxiliaires François continuera à servir durant le temps de ladite guerre aux frais et despens de sa majesté trèschrestienne, et en cas de perte d'hommes et de vaisseaux, ils seront remplacés le plustot qu'il se pourra par sa majesté trèschrestienne et ladite escadre sera commandée par un vice-amiral ou lieutenant-général François qui obéira aux ordres de son altesse royale monseigneur le duc de Yorke en vertu des pouvoirs que lesdits seigneurs roys donneront audit seigneur duc, chacun pour les vaisseaux qui luy appartiennent ; et pourra ledit seigneur duc attaquer et combattre les vaisseaux Hollandois, et faire tout ce qu'il jugera le plus à propos pour le bien de la cause commune, jouyra aussy de l'honneur du pavillon, des saluts, et des toutes les autres autorités, prérogatives, et prééminences dont les amiraux ont coutume de jouir, et d'autre part aussy le lit vice-amiral ou lieutenant-général François aura pour sa personne la préséance dans les conseils, et pour son vaisseau et pavillon de vice-amiral celle de la marche sur le vice-amiral et vaisseau de ce nom Anglois. Au surplus les capitains, commandans, officiers, matelots et soldats de l'une et de l'autre nation se comporteront entre eux amicalement, suivant le concert qui sera fait cy-après, pour empêcher qu'il n'y arrive aucun incident qui puisse altérer la bonne union ; et afin que le dit seigneur roy de la Grande-Bretagne puisse plus facilement supporter les frais de cette guerre, sa majesté trèschrestienne s'oblige à payer tous les ans audit roy tant que ladite guerre durera en la manière susdite la somme de trois millions de livres tournoises, dont le premier payement qui sera de sept cens cinquante mille livres tournoises, se fera trois mois avant la déclaration de la guerre, le second de pareille somme dans le temps de ladite déclaration, et le reste montant à quinze cens mille livres tournoises six mois après ladite déclaration : et en années suivantes le premier payement qui sera de sept cens cinquante mille livres tournoises se fera au premier de Febrier, le second de pareille somme au premier de May, et le troisième montant à quinze cens mille livres tournoises au quinsième d'Octobre, lesquelles sommes seront payées en espee à l'ordre du roy de la Grande-Bretagne, à Calais, Dieppe, ou Havre de Grace, ou bien remises par lettres de change à Londres, aux risques, perils, et

frais dudit seigneur roy trèschrestien. Il a esté aussy convenu et arrêté que ledit seigneur roy de la Grande-Bretagne ne sera obligé de déclarer cette guerre, jusqu'à ce que l'escadre auxiliaire desdits trente vaisseaux de guerre François et dix bruslots seront joints avec la flotte Angloise aux environs de Portsmouth : et de toutes les conquestes qui se feront sur les estats généraux sa majesté de la Grande-Bretagne se contentera des places qui s'ensuivent ; sçavoir l'isle de Walkeren, l'escluse avec l'isle de Cassants, et la manière d'ataquer et de continuer la guerre sera ajustée par un réglemeut qui sera cy-apres concerté, et d'autant que la dissolution du gouvernement des estats généraux pourroit apporter quelque préjudice au prince d'Orange, neveu du roy de la Grande-Bretagne, et mesme qu'il se trouve des places, villes et gouvernmens qui luy appartient dans le partage qu'on se propose de faire du pays, il a esté arrêté et conclu que lesdits seigneurs roys feront leur possible à ce que le dit prince trouve ses avantages dans la continuation et fin de cette guerre : ainsy qu'il sera cy-après stipulé dans des articles à part.

8. Item a esté arrêté qu'avant la déclaration de cette guerre lesdits seigneurs roys feront tous leurs efforts conjointment ou en particulier, selon que l'occasion le pourra requérir, pour persuader aux roys de Suede et de Dennemark ou à l'un d'eux d'entrer en cette guerre contre les estats généraux, au moins de les obliger de se tenir neutres, et l'on taschera de mesme d'attirer dans ce party les électeurs de Cologne et de Brandebourg, la maison de Brunswick, le duc de Neubourg et l'esvesque de Munster. Les dits seigneurs roys feront aussy leur possible pour persuader mesme à l'empereur et la couronne d'Espagne de ne s'opposer pas à la conquête dudit pays.

9. Il est pareillement convenu et accordé qu'après que le dit seigneur roy de la Grande-Bretagne aura fait la déclaration spécifiée au second article de ce traité, qu'on espère moyennant la grace de dieu devoir estre suivi d'un heureux succès, il sera entièrement au pouvoir et au choix dudit seigneur roy trèschrestien de déterminer le temps auquel lesdits seigneurs roys devront faire la guerre avec leurs forces unies contre les estats généraux : sa majesté de la Grande-Bretagne promettant d'en faire aussy sa déclaration conjointment dans le temps que sa majesté trèschrestienne jugera estre le plus propre pour cet effect, ledit seigneur roy de la Grande-Bretagne estant assuré que sa majesté trèschrestienne nommant ledit temps aura esgard aux intérêts des deux couronnes, qui après la conclusion de ce traité seront communs à tous deux et inséparables.

10. Si dans aucun traité précédent fait par l'un ou l'autre desdits seigneurs roys avec quelque prince ou estat que ce soit, il se trouve des clauses contraires à celles qui sont spécifiées dans cette ligue, lesdites clauses seront nulles, et celles qui sont contenues dans ce présent traité demeureront dans leurs force et vigueur.

Et pour d'autant plus unir les esprits et intérêts des sujets desdits seigneurs roys, il a esté convenu que le traité de commerce qui se fait à présent, s'achevra au plûtôt qu'il se pourra.

Lesquels points et articles cy dessus énoncés ensemble, et tout le contenu en chacun d'iceux ont esté traictés, accordés, passés, et stipulés entre le my lord Arlington, le my lord Arundell de Warder, le sieur chevalier Clifford, et le sieur chevalier Bellings, commissaires de sa majesté de la Grande-Bretagne, et le sieur Colbert, ambassadeur de sa majesté trèschrestienne, aux noms desdits seigneurs roys, et en vertu de leurs pouvoirs dont les copies sont insérées au bas du présent traicté. Ils ont promis et promettent sous l'obligation de tous et chacuns des biens et estats présens et à venir desdits seigneurs roys, qu'ils seront par leurs majestés inviolablement observés et accomplis, et de s'en bailler et délivrer réciproquement dans un mois du jour et datte des présentes, et plustost, si faire se peut, les lettres de ratification desdits seigneurs roys en la meilleure forme que faire se pourra : et d'autant qu'il est absolument nécessaire pour le bon succès de ce qui est stipulé par le présent traicté, de le tenir fort secret, jusqu'à ce qu'il soit temps de le mettre à exécution, lesdits sieurs commissaires et ambassadeur sont demurés d'accord, qu'il suffira pour la validité du dit traicté que les ratifications desdits seigneurs roys soient signées de leurs propres mains, et cachetées du seau le leur secret, que lesdits seigneurs roys déclareront dans les dites lettres de ratification avoir pour cet effect la mesme force que si leur grand seau y estoit apposé, ce que mesme chacun d'eux s'obligera de faire aussy tost qu'il le pourra, et qu'il en sera requis. En foy de quoy les dites sieurs commissaires et ambassadeur ont signé le présent traicté et à iceluy fait apposer le cachet de leurs armes. A Douvres ce vingt et deuxiesme jour du mois de May l'an de grace mil six cens soixante et dix.

⊙ ARLINGTON.  
 ⊙ T. ARUNDELL.  
 ⊙ T. CLIFFORD.  
 ⊙ R. BELLINGS.

COLBERT. ⊙

There follow three additional secret articles signed at Dover the same day. By the first, if Charles could not spare six thousand men, Louis was to be content with four;—by the second, if the duke of York were to retire from the command of the fleet, the English admiral was to enjoy all the command and powers which the duke ought to possess;—and, by the third it was agreed, that the stipulation in favour of the prince of Orange should not prevent the other powers from making war conjointly at the time stipulated by the 9th article.

In another paper is a declaration that, if in the treaty or the powers of the negotiators, il se trouve quelque chose dans, les tiltres et qualités des roys nos maistres, qui soit contraire à la pluralité des traictés qui ont ete faits entre l'Angleterre et la France, tant sous le regne du feu roy d'Angleterre Charles premier, que sous celuy du roy regnant à présent, nous le réformerons avant l'eschange des ratifications du dit traicté, et sans retardment d'icelle.

## NOTE C, p. 184.

On the day of the death of Henrietta, duchess of Orleans, Louis wrote the following letter of condolence to Charles :—

Versailles, le 30 Juin, 1670.

MONSIEUR MON FRERE,—La tendre amitié que j'avois pour ma sœur vous étoit assez connue pour n'avoir pas de peine à comprendre l'étais ou m'a réduit sa mort. Dans cet accablement de douleur je puis dire que la part que je prends à la vôtre, pour la perte d'une personne qui vous étoit si chère aussi bien qu'à moi, est encore un surcroît à l'excès de mon affliction : le seul soulagement dont je suis capable, est la confiance qui me reste, que cet accident ne changera rien à nos affections, et que vous me conserverez les vôtres aussi entières, que je vous conserverai les miennes. Je me remets du surplus au sieur Colbert, mon ambassadeur.

## NOTE D, p. 235.

*The letters patent by which Louis XIV. grants the domain of Aubigni to Mademoiselle de Querouaille, and after her to one of the illegitimate sons of Charles II., to be named by that prince.*

Louis, par la grace de dieu roi de France et de Navarre, à tous présens et à venir, salut. La terre d'Aubigni-sur-Niére, dans notre province de Berri, ayant été donnée dès l'année 1422, par le roi Charles VII., l'un de nos prédécesseurs, à Jean Stuart, comme une marque des grands et considérables services qu'il avoit rendus dans la guerre à ce roi et sa couronne, et cette donation ayant été accompagnée de condition que ladite terre d'Aubigni passeroit de mâle en mâle à tous les descendants dudit Jean Stuart, avec reversion à notre couronne lorsque la branche masculine qui seroit venue de lui seroit éteinte, ce cas porté par lesdites lettres de donation est arrivé l'année dernière, par la mort de notre cousin le duc de Richemont, dernier de la ligne masculine dudit Jean Stuart. Mais, parceque cette terre ayant été, durant tant d'années, dans une maison qui avoit l'honneur d'appartenir de si près à notre très-cher et très-aimé frère le roi de la Grande-Bretagne, ledit roi nous auroit fait témoigner qu'il seroit bien aise qu'à cette considération nous voulussions bien la faire passer à une personne qu'il affectionneroit, et rentrer après elle dans une maison qui fût encore unie par le sang à la sienne; qu'à ce sujet il nous auroit fait requérir que nous voulussions bien accorder nos lettres de donation de ladite terre d'Aubigni-sur-Niére à la dame . . . de Kerouel, duchesse de Portsmouth, pour passer après sa mort à tel des enfans naturels de notre frère le roi de la Grande-Bretagne qu'il voudra nommer, sous les mêmes clauses et conditions

que la même terre fut premièrement donnée par le roi Charles VII. en 1422 au susdit Jean Stuart, et que ladite terre étant passée à tel fils naturel dudit roi de la Grande-Bretagne qu'il aura voulu nommer, elle demeure audit fils naturel, et à ses descendans de mâle en mâle, avec droit de reversion à notre couronne, au défaut d'enfans mâles et par l'extinction de la ligne masculine, qui seroit sortie de lui. Comme nous embrassons avec plaisir les occasions qui se présentent de donner à notre dit frère le roi de la Grande-Bretagne des marques de notre amitié et de l'extrême considération que nous avons pour ce qu'il désire, et que nous avons aussi bien agréable qu'une terre qui étoit demeurée durant tant d'années dans une maison si illustre, retourne en quelque sort à son origine en passant un jour entre les mains d'un fils naturel de notre dit frère, nous avons bien voulu disposer de ladite terre d'Aubigni en la manière que nous avons été requis par notre susdit frère le roi de la Grande-Bretagne.

A ces causes, savoir faisons que de notre grace spéciale, pleine puissance, et autorité royale, nous avons à ladite dame . . . de Kerouel, duchesse de Portsmouth, et après elle à celui des fils naturels de notre dit frère le roi de la Grande-Bretagne qu'il nommera, et aux descendans mâles en ligne directe dudit fils naturel, donné, cédé, transporté, et délaissé, donnons, cédon, transportons, et délaissions par ces presentes signées de notre main, le fonds et propriété de la terre d'Aubigni, avec tous et un chacun ses droits, appartenances et dépendances, pour en jouir et user par ladite duchesse, et après son décès celui des fils naturels dudit roi de la Grande-Bretagne qu'il nommera, et les descendans mâles en droit ligne dudit fils naturel, comme de leur propre chose et loyale acquêt, tout ainsi que nous ferions, sans aucune chose en retenir et réserver à nous et à nos successeurs rois, que les foi et hommage, ressort et souveraineté, à condition toutefois que ladite terre d'Aubigni, avec ses appartenances et dépendances, retournera à notre domaine au défaut des mâles descendans en droite ligne du fils naturel qui aura été nommé par le susdit roi de la Grande-Bretagne.

Si donnons en mandement à nos amés et féaux les gens tenant notre cour de parlement et chambre de nos comptes à Paris, que ces présentes lettres de don ils les aient à enregistrer, et du contenu en icelles faire jouir et user pleinement, paisiblement et à toujours ladite dame . . . de Kerouel, duchesse de Portsmouth, et après elle le fils naturel que ledit roi de la Grande-Bretagne nommera, et les descendans mâles en droite ligne dudit fils naturel, cessant et faisant cesser tous troubles et empêchemens à ce contraires.

Car tel est notre plaisir : et afin que ce soit chose ferme et stable à toujours, nous avons fait mettre notre sceau à cesdites présentes, sauf en autre chose notre droit et l'autrui en toutes. Donné à Saint-Germain-en-Laye, au mois de Décembre, l'an de grace 1673, et de notre règne le trent-unième.—Œuvres de Louis XIV. tom vi. p. 453.

---

## NOTE E, p. 407.

On Feb. 11, 1679, Oates, and on Feb. 15, Bedloe, delivered in accounts of the expenses incurred by them "on occasion of the service of his majesty and the kingdom." It is impossible to read them without admiring the effrontery of these men. Oates, an acknowledged pauper, had the face to insert the following charges:—"Item, for a watch to present to the archbishop of Tuam when at Madrid, 8*l.* 10*s.*—Item, for gloves and knives to present to the rector of St. Omers, 2*l.* 1*s.*—Item, for books which the Jesuits had of me, 40*l.*—Money owed to me by the Jesuits, 80*l.*—Item, my manuscript of the Alexandrian version of the Septuagint, which I gave them, 50*l.*—Item, for my expenses from the 17th of June to February 8, 336*l.* 16*s.*" Making with several other charges the sum of 678*l.* 12*s.* 6*d.* Bedloe's account is equally curious, but more moderate. It amounts only to 213*l.*—See Brief History, iii. p. 121—124.

## NOTE F, p. 502.

*Lord Stafford.*

The three following letters of this unfortunate nobleman, copied from the originals, will perhaps interest some of my readers.

They were written by him from the Tower. The first to his daughter Ursula, a nun in the English convent of canonesses of St. Augustine in Louvain, is dated the 14th of July, a time when the immolation of so many victims to the perjuries of Titus Oates taught the Catholic lords in the Tower to tremble for their own lives.

"GOOD DAUGHTER,

"From the Tower,  
"July 14, 1679.

"I know the misfortune that I am in is a greate greife unto you, but I pray give yourselfe this assurance, that it is come upon me by my misfortune, and not by any faulte of myne, I being totally innocent of what I am so unjustly accused of, as I doute not but to make appeare by the grace of God: in the meane time and allways I doe most willingly and cherefully submit to his holy will, beseeching him most humbly to grante me grace to make that good use that I ought to doe. I am ever,

Your most affectionate Father,  
"W."

"My most humble service to all your good  
"company: this bearer Nicola can tell you  
"particularly of our healths."

The next letter is without date, but was plainly written soon after he had received judgment of death.

“GOOD DAUGHTER,

“I know you will beare what happens to me with patience and resignation. I thanke God that I knowe myself, in ever kind innocent, and that I have confydence in Gods merceys, and doute not but through the mercy and passion of our Savior, to obtain everlasting happynesse. I pray God blesse you. I am,

“Your affectionate Father,

“For Ursula.”

“WILLIAM.”

About the same time he wrote the following letter to the countess of Arundel :—

“MADAM, I beseech God preserve you, and make you happy, I pray let yor Lord know that I do count myselve very much obliged unto him, and wish him as well as may be. I pray let him know that I have the sword that was our great ancestor's att the battle of Flodden field, with w<sup>ch</sup> we have a tradition in our ffamily hee killed the king of Scotland. This sword was always much esteemed by my father. I do now give it unto y<sup>or</sup> Lord, my nephew. I have taken order it shall be brought unto him. I give it upon this condition and no other, that he leave it to the heirs males of himself, w<sup>ch</sup> I hope will be many, and their heirs males ; for want of such, unto my nephew Thomas his brother, and for want of his heirs males to return unto my heirs.

“God bless you all ! I am near my death, and with that will averre my innocence, that am

“Your Lad<sup>es</sup> faithfull humble

“For my Lady

“Serv<sup>t</sup> and Unkle,

“The Countesse of Arundell.”

“WILLIAM HOWARD.”

The original is in the possession of Philip H. Howard, Esq., of Corby Castle. The sword was deposited in the Heralds' Office, and is supposed to have been, not that with which James IV. of Scotland was slain, but that which he wore at the battle of Flodden-field.











15509

HF  
I755h.2

Author Lingard, John

Title History of England; illus. by Dampier. Vol. 9.

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO  
LIBRARY

Do not  
remove  
the card  
from this  
Pocket.

Acme Library Card Pocket  
Under Pat. "Ref. Index File."  
Made by LIBRARY BUREAU

